





A  
PARAPHRASTIC TRANSLATION  
OF  
THE APOSTOLICAL EPISTLES,  
WITH NOTES.

---

BY  
PHILIP NICHOLAS SHUTTLEWORTH, D.D.  
LATE LORD BISHOP OF CHICHESTER.

---

*Fifth Edition.*

---

LONDON:  
RIVINGTONS, WATERLOO PLACE.  
1854.

LONDON :  
GILBERT AND RIVINGTON, PRINTERS,  
ST. JOHN'S SQUARE.



TO THE REVEREND

WILLIAM STANLEY GODDARD, D.D.

---

MY DEAR SIR,

THE motive for my request that I might be permitted to address the present volume to you was, that I might avail myself of the opportunity which it would afford me of publicly expressing my grateful acknowledgments for the real kindness and the truly valuable instruction which, at an important period of my life, I had the happiness of receiving from you, when placed under your care on the foundation of Winchester College. More than twenty-eight years have now elapsed since my removal from that seat of my early education; but the course of time has diminished nothing of the distinctness of recollection with which I at this moment look back to the uniform and impartial integrity displayed by you in the exercise of your high trust as Head Master of that establishment; your unremitting anxiety for the welfare of your pupils; and the judg-

ment and ability with which you directed their studies. In expressing these sentiments, I feel that I am at the same time conveying those of every other member of the Wiccamical body, who has had a similar opportunity with myself for forming an opinion. Scanty as, from the operation of untoward circumstances, your reward has been in other respects, you have at least one, which to a mind like yours is far more valuable than the gratification of mere temporal ambition, in the sincere attachment and respect of those who owe to your fostering care their most important acquirements; and in the cheering retrospect of an highly useful and well-spent life. That you may long continue to enjoy these and all other blessings consistent with our mortal allotment, is, dear Sir, the sincere wish of

Your obliged friend and servant,

PH. N. SHUTTLEWORTH.

NEW COLLEGE,

*Feb.* 1829.

## P R E F A C E.

---

THE object of the present publication is to render the apprehension of the Apostolical Epistles easy and familiar to that numerous class of readers, who, from local or other disadvantages, cannot be expected to pursue without assistance the fine trains of reasoning which they contain, or to be able to explain those many incidental obscurities which the gradual change of manners and of language has inevitably introduced into them. In an age perfectly unexampled for its eager pursuit of religious knowledge, and for the vast influx of light which the researches of the learned have poured upon the profounder questions of theology, it cannot but be matter of surprise that so little should have been attempted in that humble walk of scriptural exposition, which without aiming at the discovery of any new and unexplored truths, strives only to render the study of the sacred writings more generally attractive and beneficial, by making them more accessible and intelligible. That some work, executed

on the plan of this which it has been my lot to undertake, is much wanted at the present moment, must, I think, be universally acknowledged. When we recollect the very close and earnest attention which even scholars, trained up in all the habits of acute disputation, are obliged to bring with them to the study of the Epistles of the New Testament, before they can do sufficient justice to the profundity of reflection and the elaborate acuteness of argument which they contain, we surely cannot but feel that to a vast portion of the religious world they must, in the form in which they are most usually resorted to, present much which is liable to misconstruction, and much which must appear almost hopelessly obscure. What portion of that obscurity may be made clear to the understanding of common readers, by discarding the occasionally obsolete phraseology and constrained idioms of our established version, and by distending over a wider surface the closely compressed thoughts and deep argumentation of the original compositions, may admit of difference of opinion. Something in this way however may, at all events, be done. It is surely no derogation from the value of these, or of any other, portions of the sacred writings to assert of them, that, unless we suppose the same preternatural aid invariably to attend the reader of them which we believe to have accompanied the original writers, the degree of their perspicuity must in all ages depend upon the same combinations of accidental circumstances which produce, or

diminish, that of all other literary compositions whatsoever. Allusions to the facts whether of sacred or of profane history can only, without a miracle, be understood by those persons who have in some degree made that department of history their study ; and polemical discussions, whether on questions of philosophy or religion, must be deprived of their technicalities, and be more broadly and distinctly brought out in plain and familiar language, before they can be made as intelligible to the inexperienced and occasional student, as they are in their original shape to the exercised disputant. To assert therefore universally of Scripture, that, as being the revelation of Infinite Wisdom, it can need no explanation or comment whatsoever for the purpose of making it intelligible to all classes of readers, is evidently a mis-statement of the practical fact, from a misconception of the question. Our dispute is not so much with regard to the intrinsic clearness of the truths themselves, when fully and adequately announced, as with the imperfect mode and vehicle by which those momentous truths are necessarily conveyed to the parties for whose instruction we are solicitous. The most perfect revelation of the divine will can, after all, be transmitted to our minds only through the very uncertain medium of human language, the standard of which even in one and the same nation varies from age to age ; and practical doctrines which were completely intelligible to the humblest capacities, so long as they bore upon existent and established usages

of society, must of necessity become to a certain degree obscure in proportion as those usages give place to, and are superseded by, others entirely dissimilar.

In alluding however to those difficulties which time and accident have introduced into the sacred volume, I am far from asserting that the original work itself is so entirely free from obscurity, as many truly good men, in their zeal for the cause of religion, have been disposed to maintain. Close and profound reasoning, such as we find in the Apostolical Epistles, and more especially in those of St. Paul, cannot be immediately pursued and assented to by the average understandings of mankind, even where the subject-matter embraces only the ordinary problems of human knowledge; much less can we expect that it will be uniformly intelligible where the points under discussion are the transcendental mysteries of God's providence; and where the inspired mind of the writer, itself perfectly familiarized with these profound topics, glances from one head of argument to another with a fluent rapidity of apprehension, with which the most highly gifted of his readers ineffectually strives to keep pace.

These impediments, however, to the due interpretation of Scripture are after all as nothing, when compared with those superadded difficulties which necessarily attend the substitution of modern translations in the place of the original text. The transfusion of the doctrines contained in the several inspired writings into a language such as ours, differing in its whole con-

struction so entirely from those in which they were first conveyed, has been a source of fresh obscurity which, paradoxical as it may appear, has in some cases been increased in exact proportion to the caution and accuracy with which the various translators have performed their work. The total diversity of idiom which distinguishes one language from another, and more especially the ancient from the modern, presents an insuperable barrier against every attempt to translate literally any work of considerable length, so as to preserve at the same time actual identity of expression and that perspicuity of idea which is necessary to put us into complete possession of the sentiments of the original writer.

The remark which is clear as the light when conveyed in its own vernacular idiom, is often obscurity itself when harshly but closely rendered without accommodation to the peculiar phraseology of other nations. Every person who has been in the habit of referring to the original Greek for the explanation of those passages of the Apostolical Epistles which appear intricate and obscure in our English version, must have had continual occasion to observe the justness of this assertion. An expression may have been unexceptionably rendered word for word, yet for want of accordance with the structure and associations of our own language, it will often be nearly unintelligible in its English dress, where the Greek shall present no difficulty whatever. Examples to this effect may be collected in abundance from almost every page of the

compositions in question. Take, for instance, that part of the concluding paragraph of the second Epistle to the Thessalonians, in which St. Paul states, that his genuine letters may always be recognized as such, from the fact of the valedictory salutation being his own autograph, and written in a peculiar character, the form of which he begs may be attentively examined. Nothing can be clearer than the statement as conveyed in the original Greek, Ὁ ἀσπασμὸς τῇ ἐμῇ χειρὶ Παύλου, ὃ ἐστὶ σημεῖον ἐν πάσῃ Ἐπιστολῇ· οὕτω γράφω. Yet the English version, though scrupulously exact in point of form, scarcely suggests any definite idea to a reader whose literature does not extend beyond our own language. "The salutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the token in every Epistle: so I write." The defect here is evidently a too great attention to verbal accuracy; yet where the subject-matter of exposition is the inspired word of God, it is not very obvious what latitude of expression can be safely allowed to persons specially appointed to transmit it to the unlearned, pure from any admixture of human theory as they first received it.

The difficulty, accordingly, which attends the correct transmission of the sentiments of an author, and which may always be evaded or obviated in the case of the works of profane literature, by adopting at will other modes of expression more in accordance with the associations of the translator, and of the nation for whose benefit the version is intended, presses, on the contrary, heavily, because inevitably, wherever the object is to



afford a faithful and accurate interpretation of the words of holy writ. The reverential awe which a conscientious translator necessarily feels under such a solemn responsibility as that now alluded to with regard to the doctrines which he is called upon to clothe in a new dress, is an effectual impediment, where his translation is to emanate *under the sanction of legislative authority*, to his taking those elsewhere allowed liberties, which in rendering the works of other writers are often no less essential for conveying the full meaning, than they are for preserving the spirit and manner of the original. The disadvantages therefore under which our own, and every other *established* version of many parts of Scripture must be admitted to labour, are more easy to be lamented than remedied. That the learned and good men, to whom we owe that great and invaluable work, executed the task entrusted to them with judgment and fidelity, is beyond dispute. Nor can we do otherwise than applaud also the integrity of the persons in authority, who, when a translation into our own language of the word of God was rendered necessary by the diffusion of Protestantism, took due care that no bias of human passion should be allowed to tamper with its minutest parts under the plea of exposition or improvement. Whilst however these considerations suggest an ample vindication of the manner in which that work was executed, they afforded but an insufficient consolation for the disadvantages to which an undertaking so circumstanced must be inevitably liable. If accordingly it be incumbent, as it assuredly is, upon the temporal

and ecclesiastical government of the country to promulgate nothing, directly or indirectly, as the word of God, but that which is undoubtedly and demonstrably such ; then, most assuredly, must individual exertion step in to execute upon its own personal responsibility and risk that which, however indispensable for the adequate instruction of the majority of readers, cannot with propriety emanate from any higher source. A large supply of helps of this description has in consequence been afforded during the course of the last and the present centuries by some of our foremost divines and scholars for the better apprehension of the holy Scriptures, no small portion of whose labours has reference to the very writings which it is the object of this volume to illustrate. Still, however, the work here presented to the public will not, I trust, be without its use. Of the many paraphrases and translations of the Apostolical Epistles which have already appeared, most are arranged in a form which renders them more fit for occasional reference than for continuous perusal : whilst some, intended chiefly for the assistance of the minutely critical scholar, however admirably adapted for that purpose, are ill calculated to meet the wants of general readers. For the use of this last-mentioned and most important portion of the Christian community a translation appears to me to be still wanting, which should be sufficiently close to convey an adequate idea of the manner in which the Apostolical Epistles were originally written, yet also sufficiently diffuse—to give breadth and prominence to those minute but necessary links of reasoning which

are often so cursorily glanced at by the original writers, as to escape the observation of persons not in the habit of pursuing an elaborate argument through its finest details;—to fill up those lacunæ of inference, the implied purport of which, though necessarily suggested by the context to the experienced dialectician, does not always present itself to others less exercised in this species of elliptical composition;—and to supply that fluency of context, by which even the languid and desultory reader, when indisposed to the labour of intense thought, may be enabled to take a comprehensive view of the whole chain of the argument, and of the object of the writer. Without such a complete and general view, which can only be obtained by the perusal of an entire Epistle at one single sitting, it is not only impossible to derive from it that exact impression which it was intended to convey, but it is even scarcely possible for the clearest mind to avoid some degree of misapprehension of its real purport.

When the reader is entangled and detained by the statement of objections which<sup>1</sup> may be opposed to one branch of an argument, yet wants leisure to pass on to the remainder of the context in which those objections are answered, and consequently is compelled to derive his knowledge piecemeal, deprived of its due proportions, and of its unity of design, not the most sincere rectitude of purpose can prevent the adoption of partial and unsound theories. There is also, we may observe, a morbid curiosity in the human mind which loves mysticism for its own sake; and which, glancing

thoughtlessly over the most important truths, which, perhaps on account of their extreme importance, are clearly announced, is ever returning to ponder again and again over those perplexing speculations for which it imagines that it finds a warrant in some detached and isolated fragment of Scripture.

The only effective mode of counteracting this unsafe tendency is, the elucidation, so far as circumstances will permit, of the obscurity in which such passages are involved. That something may be done in this way by the means already alluded to, is perfectly obvious. No one surely would hesitate to allow, that where the literal rendering of the idiom of an extinct language into our own would suggest scarcely any, or perhaps only an inaccurate, idea to the minds of the unlearned; or where customs are alluded to with which scholars alone are supposed to be familiar, in such cases the alteration of a single word, or the appending of a short commentary, may supply all the aid requisite. But these, as has been already remarked, are not the only difficulties which a little attention may effectually remove. St. Paul, for instance, not unfrequently quotes a few words only from some passage in the Old Testament, where, from the context of the argument, it is demonstrable, that he had in his mind the purport of the whole clause of which his quotation forms a part. An exposition, therefore, which fills up his meaning by the insertion of the entire paragraph, undoubtedly affords considerable help for the apprehension of the point under discussion. Again, like an experienced and

subtle disputant, he often advances, as in his own person, plausible but fallacious arguments, or anticipates the objections of his opponent, for the purpose of refuting them. But, however clear such a mode of reasoning may be to the learned, it is self-evident that to the mere reader for spiritual edification, especially to those who are unequal to the effort of studying more than short and detached passages on any one occasion, it will sometimes be attended with considerable perplexity. The elucidation of such passages therefore, by the insertion of a few words, which shall give prominence to the writer's object, and leave nothing for the ingenuity of the reader to surmise or fill up, must of course have a tendency to promote that fluent readiness of perception, which is so absolutely necessary for arriving at the real purport of the revealed word of God. The last, but perhaps the most efficient, means which I have adopted for the purpose of restoring this truly invaluable portion of the inspired volume to its original clearness, is by discarding the commonly received, though almost universally reprobated, division into chapters and verses; a division which, though useful for occasional reference, has been so capriciously executed by its first contrivers, and with so little regard or attention to the bearings of the context, that it is perhaps no exaggeration to say of it, that it has done more to mislead the attention and perplex the judgment of the student than any, or all, of the causes of occasional obscurity already alluded to.

Such is the humble and unostentatious help which the present volume is intended to convey. Of course, therefore, it is not, nor does it profess to be, a critical work, in the strict meaning of that term. It has indeed been my anxious endeavour, as it was my duty, to select the true sense of the writer to the best of my power and judgment in those few controverted cases which have afforded so much occupation, with some occasional difference of opinion, to the learned. Still, however, it was not this species of elucidation which suggested the inducement to this undertaking. My wish has been to assist, not the learned, who can derive little benefit from my exertions, but the religious community under its widest designation: by placing in the hands of any casual readers an exposition which may save to them that continuous labour of thought, the necessity of which renders more particularly this portion of the word of God always a difficult, and consequently to many an irksome task. How far I may have attained my object it is not for me to surmise. One consolation, be the fate of this volume what it may, I shall at all events derive from the conviction, that, whatever may be the defects which inadvertence or error may have admitted into it, the design of it is one well suited to the wants of the age in which we live; and that, should I be found to have failed in the due execution of my plan, others will assuredly not be wanting to undertake it under better auspices, and to perform it with superior ability.

THE  
EPISTLE OF PAUL  
TO THE  
ROMANS.

---

THE Epistle to the Romans has generally been considered as having been addressed by St. Paul to the Jewish converts to Christianity resident in Rome; but from the tenor of several passages, particularly of that impressive and eloquent exhortation directed to the believing Gentiles in the latter part of the eleventh chapter, it seems more probable that the Apostle intended his communication for the benefit of the whole Christian fraternity in that city. It may be observed, as strengthening this opinion, that the names of the persons to whom this salutation is addressed in the concluding chapter are chiefly such as denote an Italian or Greek parentage. This Epistle appears to have been written at Corinth; and, as is generally supposed, about the year 58 of the Christian era, during St. Paul's second visit into Greece, and subsequently to his composition of the second Epistle to the Corinthians.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

1 PAUL, a servant of Jesus Christ, called to be an  
apostle, set apart for the preaching the Gospel of  
2 God (which he promised of old by his prophets in  
3 the holy Scriptures) concerning his Son, who was  
born of the seed of David according to the flesh,  
4 and declared to be the Son of God in power, ac-

according to the Spirit of holiness, by the resurrection of the dead, namely Jesus Christ our Lord; by 5 whom we have received grace and apostleship for teaching submission to the faith among all nations, through his name, among whom are ye also, the 6 called of Jesus Christ;—to all the beloved of God 7 in Rome, called to be his saints, grace and peace be to you from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

## SECTION I.

Salvation is to be obtained only through the covenant of *faith*.

In the first place I thank my God through Jesus 8 Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout all the world. For God is my witness, 9 whom I serve in my spirit preaching the Gospel of his Son, how incessantly I bear you in my thoughts, always intreating in my prayers that I may now at 10 length by the will of God have a prosperous journey to come unto you. For I am anxious to see 11 you that I may impart to you some spiritual gift for the confirming you in the faith: that is, that I may 12 be comforted, together with you, through our joint persuasion of the sincerity of our mutual belief. For I wish you to be assured, brethren, that I have 13 often purposed coming to you (though I have been prevented up to this present time) in order that I might reap some fruit amongst you also, as I have already done amongst the other Gentiles. For as 14 an apostle of the Gentiles it is my duty to preach the Gospel to Greeks and to Barbarians; to the learned and to the ignorant; I am therefore ready accord- 15 ing to my ability to preach also to you in Rome.



- 16 For I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ, which is the power of God displaying itself for the salvation of every one who believes in it: of the Jew in the first place, and after him of the Gentile also.
- 17 For in it is revealed that righteousness of God, *which, having its first beginning and foundation in faith, is finally perfected in faith*: as it is written, (Habakkuk ii. 4.) He who is justified by *faith* shall live.

## SECTION II.

The Apostle, in order to prove the universal necessity of salvation through *faith*, proceeds to show that no human beings whatever, whether Gentiles or Jews, have attained to righteousness by *works*. And this he illustrates, in the first place, by the instance of the Gentiles, who have uniformly sinned against their better knowledge, as afforded by *the light of nature*.

- 18 For the anger of God is denounced from heaven against all the impiety and injustice of mankind whatsoever, who, notwithstanding their better knowledge of the truth and of their duty, wilfully perse-  
19 vere in the practice of unrighteousness. For none, whether Jew or Gentile, can plead ignorance of the being of God as their excuse for their neglect of him and of the duties he enjoins; inasmuch as the knowledge of God is manifested, even to the perceptions of the Gentiles themselves, by the natural  
20 faculties which God has given them. For his invisible attributes, namely, his eternal power and Godhead, have been distinctly perceivable by mankind, through his material and visible works, from  
21 the first commencement of the world. Therefore are they necessarily without excuse, since, knowing him by the certain light of reason to be God, they have

not honoured him as God ought to be honoured, nor thanked him as God ought to be thanked: but have become vain and foolish in their reasonings respecting him: and thus their inapprehensive minds grew dark and bewildered; pretending to 22 wisdom they became fools, and, blinded by a senseless superstition, finally converted the glory of the imperishable Godhead into the likeness of perishable man, of birds, of beasts, of reptiles. Wherefore 24 God in his turn gave them up, by a just retribution through their own grovelling desires, to uncleanness, and to the dishonouring of their own bodies by licentious indulgence; as being persons who had 25 converted the eternal truths of his holy nature into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature rather than him their great Creator, who is blessed for ever and ever. Amen. For this reason he 26 abandoned them to the pollution of their impure passions; so that their very women, as their own annals will testify, have learned to change their natural affections into passions against nature; and the men, abandoning the natural use of the woman, 27 have burned with lust for one another, males with males practising abomination, and receiving, as was fit, the awful retribution of a darkened understanding. And, as they did not choose to seek 28 after the true knowledge of God's nature and attributes<sup>1</sup>, God gave them up to a reckless mind, to

<sup>1</sup> It is worthy of observation, that the Apostle in this passage directly asserts the competency of unassisted human reason to arrive at tolerably accurate conclusions respecting the perfections of the divine Being, and the accuracy of our natural perceptions in the great questions

29 do all things which are unseemly : being filled with every kind of unrighteousness<sup>1</sup>, with forni-

of morals. Without the possession of such intuitive knowledge, he justly argues that the heathen world could not be considered as responsible agents in the sight of God. Strange to say, however, this seemingly self-evident doctrine, which would appear to require no other proof than the internal consciousness of every reflecting person, has been opposed even in our own times by some of the ablest and most sincere champions of Christianity. That the more captious schools of ancient philosophy should have occasionally made this question a subject for the display of a false ingenuity, and have taught that the distinctions of right and wrong were not referrible to any moral sense within us, and had no other origin than the enactments of legislators founded upon mere principles of expediency, need not perhaps be matter of wonder. Τὸ δίκαιον εἶναι καὶ τὸ αἰσχρὸν οὐ φύσει, ἀλλὰ νόμῳ. But one cannot but be surprised that so acute and truly pious a mind as that of Dr. Paley should have given its sanction to an opinion not very dissimilar. The unhesitating assent which it was the fashion of the writers of the last century to give to that theory of Locke and others respecting our bodily senses as being the exclusive vehicle of all our knowledge, has probably contributed much to the prevalence of these notions : but it seems now to be generally admitted, that the theory, though apparently true in a certain sense, must at all events be understood with considerable modifications. When admitted without limitation in its broadest and most literal interpretation, its tendency undoubtedly is to obscure our apprehension of the divine attributes, and to overthrow the internal evidences of religion as deducible from its accordance with what we should conceive probable respecting the will of a perfectly good supreme Being.

<sup>1</sup> The recollection of every classical scholar will readily suggest to him abundant proofs, taken from the most enlightened ages of heathen antiquity, of the accuracy of this portraiture of pagan morals as delineated by the Apostle.

cation, baseness, avarice, malice, envy, murder, strife, treachery, malignity; and becoming whisperers, slanderers, haters of God, insolent, domineering, boasters, inventors of wickedness, disobedient to parents; without right perceptions, covenant breakers, without the kindly affections, implacable, merciless: who knowing by the natural light of their own consciences the moral attributes and just judgments of God, and that they who practise such offences as these are worthy of death, not only themselves persevere in the commission of them, but encourage others to do the same.

Wherefore even you, O man, who in the fancied superiority of moral wisdom condemn others for these things, are yourself without an excuse: for in condemning another you convict yourself, inasmuch as you in your practice commit those very things of which you disapprove in others. God's judgments we are assured will be exercised with truth and impartiality against all the doers of unrighteousness. Can you then hope, that whilst you yourself commit what your own natural understanding enables you thus to condemn in others, that you shall in your turn escape the all-seeing eye of God? or are you trifling with the abundance of his goodness, and forbearance, and slowness to anger, not perceiving that it is the merciful object of that forbearance to afford you the means and opportunity of repentance, and thus to bring you finally to salvation? But be assured, that by this hardness and impenitence of heart you are laying up for yourself wrath against the day of wrath; when the righteousness of God's dispensations shall be finally manifested, and when he shall repay to every man according to his work; to those who by perseverance

in good conduct seek for glory, and honour, and  
8 immortality, eternal life; whilst, on the other hand,  
for the self-willed, for those who are disobedient to  
the truth, and slaves to unrighteousness, is reserved  
9 wrath and anger, tribulation and anguish, upon  
every soul of man that works wickedness; for the  
Jew in the first place, and afterwards for the Greek  
10 and the Gentile. But glory, and honour, and peace  
to every man that works righteousness; to the Jew  
in the first place, and afterward to the Greek and  
to the Gentile also.

11 For there is no preference of nation or individual,  
12 no partiality or injustice with God: but whosoever  
shall have sinned against the law of nature shall be  
condemned and perish by the law of nature; and  
whosoever shall have sinned against the written  
law of Moses, shall in like manner be condemned  
16 and perish by the law of Moses, <sup>1</sup> on that day when  
God shall lay open the secrets of every breast by  
Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of that  
Gospel which I preach.

13 For it is not the mere unprofitable *hearers* of the  
law of Moses who are acquitted in the sight of  
God; but it is the sincere *doers* of the command-  
ments contained in that law, who shall finally be  
justified.

14 For when the Gentiles, to whom the law of  
Moses was never communicated, do, by the mere

<sup>1</sup> I have ventured to take the 16th verse out of its regular order, and to place it immediately after the 12th, for the purpose of avoiding the obscurity resulting from the parenthetical insertion of the 13th, 14th, and 15th verses between them, as it exists in the original. The sense of the passage of course remains unaltered.

light of nature, the precepts of the revealed law, they, without the aid of a more express revelation, are a law and a rule of conduct to themselves: inasmuch as they show the works of the law engraved upon their hearts, their consciences meanwhile bearing witness to them, and their internal moral perceptions one with another confirming or correcting its decisions.

### SECTION III.

Having shown that the Gentile world have failed of attaining the righteousness which is by *works*, the Apostle proceeds, in the second place, to prove the same result with respect to the Jews, who sought to obtain salvation by performance of the ceremonial observances, and by obedience to the moral precepts, of the Mosaic covenant.

But you will say perhaps, "Why urge *me* with what I most readily acknowledge, namely, that the Gentile world has uniformly fallen short of complete moral righteousness? What have *you* to do with that admission; *you* who profess yourself a Jew, and rest your claim to holiness upon the righteousness of the *revealed law*, and boast of your more complete knowledge of God, and of his will, and have a more perfect and accurate rule of duty than the Gentiles, deriving, as you do, your instruction from the divine precepts delivered to Moses?" True, you have so: and accordingly under this presumption you feel confidence in yourself that you are a leader of the blind, a light to those who are in darkness, the instructor of the ignorant, a teacher of babes, having for your guide the summary of divine knowledge and truth contained in a code derived from heaven itself.—"What then?" let

me ask in my turn, "you who teach others, do you  
22 not teach yourself?" You who proclaim, "Thou  
shalt not steal," do you steal? You who say,  
"Thou shalt not commit adultery," do you commit  
adultery? You that abhor idols, do you insult the  
23 true God by committing sacrilege? You who boast  
of the excellence of your divine law, do you by  
transgressing that same law dishonour its almighty  
24 Author? For assuredly, as it is truly written of  
you by the prophets Isaiah and Ezekiel, "through  
you the name of God is blasphemed amongst the  
Gentiles."

25 Grant that your boasted circumcision would be  
of real profit to you, provided you were to perform  
all the conditions of that law of which it is the  
symbol, yet if, instead of so doing, you become a  
wilful violater of that law which you profess to  
revere, as certainly will your circumcision become  
in no respect better than the uncircumcision of the  
26 Gentiles. And if so, then may we not by a parity  
of reason pronounce of the uncircumcised Gentile,  
that, if his moral practice be in all respects con-  
formable to the precepts of your law, his uncircum-  
cision shall be as available to him in the sight of  
27 God as the circumcision of the Jew? Nay, may we  
not carry the argument still further, and venture to  
assert, that the uncircumcision of him who, in-  
structed only in the law of nature, shall have per-  
formed the moral duties enjoined by Moses, shall  
sit in judgment upon and condemn you, who, being  
a Jew only by the letter and circumcision, are by  
your actions a violater of that very law which you  
28 profess to honour? For he is not a Jew in the sight  
of God who is only one outwardly; nor is that the

true circumcision which is only the outward sign marked upon the flesh : but it is the inwardly sincere Jew only who in reality deserves the title ; and that only is the true circumcision which is the circumcision of the heart, impressed upon the spirit, and not existing in the mere literal fulfilment of an external ceremony. The commendation of which is not from men, but from God.

But you will ask then : " If so, what after all are the boasted privileges possessed by the Jew beyond those of the Gentile, and what are the advantages of that circumcision which we know to have been of divine appointment ? " I answer, " Many in every respect. But chiefly indeed, that to the Jews, as God's chosen people, were intrusted the oracles of the will of God." " Why then," you ask, " does God now rescind those privileges which he has guaranteed to us as a nation ? Grant that some individuals amongst ourselves have broken their covenant with him : are we to suppose that *he* will therefore withdraw from *his* engagements solemnly pledged to the collective body of the Israelitish people ? " By no means, I reply. Let God be found faithful to his word, though every man be found a liar ; as it is written in the fifty-first Psalm, " That thou mightest be justified in thy sayings, and prevail when thou art judged."

" Why then," you will perhaps retort, " should he thus severely punish us for our rebellion and ingratitude, which, however disgraceful to ourselves, serve only to make his own superior faithfulness in *his* observance of the covenant made with our forefathers more conspicuous by the comparison ? Is not God," it may be plausibly urged, " unjust



in visiting with severity the rebellion of the Jews, from which no injury could possibly accrue to himself?" I reply, that this argument proves too much, and that, if correct, it would show, that, because no actual injury can accrue to God from the sins of the human race, therefore "he will *never judge the world at all*," which is directly contrary to our conviction of his purity and justice. But perhaps you will urge again, "If the truth and glory of God, so far from being sullied, is actually made *more manifest* by its contrast with the faithlessness of us Jews with regard to the covenant which he has made with us, why should he cast us off and reject us solely for a disobedience, which, however it may disgrace ourselves, has actually redounded to *his* credit, and to the increase of *his* glory?"—Yet this very argument again if true would justify the maxim which we are slanderously asserted by our enemies to adopt, "*that it is lawful to do evil in order that good may ensue*," a sentiment revolting to the first principles of morals.

9 "What then," you will once more ask, "are we Jews in no respect morally better in the sight of God than the Gentiles?" I answer, "in none whatever." For I have already proved that all men indiscriminately, both Jews and Gentiles, are involved  
10 in the guilt of sin. As it is written in the fourteenth Psalm, "There is no one without sin: no,  
11 not one: there is none that understandeth, there is  
12 none that seeketh God: all have gone out of their way, they are together become unprofitable; there  
13 is none that doeth good, no, not one. Their throat is an open sepulchre, with their tongues they have used deceit: the poison of asps is under their lips.

Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness: their<sup>14</sup>  
feet are swift to shed blood: destruction and misery<sup>15</sup>  
are in their ways, and the way of peace they have<sup>16</sup>  
not known: there is no fear of God before their<sup>18</sup>  
eyes." Now we know that these heavy denuncia-<sup>19</sup>  
tions as being contained in the book of the *Jewish*  
scriptures are addressed personally and exclusively to  
the *Jews*; in order that every mouth, both Jew and  
Gentile, might be stopped, and the whole world be  
found amenable to the just judgment of God.  
Wherefore, as I have already stated as my primary<sup>20</sup>  
position, *by the performance of the works of the law,*  
*whether it be that of nature or that of Moses, no flesh*  
*whatever shall stand acquitted and justified in his sight:*  
on the contrary, it is from those very precepts of the  
law which teach us our duty that we first learned  
the knowledge of what is right, and consequently  
acquired the capability of disobedience, and through  
disobedience of sin.

#### SECTION IV.

It having been proved by the foregoing arguments that the whole  
human race are involved in one common condemnation in the sight  
of God, it necessarily follows that salvation can be attained only  
*through the covenant of mercy communicated to us through the merits*  
*of Christ.* This new dispensation accordingly the Apostle declares  
to be now offered to the whole of mankind indiscriminately, whether  
Jews or Gentiles.

But now, at length, in these latter days, the<sup>21</sup>  
righteousness and mercy of God, which is not  
extreme to measure our conduct by the strict letter  
of the written law, has been finally revealed to man-  
kind; a dispensation long ago announced by Moses  
and the Prophets, and now accomplished in that<sup>22</sup>

covenant of righteousness and justification through faith in Christ, extended without discrimination to  
23 all those who believe in him. For all men have alike sinned and come short of the glory of God,  
24 being justified gratuitously, and without any effective merit on their part, by his mercy, through  
25 the redemption which is in Jesus Christ; whom God set forth as a propitiation through faith in his blood, not only for the display and vindication of his own unblemished righteousness and mercy, in passing over former offences by his long and  
26 patient forbearance: but also for the manifestation of the same righteousness and mercy at this present moment, showing at once the justice of his own ways, and at the same time releasing from the penalties of sin every one who has faith in Jesus.

27 Where then is boasting on our part? It is excluded. By what dispensation? by that of human merit and of works? By no means: but by the  
28 dispensation of faith in our Redeemer. Here then is our conclusion, namely, "*that a man is acquitted and rendered acceptable to God by faith in the merits of his Redeemer only, and not by the merit of his own performance of the works of the law.*"

29 And shall we presume to say that God is the God of the Jews only, and not also of the Gentiles?  
30 Most assuredly he is the God of the Gentiles also: inasmuch as he is one and the same God, who will alike acquit both Jew and Gentile by the covenant  
31 of faith. Are we then declaring the moral law of works to be useless, because we teach that redemption is through faith only? Far otherwise; on the contrary, we are confirming and bearing our testimony to the perfection of that law; inasmuch as it

was our inadequate performance of its ordinances which rendered the dispensation of faith in a Redeemer necessary.

#### SECTION V.

The Apostle proceeds to prove, that the covenant of mercy through faith extends to the Gentile world no less than to the Jews, from the fact that the divine promise made to Abraham was the reward of his reliance on God's protection before he had received the rite of circumcision, and consequently before he could be considered as exclusively representing the Jewish nation.

If however righteousness, as is now asserted, be 4  
 through faith only, what are we to say of the ex-  
 ample of our father Abraham? for if he was justi- 2  
 fied by his own works, his boast would be in the  
*merit* of those works. But not such is that imputed  
 righteousness of God which is communicated 3  
 through *faith*. What says the Scripture on this  
 subject? Abraham "trusted in God, and *that was*  
*counted to him for righteousness.*" But the reward 4  
 of a man who has completely performed his duty  
 in all its parts is one of *debt*, and of *absolute right*; 5  
 not one of *mercy and favour*. But in the case of  
 him whose works have been inadequate, and who  
 throws himself upon the mercy of him who can  
 justify the sinner, it is *faith alone and not adequate*  
*performance which is accounted to him for righteous-*  
*ness.* And according to this view of the question 6  
 is it, that David in the thirty-second Psalm de-  
 scribes the blessedness of the man to whom God  
 imputes righteousness without the merit arising  
 from works. "Blessed are they whose violations 7  
 of the law are forgiven, and whose sins are covered.  
 Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not im- 8

9 *pute sin.*" Is this blessedness then to the circum-  
cised Jews only, or to the uncircumcised Gentiles  
also? What do we learn on this point from the  
example before us? We say that faith was imputed  
10 to Abraham for righteousness. I ask then, "At  
what time, and on what occasion, was it so imputed  
to him?" Refer to the sacred writings, and we  
shall find it to have been not *after* but *before* his  
11 receiving the rite of circumcision. And he *after-*  
*wards* received the mark of circumcision as a seal  
of that previous righteousness through faith which  
he had shown when uncircumcised: in order that  
he might be considered the father of the believing  
Gentiles also, that righteousness might be imputed  
through faith to them as well as to the Jews: and  
12 the father of circumcision to those not of the cir-  
cumcision only, but to all whosoever walk in the  
track of that faith in God which he, our father  
Abraham, had before his circumcision.

13 The promise then to Abraham or to his seed,  
"that he should be the heir of the world," was not  
a reward of his, or their, perfect obedience to the  
law of works, but the consequence of the righteous-  
14 ness imputed to him through faith. For if those  
only are after all to be heirs to the promise whose  
obedience to the law of works has been complete,  
faith, in the first place, becomes of no value, and,  
secondly, the promise of God, that he will be a  
rewarder of righteousness, becomes, in consequence  
of the unworthiness of mankind, without effect.

15 For the law of perfect works, if rigorously insisted  
on, would lead *not to reward*, but *to punishment*:  
whilst on the other hand, where law is not, as there  
can be no transgression, so consequently can there  
be no punishment.

The inheritance therefore to which we look is 16 through "faith," that it may be a covenant of *mercy*, and that accordingly the fulfilment of the promise may be secure to all the seed of our common father Abraham, whether Jew or Gentile; not to that part of it only which claims its descent from him under the exclusive limitations of the law, but to that also which follows him as their great spiritual example in the righteousness of faith: as it is 17 written, (Gen. xvii. 5.) "I have made thee a father of many nations:" a promise confirmed to him whilst he stood in the presence of that God who can raise the dead to life, and who calls the things as yet unborn as though they already existed. And 18 thus, with this humble reliance, Abraham firmly believed in the divine promise, for what then seemed impossible to all human calculation, that he should be the father of many nations, according to that which was declared to him by God, (Gen. xv. 5.) "Thy seed shall be as the stars of heaven for multitude." And accordingly, being firm in faith, he 19 did not consider the improbability of his having children at his very advanced age, (for he was then about an hundred years old,) nor the great age of Sarah. Therefore he did not expostulate through 20 disbelief with this promise of God, but was strong 21 in faith, giving God the glory, and being fully persuaded that he is able to perform all that he had promised. *And it was the undoubting sincerity of 22 this faith which was imputed to him for righteousness.* Now, that "it was thus imputed to him for 23 righteousness" was not written for his sake alone, but for ours also, to whom righteousness shall also 24 be imputed in like manner, if we believe as firmly in him who raised Jesus Christ our Lord from the

25 dead. Who was delivered to death for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.

5 Being then thus justified by faith, we are at peace  
2 with God through our Lord Jesus Christ: through  
whose merits we have access by faith to this covenant of mercy in which we now stand: and exult  
in the hope that we shall one day be admitted to  
3 see the glory of God. And not only so, but we  
exult also even in our present afflictions, knowing  
4 that affliction produces patience, and patience our  
spiritual improvement, and our spiritual improvement  
5 hope: and this hope makes us not ashamed,  
because we know it to be a well-grounded consciousness of the love of God poured into our hearts  
through the Holy Spirit which is given to us.

6 For let us remember, that when we were yet in  
all the infirmity of sin, Christ in his own good time  
7 died for sinners. (Now even for a *good* man we  
should scarcely find any one who would willingly  
lay down his life, though for a truly good man  
perhaps persons may be found who would make  
8 such a sacrifice;) but God shows the immensity of  
his own love towards us, in that Christ died for us  
*even whilst we were in the very midst of our sins.*  
9 Much more then, now that we have been justified  
and reconciled to him by the expiation of his blood,  
may we confidently hope to be saved through him  
10 from the divine wrath. For if, whilst we were yet  
enemies to God by our sins, we became reconciled  
to him through the death of his Son, much more,  
now that we *are* reconciled, may we calculate upon  
our salvation through that Son's restoration to life:  
11 nay we may even confidently exult in this view of  
the mercies of God as communicated to us through

our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom we have received this reconciliation.

Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the <sup>12</sup> world, and death in consequence of sin, and thus all became subject to death, because all have sinned, <sup>13</sup> (for sin prevailed in the world from the time of Adam to that of Moses, though sin is not imputed to those who have sinned through ignorance of the law<sup>1</sup>: and yet, be that as it may, death, the con- <sup>14</sup> sequence of sin, has certainly attached to all men whatsoever during the whole of that period, and even to those who have not sinned knowingly as Adam had done,) it will appear that this first Adam, by the universality of the penalty which he brought upon mankind by his individual guilt, is in that respect a type of the second Adam, who by his individual merits procured an universality of expiation. But yet with this marked and important <sup>15</sup> difference; that, not as was the offence of Adam, so was the mercy of Christ<sup>2</sup>. For if by the sins of

<sup>1</sup> The apostle's meaning in this passage seems to be, that, although the physical consequences of Adam's sin have been the natural tendency to dissolution in all his posterity without exception by the inevitable decay of the body, yet that that transgression will not be imputed as a spiritual condemnation to such as shall have been incapable, whether from ignorance or any other preventive cause, of the actual commission of wilful sin in their own persons, as in the case of idiots, or of children who die in their infancy.

<sup>2</sup> It has been a favourite objection with unbelievers against the internal evidence of Christianity, that the doctrine of imputed sin as descending from Adam, and attaching to his posterity, is inconsistent with every notion of the divine justice. The weight of this objection is



one, many died, who might otherwise have lived, much more has the mercy of God, and the free

considerably diminished by the admission of the apostle, that "where no law has been promulgated, sin is not imputed," an admission which, as was observed in the preceding note, would encourage us to infer that God will not charge with sin such individuals of the human race as shall have been by insuperable necessity cut off from the means of better knowledge. But another answer to this charge is that which St. Paul now proceeds to urge; namely, that admitting to the fullest extent the imputation of Adam's guilt to his posterity, still its operation will not be more wide than that of the imputed righteousness of Christ, by which the responsibility attaching to us from the fall of our first parent is effectually done away. The analogy and harmony of revelation therefore in this, as in a vast number of other cases, *when considered as a whole*, affords a satisfactory solution of the peculiar difficulty suggested by an examination of *a part only*. If it be urged, however, that the operation of Adam's fall was universal in its effects, but that of the atonement of Christ conditional, and dependent upon the lives and conduct of the persons claiming to be benefited by it, we may observe in reply, that at all events we infer from Scripture that the offer of salvation through Christ is made indiscriminately to all mankind; and that although we have good reason to fear the final rejection of many through their disobedience, still that circumstance involves no more perplexing an admission than, that a God of infinite purity must necessarily disapprove of and punish all cases of gross and persevering immorality. Had our first parents remained innocent, we have no reason to infer that their posterity would never have sinned, and consequently have never forfeited their privileges, precisely as mankind may at this moment lose by their own guilt and folly the imputed righteousness purchased for them by the sacrifice of Christ. If there be any difference as to the actual extent of the two cases,

gift of redemption by the one man Jesus Christ, abounded for the salvation of many who were otherwise lost. And not, as was the penalty of one man's sin, so was the free gift by the merits of Christ. For the sentence against Adam was condemnation to all through the offence of *one*: but the mercy through Christ was a transition from the offences of *many* to justification. For if, by the transgression of one, death reigned over the whole world through that one, much more may we expect from the divine benevolence that they who embrace the exuberance of the divine mercy and the free gift of justification, shall reign in life through one, our Lord Jesus Christ.

Therefore, as the effects of one man's offence were the condemnation to death of all men, so by the righteousness of one is the communication of justification to life made to all mankind. For as by one man's disobedience many became sinners, so, by the obedience of one, many shall be made righteous.

#### SECTION VI.

The law of perfect morality, whether it be that suggested by the light of natural religion as in the case of the Gentiles, or that contained in the Levitical code as in the case of the Jews, so far from being able to correct the original depravity of man's nature, the consequence of the fall of our first parents, has on the contrary a tendency

---

St. Paul justly argues that the preponderance is clearly on that side where under the government of a good Providence we might naturally expect to find it: namely, on that of mercy. A benevolent Creator may be presumed to incline unwillingly to measures of even just severity, but we may safely infer that he will display no repugnance to the adoption of *consistent* goodness to any possible extent.

rather to increase his liability to sin; the multiplication of its enactments being in fact so many additional occasions afforded to him of displaying his disobedience. This being an objection against the efficacy of every attempt at merely *legal* justification in the sight of God, when applied to the case of infirm moral agents, which must operate more and more fatally precisely in proportion to the increased purity of the enactments which such a law would enforce, it appears to follow as an evident consequence, that our final responsibility can be effectually done away only by a dispensation constructed upon the principle of *mercy* and *imputed righteousness*. Such a dispensation however the apostle urges can never be supposed to supersede the original obligations of morality, since its object is to supply the inevitable deficiencies in human actions, and not to dispense with our best possible exertions. On the contrary, it affords the highest and most urgent motive, upon every principle whether of gratitude or of absolute obligation, to a life of purity and spiritual holiness.

20 As then the moral law by its introduction only  
served to multiply offences through man's disobedience, so, where offences have abounded, mercy  
21 has much more abounded. And thus as sin reigned  
over the whole world by introducing death, so has  
it been arranged that mercy should reign through  
the righteousness which is from God, to the introduction of eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.

6 What then; shall we abandon the pursuit of  
moral purity, and continue in the practice of those  
sins which the law denounces, because the covenant which we look to is one of grace and mercy,  
2 and not of rigorous retribution? By no means.  
How shall we who are dead to sin any longer live in  
3 the commission of it? Know ye not that as many  
of us as were baptized to Christ Jesus were baptized  
4 to his death? We have therefore been buried with  
him as to all the affections of this sinful world,  
inasmuch as we have been baptized to his death:

to the end that as Christ was raised from the dead through the glory of the Father, so we also, being dead to sin, might walk in newness of life. For, 5 if we have been planted together with him in the likeness of his death, so we shall bear the same blessed fruit with him in the likeness of his resurrection: knowing this, that our original carnal 6 nature was crucified together with him, in order that the body which was subject to sinful affections might be done away, and that we, as being dead, 7 should no longer be enslaved by sin. But if we 8 have died with Christ, we trust that we shall also live eternally together with him, knowing that 9 Christ being raised from the dead henceforward dies no more: death has no longer dominion over 10 him. For in dying, he died unto sin once, but in living, he lives now unto God. In like manner do 11 you consider yourselves, even in this world, dead to sin, but living to God in Christ Jesus our Lord.

Let not then sin reign in your mortal body, so 12 that by the indulgence of your corrupt appetites you should yield to it; nor render your members 13 instruments of iniquity through sin. But surrender yourselves to God, living as though you had been already raised from the dead, and let your members be instruments of holiness to God. Doing thus you may be assured that sin shall not 14 prevail against you; for you are no longer under the rigid law of adequate and perfect works, but under the covenant of grace and mercy. What 15 then, I again ask, shall we wilfully sin, because we are no longer under the law of perfect works, but under the covenant of grace? By no means: 16 know ye not that to whatsoever dominion you wil-

fully subject yourselves, you render yourselves the slaves of, and tender your allegiance to, that dominion, whether it shall be of sin whose fruit is death, 17 or of obedience whose fruit is holiness? But thanks be to God, that having been formerly the slaves of sin, you have now from your heart become obedient to the form of pure doctrine to which you were transferred: and being set free from the bondage of sin, 18 have become the slaves of holiness. (In speaking thus I am using a homely and familiar illustration, in order to make myself clear to your understanding.) Wherefore as you have in time past made your members slaves to impurity and to licentiousness whilst under the dominion of sin, so now render them slaves to holiness as being under the 20 dominion of purity. For when you were the slaves of sin you considered not yourselves subject to the 21 control of the rule of righteousness. And what fruit did you reap from that degrading bondage to your former master? fruit of which you are now ashamed; for the end of those things is death. 22 But now being set free from sin, and become servants of God, you have your fruit unto holiness; 23 and, for your final reward, everlasting life<sup>1</sup>. For

<sup>1</sup> This is the true philosophy of sound morality. Where the heart and inclinations are callous or corrupt, the understanding may be crowded with the noblest maxims of ethical wisdom, and men may be taught to declaim plausibly and learnedly upon the beauty of virtue, but no fruits of practical holiness will be the result. The inculcation however of such lessons is all that the purest schools of morals can achieve, without the awakening aid of revealed religion. Christianity adopts the contrary and far more effectual method, and, making its first appeal to the better

the wages of sin is death : but the free gift of God is everlasting life in Christ Jesus our Lord.

And here (to illustrate my argument by an analogous case of the Mosaic law with which you are familiar) let me remind you, my brethren, that it is an established rule of that law, that a covenant is binding upon the contracting parties during their joint lives only, and no longer. Thus <sup>2</sup> a woman is bound in duty to her husband, as to a law which is to regulate her actions, until that husband's death ; but after his death she is set free from that law to which she was before subject. If <sup>3</sup> then during her husband's life she marry another man she is an adulteress : but, if her husband dies, she is set free from her former subjection, so that she no longer is to be considered an adulteress if she unite herself in a second marriage. In like <sup>4</sup> manner, my brethren, you have been set free by death from subjection to the law of Moses, through the sacrifice of the body of Christ, that you may now be married to another, even to him who was raised from the dead, that we might henceforward bring forth fruit not unto this world, but unto God.

affections of the heart, presumes that where they are effectually roused, the works of righteousness will necessarily follow. It is not therefore that it would derogate from the value, or deny the necessity, of good works, as some fanatics have impiously asserted, that it so earnestly inculcates faith as a primary principle, but because without the groundwork of faith the moral character possesses not the means of its own effectual development. "A good tree," says our blessed Saviour, "bringeth not forth corrupt fruit, neither doth a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit."

5 For when we were subject to the carnal law of works, the evil propensities which we had under that covenant, worked in our members to bring  
6 forth fruit unto death: but now we are set free from the rigorous stipulations of that law, (that covenant being dead to which we were subject,) so that we henceforward obey the new dispensation of spiritual holiness, not the cancelled letter of ritual expiations.

7 What shall we say then? Is that law, which God himself gave from Mount Sinai, sinful? Far from it. But this I *do* say, that I should never have known the full nature of sin, and consequently should never have sinned completely against my better knowledge, had it not been for the prohibitions contained in the law. Thus, for instance, I should never have known the full enormity of a licentious appetite, if the law had not forbidden the  
8 indulgence of those appetites. Sin therefore, taking its advantage of the very injunctions and prohibitions of the law, wrought in me all manner of evil appetites and deliberate disobedience; for where there is neither injunction nor prohibition sin cannot exist.  
9 So long then as I was ignorant of my duty, I might indeed in a certain sense be said to live; but when I was taught to understand the moral obligations and unsullied purity of the law, then my sins came  
10 into life<sup>1</sup>, and I became spiritually dead: and

<sup>1</sup> It is an observation which St. Paul omits no opportunity of enforcing, and which should never be forgotten by those who would satisfy themselves that nothing short of such a dispensation as that of the Christian covenant could procure our effectual reconciliation with God, that the inculcation of

thus the very perfection of those moral injunctions, which ought to have shown me the way to life, in reality brought me down to death. For sin, availing 11 itself of the very sanctity of the duties imposed by the commandments, insinuated itself into my heart, and slew me through their means. Still however 12 the law considered by itself must be acknowledged to be intrinsically holy, and the precepts it contains holy, and just, and good. Was that then, which 13 was thus in its own nature good, the real occasion of my spiritual death? By no means. The real cause was my own sin and disobedience, which,

the mere science of morals, though it may in a certain degree contribute to the external civilization of mankind and the refinement of our social habits, has nevertheless little or no tendency to purify the internal moral principle which alone can recommend our seemingly best actions to the approbation of our Creator. On the contrary, the promulgation of every new prohibitory enactment by the divine authority is in reality a fresh opportunity afforded to our corrupt nature of sinning either by total neglect of what is commanded, or by inadequate obedience. Hence therefore, I conceive, may be derived an unanswerable argument against those impugnors of the doctrine of our Saviour's divinity who deny the necessity of his expiatory atonement, on the ground that the mere inculcation of a purer moral code than had previously existed were a quite sufficient motive for God's miraculous interposition with mankind in communicating to them the knowledge of the Gospel. Did that holy dispensation convey to us nothing more than a tissue of practical morals, however pure their tenor might be, we can have no hesitation in asserting of it, that, like its precursor the Levitical law, it would have been to us the cause rather of deeper guilt than of increased holiness in the sight of God, and instead of leading us to life would in fact have assisted in bringing us down to death.



as if to show the extreme deadliness of its nature, made the very precepts of holiness the instrument of my spiritual death, and consummated the enormity of its original sinfulness by the wilful violation  
14 of positive commandment. For we know that the law enjoins spiritual holiness, but I am, in my  
15 natural state, carnal, sold as a slave to sin, and therefore what I do my conscience sanctions not; for I do not what my reason dictates and my will approves: but that which I hate and disapprove I do.

16 Still, however, if I do that which my conscience disapproves, my conscience at all events bears testimony by its reproaches that the moral law which also disapproves those things, is in itself just and  
17 holy. But now that I am under the spiritual covenant of grace, I no longer do these things; or, if they are done by an incurable infirmity of my nature in spite of myself, it is not I that do them, but the sin which clings to my present mortal condition, and works without my participation and  
18 consent. For I am well aware that there is no really good inclination in my natural and carnal part. I have indeed the wish to do what is right,  
19 but the means I find not. For the good which I would do, I do not; but the evil which I would  
20 shun, that I do. But if I do that which my conscience, uniting with every earnest moral effort on my part, makes me sincerely anxious to avoid, then indeed it is not I who do it, but the sinfulness which cleaves to my nature which does it in my  
21 despite. Such then I find from my daily experience to be the law of my present constitution, namely, that even where I am zealous to do good, even

there I feel an accompanying and countervailing tendency to do evil. For with my spiritual nature 22 I sincerely delight in and assent to the pure commandments of God; whilst in my members I feel 23 a struggle against the conviction of my conscience, which enslaves me to that law of sin which prevails over my carnal nature. Wretched man that I am, 24 who shall put an end to this warfare, and deliver me from these deadly propensities which attach to my body? I thank my God for his deliverance 25 through Jesus Christ our Lord. Thus it is that our spiritual nature is of necessity at variance with our carnal: the former leading us to the love and admiration of what is good; the latter, to practical acts of grossness and immorality.

There is therefore no longer any condemnation to 8 those who are in Christ Jesus, and who walk, not according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit. For the spiritual law of life in Christ Jesus has set 2 me free from that of sin and death. For that which 3 the ritual law, through the weakness of our carnal nature, could not do, God has done for us by sending his own Son in the likeness of our sinful flesh, and as an expiation for sin, and thus has destroyed the power of sin in the flesh: that the righteousness required by the law might be at- 4 tained by us who walk not according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit. For they who live 5 according to the flesh continue to follow the sinful propensities of the flesh; but they who live according to the Spirit seek the good things of the Spirit. For the pursuit of the things of the flesh 6 is death; but the pursuit of the things of the Spirit is life and peace; because the cherishing of 7

the propensities of the flesh is enmity to God, for they neither are, nor ever can be, subjected to the  
8 perfect law of God. Those therefore, who continue to be wrapt up in the mere pursuits of the flesh,  
9 cannot please God. But you are no longer in the flesh, but in the Spirit: inasmuch as I trust that the Spirit of God dwells in you. But if any one has not the Spirit of Christ, he assuredly is none of  
10 his. But if Christ dwells in you, then your body is dead with respect to sin, but your spirit is alive  
11 with respect to holiness. And if the Spirit of that God who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, then he who raised Christ from the dead shall also bring again to life your mortal bodies through his Spirit which dwells within you.

12 Therefore, brethren, we are henceforward under a solemn obligation to control the propensities of  
13 the flesh; for if you live according to the desires of the flesh you shall die; but if, through the Spirit, you put to death the works of the flesh, you shall live.

14 All then, who are thus led and influenced by the  
15 Spirit of God, become the sons of God. Nor is this (as was your case whilst under the dominion of the law) a state of timid subservience to a rigorous master, but one of real and actual adoption, by which we are authorized to look up to him as  
16 children to their parent. Hence that cheerful community of feeling and spiritual intercourse with the Divinity within us, which so convincingly tells us  
17 that we are the children of God: and if children, then heirs: heirs of God, and joint heirs with Christ; suffering at present the afflictions to which he himself submitted whilst upon the earth, in the

hope that we may also hercafter be glorified together with him in heaven.

For be assured that the afflictions of the present 18 life are as nothing when compared with the glory which shall be finally revealed to us. For the 19 earnest expectation of the whole of the human race even now waits impatiently for the manifestation of the redemption of the sons of God; for our nature 20 was made subject to its present infirmities and corruption, not as though that were its original destination or the final object of God's providence, without any ulterior design; but through the wise prospective arrangement of him who so disposed it, in order that it might finally be set free from the 21 bondage of mortality to the glorious liberty which shall hereafter be the heritage of the sons of God.

For we know that the whole creation has up to 22 this moment been groaning as in the pains of childbirth for the development of a happier and better state of things than the present: and not only has 23 such been the earnest expectation of both Gentiles and Jews in former times, but even we ourselves, admitted as we are to the participation of a better covenant, being the first fruits of the Holy Spirit, even we, so long as we continue subject to the laws of mortality, are still involved in this same agony of expectation, waiting for that adoption which has not yet been completed, namely, the deliverance of our bodily nature from its present state of corruption.

For our redemption is at present in *hope* only, 24 and not in actual fruition. Hope, however, we should remember, which has already attained its object has ceased to be hope, since no man hopes

25 for what he actually possesses. But if hope, to be such, is necessarily the desire of things *not yet in our possession*, then is it our duty *to wait patiently*  
26 *for its consummation*. And accordingly as we endure affliction in this our present state of trial, so also the Divine Spirit itself, which is in us, bears its part with, and sustains, us under the burden of our infirmities: for we in this life are too ignorant even to pray for that which is the best for us: but the Holy Spirit silently prays for us without our  
27 knowledge: and he who sees the interior of our hearts listens to these secret supplications of the Spirit which it offers to God in the behalf of his saints <sup>1</sup>.

28 One thing then we are perfectly assured of; that, be the present aspect of God's providence what it may, all things are at this moment working together for the production of ultimate good to those who are called to participate in that redemption which God predetermined for those who love and believe in him, from the foundation of the world.  
29 <sup>2</sup> For those whose obedience he foreknew, those

<sup>1</sup> This passage affords a beautiful and encouraging picture of the co-operating aid of the divine grace afforded to every sincere Christian in this our present state of infirmity and ignorance. It is worthy of observation also on another account, as explicitly asserting the distinct personality of the Holy Spirit in the mysterious union of the eternal Godhead.

<sup>2</sup> St. Paul here expressly asserts, that the predestination of individuals to salvation is the consequence of God's foreknowledge of their respective dispositions, an arrangement perfectly accordant with our indelible notions of divine justice. If it be alleged that this view of that mysterious question does not remove all the difficulties

same he predestined to bear the image of his Son, that Christ might be to them as the elder brother

connected with it, we can only answer, that it is perfectly satisfactory so far as *our own eternal destination is concerned*, and that the perplexities which still remain unsolved are such only as meet us in every discussion connected with the divine nature, but which have no reference whatever to our personal interests, or to our duty as moral agents. We cannot read these cautious statements contained in the sacred writings with regard to this much discussed and interminable question, without feeling pain and surprise when we turn from them to the unhesitating, and it is difficult not to add *unscriptural*, assertions of human authority on this subject. The best answer which we can give to the following passage, which constitutes the ninth article of the confession of faith of the synod of Dort, is the placing it in juxta position with the inspired words of the apostle to which this note is appended.

Eadem hæc electio facta est *non* ex prævisâ fide, fideique obedientiâ, sanctitate, aut aliâ aliquâ bonâ qualitate et dispositione, tanquam causâ seu conditione in homine eligendo prærequisitâ, sed ad fidem, fideique obedientiam, sanctitatem, &c. Ac proinde electio est fons omnis salutaris boni : unde fides, sanctitas, et reliqua dona salvifica, ipsa denique vita æterna, ut fructus et effectus ejus, profluunt, secundum illud apostoli, “Elegit nos” (non quia eramus, sed) “ut essemus sancti et inculpati in conspectu ejus in charitate.” Ephes. i. 4.

Should it be objected to the foregoing remarks, that the words “whose obedience,” inserted by me in the translation, are not borne out by any corresponding term in the Greek text, I answer, that the assertion of the fact of God’s foreknowledge in the original passage necessarily implies the existence of some subject-matter as the object of the particular exercise of the divine intellect here alluded to :—that such subject-matter cannot be supposed to have been the mere *persons* of the parties foreknown, since

30 among many brethren: and those whom he thus predestined, those same he called; and those whom he thus called, those same he justified, by the redemption which is in Christ; and those whom he has thus justified, those same he has made heirs of his glory.

31 What shall we say then to these things? If God is for us, who or what of all the evil persons or things with which we may be at present surrounded  
32 can finally prevail against us? He who spared not his own Son, but gave him up to death for our sake, will not He, who has already given to us so transcendent a gift, give us also whatever other things shall be necessary for us?

33 Who then shall charge those whom God has deigned to receive into his covenant of mercy with the inadequacy of their works? God himself has accepted and acquitted them through the merits of  
34 Christ's expiation. Who amongst his creatures then shall dare to pronounce sentence of condemnation upon them? It is Christ himself, who has died, or rather let us say, who is risen again, and is even now on God's right hand, who is our advocate, and

those of all human beings whatever, of the lost no less than of the justified, must from all eternity have been equally objects of the prescience of their Creator:—consequently that it could be nothing else than their possession of some of those moral qualities which exist in different degrees in different men. But Scripture informs us of none such as are really acceptable with God, excepting *Christian faith and obedience*, or, in other words, that faculty of the soul by which, with the co-operating aid of the Holy Spirit, we are enabled to perform our appointed task in the great duty of working out our salvation.

pleads for us. Who then shall separate us from <sup>35</sup> the love of Christ? shall affliction, or privation, or persecution, or hunger, or nakedness, or peril, or the sword? (as it is written, Psalm xlv. 22. "For <sup>36</sup> thy sake are we killed all the day long, we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.") In all such <sup>37</sup> momentary afflictions we are more than conquerors through the support of him who loved us. For <sup>38</sup> I am fully assured that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor the things which now are, nor the things which are yet to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, <sup>39</sup> shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

#### SECTION VII.

The exclusive election of the Jewish nation as God's peculiar people, and the depositories of his revealed will, being necessarily terminated by the extension of the new covenant of mercy to the whole world whether Jew or Gentile, the Apostle now proceeds to show that this arrangement, so mortifying to the national vanity of the former, is neither indicative of any fickleness in the divine decrees, nor reasonably chargeable with injustice, or the violation of a promise. This he proceeds to prove, in the first place, by showing that the original covenant made with them was *conditional*, and necessarily implied undeviating obedience on their part: secondly, that God's election of that particular people was perfectly *gratuitous*, both Isaac and Jacob, the founders of that race, having been chosen by him in preference to their elder brothers, before they could by their own conduct have in any way merited such a distinctive mark of favour: thirdly, that that election had been virtually forfeited by the idolatry of the Israelites, and had therefore been continued to them and their posterity only by the free mercy and good will of the Almighty: and fourthly, that the admission of the Gentiles into one common covenant with them was in fact not only indirectly implied, but clearly and explicitly declared in various passages of the prophetic writings. He then goes on to show, that in real fact no privilege whatever has been withdrawn from the Jews, every individual of that nation being admitted to the offer



of the new covenant as freely as the Gentiles, and being excluded from the benefit of it only by his own persevering obstinacy and want of faith. That in consequence of this obstinacy God's favour is undoubtedly withdrawn from them for the present as a nation, and transferred to the Gentiles, but that the moment of their return to him will be that of his return to them; and that accordingly the whole world, both Jew and Gentile, shall one day be included within the pale of the Gospel dispensation, and joint partakers of the divine favour and mercy.

9 Since then such is the nature of the dispensation of the new covenant of grace, that it has broken down the partition wall between Jews and Gentiles, and, by placing both on an equal footing, finally extinguished the claim of the Jewish nation to any priority in God's favour over the rest of mankind;—and such being the case, (be assured that I speak the sincere truth:—I lie not, as my conscience, as it is open to the scrutiny of the Holy Spirit, bears me  
2 witness,) as a jealous Jew bearing sincere love to my countrymen, and proud of their national privileges, I feel on their account great grief and un-  
3 ceasing agony of heart. For I could even wish to be in my own person an outcast from Christ, so it might benefit my brethren, my beloved kindred  
4 according to the flesh, the Jewish nation: men whose boast it has been that they are of the blood of Israel; to whom for so many ages belonged the peculiar adoption as God's chosen people, the glory, the covenants with our forefathers, the giving of the  
5 law, the ritual worship, and the promises: whose are the fathers, men favoured by God, and from whose lineage according to the flesh has sprung Christ himself, God ruling over all, blessed for ever and ever. Amen.

6 Imagine not, however, that in superseding his

former covenant with you, God has violated or forgotten his promise made to our forefathers. For not all who claim descent from the blood of Israel are in reality God's chosen<sup>1</sup> Israel; any more than 7 all the various descendants of Abraham can claim as such the benefit of the promises made to Abraham. "In *Isaac*, said the Almighty, (Gen. xxi. 12.) shall thy seed be called." That is to say, not all 8 the natural descendants of thy body, such as *Ismael* and his progeny, shall be considered as God's children, but *the especial children of the promise only* shall have the benefit of the peculiar covenant made with Abraham's seed. For these were the words of 9 the promise. "I will come to thee at this thy time of life, and *Sarah* shall have a son." (Gen. xviii. 10.) And again in the instance of *Rebecca*, 10

<sup>1</sup> The whole Israelitish nation was externally and by election God's peculiar and chosen people; but the Apostle here and in the following argument asserts that "God's own Israel," those who were actually chosen and elected by him, were those only who were distinguished by their piety and obedience. In like manner we find St. Paul addressing the Corinthians, in the introduction to his first Epistle, as persons "called to be God's saints;" yet we learn from that same Epistle that the Church of Corinth contained at that time many immoral and heretical members, whom we cannot by the most charitable construction conceive to have been at that moment in a state of grace. "Many are called," says our blessed Saviour, in his parable of the guest who came to the feast without the wedding garment, "but few are chosen." The inference from these passages is obvious, namely, that the universality of the call to a participation in the blessings of the Gospel covenant is nevertheless conditional, and may be subsequently forfeited by our disobedience.

when she was pregnant by one and the selfsame  
11 person, our father Isaac, before the children were  
yet born, and whilst they had done as yet neither  
good nor evil, (that God might show that his selec-  
tion of our race in the person of Jacob was of his  
own free will, and not the consequence of any claim  
12 of merit on the part of our forefather Jacob so  
selected,) even then it was declared to her, (Gen.  
xxv. 23.) "The elder shall serve the younger."  
13 As it is written in the book of Malachi, "I loved  
Jacob, and hated Esau."  
14 What shall we say then? That there is injustice  
with God, or that he has broken his covenant with  
15 us? By no means. On the contrary, our fore-  
fathers, we know, broke their covenant with him  
even at the very moment of its ratification, by fall-  
ing into the grievous sin of idolatry; yet even then,  
under such grievous provocation, he withdrew not  
his protection from them, but gratuitously declared  
to Moses, when interceding with him on their be-  
half, "I will have mercy on him for whom I  
choose to have mercy, and will pity him I choose  
16 to pity." (Exod. xxxiii. 19.) So that it is not the  
plea of exertion or merit on our own or on their  
part that we can presume to set up as affording us  
a claim to his favour, but his own free and gra-  
cious selection of us from among the surrounding  
17 nations. Thus again, as an example of the  
opposite kind, he says to Pharaoh, (Exod. ix.  
16.) "For this cause have I raised you to your  
present greatness, that I might show my power in  
you, and that my name might be declared through-  
18 out all the earth." We see then from these two  
instances, that he spares a nation whom he chooses

to spare, and leaves, when he thinks fit, another nation to its own obduracy. But you will still say 19 perhaps, "Why then, having used his own free discretion with us thus far, to raise us above the level of other nations, does he now, without any fresh offence or resistance on our part, suddenly withdraw the privileges which he once conferred upon us?" "And who, let me ask in my turn, 20 art thou, who puttest this captious question to God?" Recollect the words of the prophet Jeremiah, when he foretold this very abandonment of the Jewish people, and asserted God's right to raise up or to put down nations as might please him best, (Jer. xviii. 6.) "Shall the thing shaped say unto its former, Why hast thou modelled me thus? Hath not the potter power over the clay, 21 of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?" Are we entitled 22 to remonstrate, if it shall have pleased God, in order to manifest his just wrath, and the plenitude of his power, to bear with for a time, with long-suffering and forbearance, the vessels of wrath, fitted to destruction; or, in order to make known 23 the riches of his glory, to raise up to eminence the vessels of his mercy, prepared by him for glory? as 24 he has now done in our case, and in that of the Gentiles, calling to his covenant not only such of the Jews as will be obedient to him, but those of other nations also. This is no new and capricious alteration in the purposes of God's government. The prophet Hosea, we may remember, has ex- 25 pressly foretold to us, this future extension of God's favour to the Gentiles indiscriminately with the Jews. "I will call that my people, says he, (Hosea 26

ii. 23.) which was not my people, and her beloved who was not beloved." And again, (chap. i. 10.) "It shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, 'Ye are not my people,' there shall they be called the children of the living  
27 God." Isaiah also proclaims the rejection of a large portion of the lineal descendants of Israel in the following passage, (Isaiah x. 22.) "Although the number of the children of Israel be as the sand  
28 of the sea, a remnant only shall be preserved. For the Lord will bring his dispensations to a conclusion, and cut them short in righteousness; because he shall make short work in his government of the  
29 earth." As the same prophet also had said to the same purpose in a former passage, (Isaiah i. 9.) "Had not the Lord of hosts left us a remaining seed, we should have been as Sodom, and like unto Gomorrah."

30 What then is our conclusion? This. That the Gentiles who never sought after righteousness have attained to real righteousness; namely, the right-  
31 teousness of faith: and that Israel, who had God's own law of ritual righteousness for their guide, have not attained to the end of even ritual right-  
32 teousness. And why so? Because they trusted to mere ceremonial observances as constituting the whole of righteousness, and sought it not also in the holiness of faith. And thus they stumbled against that stumbling-block, the spirituality of  
33 the Christian covenant; as it is written by the prophet Isaiah, (Isaiah viii. 14.) "Behold I place in Sion a stumbling stone and rock of offence: yet whosoever believeth on it shall not be ashamed."

10 Brethren, the earnest desire of my heart, and

my constant prayer to God, is for the salvation of Israel my countrymen: for I can testify for them 2 that they are not deficient in zeal for God; but unhappily their zeal is without sufficient knowledge. For not being aware of the nature of that righ- 3 teousness which God alone can communicate, and wishing to establish their claim to righteousness by the merit of their own ritual performances, they have not submitted themselves as they should have done to that righteousness which is of God. For Christ 4 is the completion of the law, a means of perfect justification to all those who believe in him.

For the righteousness required by Moses in the 5 law which he received and taught was that which was to be the result of *complete and adequate obedience*, so that the man who accepted that rule as a rule of life was bound entirely to conform to it *in all its parts*. “Ye shall therefore keep my statutes and my judgments, said he; which if a man do, *he shall live in them*.” (Leviticus xviii. 5.) But the righteousness which is of faith addresses 6 mankind in the same beautiful and simple language with which Moses exhorted the Israelites after that he had laid before them the promises and threatenings of the Almighty at the time of the final promulgation of his law. “Say not in thine heart, said he, (Deuteronomy xxx. 12.) Who shall ascend into heaven;” and such also in this our present life should be our language, for it is not yet permitted us to examine the heavenly nature and mysteries of Christ: and again, “Say not,” said he, “Who shall 7 descend for us into the deep;” and so also again say we; for it is not at present for us to pronounce upon the hidden secrets of that lower world which

8 Christ visited for our sakes;—but as he then added,  
so also in like manner say we, “The word is nigh  
thee, and in thy mouth, and in thy heart.” For such  
9 is the word of faith which we preach, namely, that if  
you will confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus, and  
believe in your heart that God raised him from the  
10 dead, you shall be saved. For with the heart man  
believes unto justification, and with his mouth pro-  
11 fesses that belief unto salvation. For the Scripture  
says, (Isaiah xxviii. 16.) “Whosoever believeth on  
12 him shall not be ashamed.” Nor is there any dif-  
ference in this respect between the Jew and the  
Gentile: for the same Lord is over all, sufficiently  
rich in redemption for all who call upon him.  
13 For so says the prophet Joel, (Joel ii. 32.) “For  
whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord  
shall be saved.”

14 But how shall men call upon him, unless they  
have previously faith in him? and how shall they  
acquire faith in him, unless they have previously  
15 heard his Gospel preached? and how shall they  
hear his Gospel preached without an apostle to  
preach it to them? and how shall a man become  
an apostle, unless he has his commission from God?  
According to the words of the prophet Isaiah,  
(Isaiah lii. 7.) “How beautiful are the feet of him  
that bringeth good tidings, that publisheth peace,  
16 that bringeth glad tidings, of good things.” Yet too  
often has the Preacher lifted up his voice in vain; men  
stop their ears, and refuse to hear the tidings of the  
Gospel; according to the prophecy of Isaiah, (Isaiah  
liii. 1.) “Who, Lord, hath believed our report?”

17 If you ask then, “How are you to acquire that  
faith which is necessary to salvation?” I answer,

“by listening with submission to the instruction of your teacher.” If you ask again, “Who is that teacher?” I again reply, “He who bears God’s own commission to preach his revelation.” And has <sup>18</sup> not that word been preached? Most assuredly it has, and with such notoriety, that we may apply to it the language of the Psalmist, “Their sound is gone forth into all lands, and their words unto the ends of the world.” But, whilst other nations have <sup>19</sup> listened and been converted, has Israel condescended to hearken to the words of revelation? The prophetic language of Moses (Deuteronomy xxxii. 21.) will best answer this question. “I will rouse your jealousy by preferring to you people whom you have not deigned to consider as a nation, and rouse your anger by setting up those whom you despised as ignorant.” And Isaiah boldly expresses himself on <sup>20</sup> the same subject, (Isaiah lxxv. 1.) “I was found of them that sought me not; I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me.” And again <sup>21</sup> in the next verse, “All day long have I stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and obstinate people.”

Do I assert then that God has finally abandoned <sup>11</sup> his people Israel? Far from it. I myself, who now address you as his apostle, am by descent an Israelite, of the seed of Abraham, and of the tribe of Benjamin. God assuredly has not abandoned <sup>2</sup> his people: that part of them I mean whose obedience he foreknew. Recollect the words which the Scriptures put into the mouth of Elijah, how he remonstrates with God against the rebellious Israelites of his time, (1 Kings xix. 18.) “Lord, <sup>3</sup> they have killed thy prophets, and digged down



thine altars; and I am left alone, and they seek  
4 my life." And what is God's answer? "I have  
reserved to myself seven thousand men who have  
5 not bowed the knee to Baal." And so may we say  
at the present day, "There is still reserved in  
6 Israel a remnant selected to receive mercy." But  
remember that if they are to be saved through  
*mercy*, then is their salvation not through *meritori-*  
*ous works*, since mercy would cease to be such  
might it be claimed, not as a gratuitous kindness,  
but as a debt which it were injustice to refuse.  
7 What then is our conclusion? That Israel *as a*  
*nation* has not obtained the salvation of the Gospel,  
but that the select remnant of the obedient among  
them have obtained it, whilst the others have hard-  
8 ened their hearts against its reception. As it is  
written by Isaiah, (Isaiah xxix. 10.) where he de-  
scribes the judicial hardening of the hearts of the  
inhabitants of Jerusalem in his day, in punishment  
of their wilful disobedience. "God," says he, "has  
given them a spirit of slumber, eyes incapable of  
sight, and ears incapable of hearing to this day."  
9 As David also says, (Psalm lxxix. 22.) "Let their  
table also be made a snare and a trap, and a stum-  
10 bling-block, and a retaliation to them: let their  
eyes be darkened that they may not see; and bow  
thou down their back."

11 Has then this momentary stumbling of the Jews,  
whilst it has forfeited for them their privilege of  
being God's peculiar people, operated to their final  
downfall and absolute exclusion from his mercy?  
I trust not. Rather let us hope that the salvation  
which, upon their neglect of it, has passed from  
them to the Gentiles, may one day re-act benefi-

cially upon them, by exciting an emulation amongst themselves similar to that which has already appeared amongst the Gentile converts. And if so; 12 if their present fall has been the cause of the extension of the Gospel covenant to the rest of mankind; if their present forfeiture has proved a source of riches to the Gentiles; much greater, we trust, will eventually be the benefit resulting hereafter to mankind at large from their final restoration to God's favour.

And it is under this conviction that I make my 13 appeal to the Gentiles, as an apostle to them of that revelation which my own countrymen the Jews have rejected; proclaiming the more publicly my present mission to *them*, in the hope that by so 14 doing I may rouse the Jewish nation, who are my own flesh and blood, to a competition with them, and thus be the means of saving some of them. For if the abrogation of the Jewish covenant, and 15 their rejection as God's people, has produced the happy result of reconciling the heathen world to God, surely their re-admission to his favour may be expected to lead to still more happy consequences. For if the original materials are holy, the conse- 16 quent mass derived from them will be holy in like proportion; and if the root is holy, so may the branches be expected to be. And if some of the 17 natural branches have been broken off, and you the Gentiles, like branches of the wild olive, have been engrafted upon the original stock in their place, and together with the remaining boughs now derive fatness and nourishment from the cultivated root, are you therefore to boast yourselves of your newly 18 acquired privilege, as though you support the root,

19 and are not yourselves sustained by it? Do you assert that the original and natural branches were broken off, in order that you, the wild scions, 20 might be grafted in their room? Be it so. Recollect however that they were broken off *because of their unbelief*, and that you occupy their place solely on account of that faith which they want. Be not elated then with your present situation, but possess 21 it with fear and trembling; remembering that if God did not spare even the original branches, so, if you sin as they have done, he may in like manner not spare you. Contemplate therefore in this awful example at once the goodness, and the just severity of God: his just severity in the punishment of those who have fallen; his goodness as manifested in your case, if you continue to deserve it; for be assured that when you cease to deserve 23 it, it will be withdrawn: as they, if they will only turn away from their present unbelief, will be again engrafted upon the same stock from which they have been severed. For God is able so to deal 24 with them. For if you, who were originally branches of the wild and worthless olive, were notwithstanding artificially engrafted upon the good and cultivated stock, how much rather shall the naturally good and cultivated branches be engrafted once more upon that stock by which they were first reared.

25 Brethren, I am the more earnest in impressing upon you this warning, that you may not be puffed up with vain and false notions of your own comparative merit. Be assured that a temporary hardness of heart only has come upon part of the Jewish nation, which shall be allowed to continue

no longer than till the conversion of the Gentiles shall be complete; and thus eventually all Israel 26 itself shall be saved: as it is written, (Isaiah lix. 20.) "The Redeemer shall come out of Sion, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob: for this 27 is my covenant with them when I shall take away their sins: my spirit that is upon thee, and my words which I have put in thy mouth, shall not depart out of thy mouth, nor out of the mouth of thy seed, nor out of the mouth of thy seed's seed, saith the Lord, from henceforth and for ever."

With regard then to their rejection of the Gospel 28 covenant, the Jews have for the present become as it were enemies of God, for the sake of the salvation of you Gentiles: but as being of the race of God's chosen people, they are still even now beloved by him for the sake of their forefathers. For he is not a Being who acts capriciously, or 29 elects for reasons which he afterwards disclaims. As therefore you formerly were disobedient to the 30 true God, but have now been admitted to mercy in consequence of their unbelief, which has caused the favour of God to pass from them to you; so 31 have they now also in their turn become disobedient, that the mercy which you have now received may one day extend from you to include themselves also. For God has allowed both you and 32 them to fall into disobedience, that he might show his mercy upon you all on equal terms, and in like proportion.

Oh! may we well therefore exclaim, the immen- 33 sity of the riches of the wisdom and knowledge of God! how inexplicable are his judgments, and how untraceable are his ways! For who has compre- 34

hended the mind of the Lord, or who hath been  
35 his counsellor? or who hath conferred benefits  
upon him, to have claims upon him as his credi-  
36 tor? since from him, and through him, and for  
him are all things.—To him be glory for ever and  
ever. Amen.

## SECTION VIII.

Having in the former part of this Epistle proved from the failure of all former dispensations the necessity of a new covenant better suited to the peculiar circumstances of our nature, and having shown the perfect impartiality of God's government in his revelation of the promises of the Gospel to all mankind indiscriminately, the apostle now proceeds to inculcate the grand practical result of this doctrine, in the obligation which it imposes upon us to a life of holiness and unblemished morality, in the conscientious discharge of our various duties to God and man, and in the exercise of the most universal brotherly love towards the whole human race.

12 <sup>1</sup> I entreat you therefore, brethren, in the name of those mercies of God which we have all experienced, to render yourselves pure according to the pure nature of the sublime covenant to which you are admitted, and present your bodies a living, holy, and acceptable sacrifice to God, which is your fit,  
2 becoming, and reasonable service. And be not adapted to the vain views and speculations of this world, but put on a new character in the renovation of your minds, that you may feelingly experience

<sup>1</sup> It is scarcely possible to imagine any exhortation to holiness and a good life more impressive and beautiful than the one here given. It is only equalled by our Saviour's own sermon on the mount, and bears impressed upon it the same character of a divine morality far more perfect than any which can be conceived to have proceeded from any school of mere human philosophy.

how good, and pleasing, and perfect the will of God is. And accordingly, as bearing his commission to 3 address you, I require of you all, that none among you shall think more highly of himself than he ought to think ; but deem of himself meekly, each according to the measure of the talents and spiritual gifts which God has entrusted to him. For, as we 4 have in our own persons many members which constitute our one single body, so we, the multitude of 5 Christian believers, are one body in Christ, but separately are each of us different limbs, all bearing our peculiar and distinct offices. Having then all of us 6 our own individual gifts and abilities, according to the measure in which the mercy of God has distributed them to us, let us use them to the best of our power for the promotion of that object for which they were given. Is our gift that of the clear apprehension of the doctrines of revelation? <sup>1</sup> Let us

<sup>1</sup> The word “prophecy” (*προφητεία*) is frequently used by St. Paul, as in the original of this passage, in the sense of exposition, or spiritual interpretation of Scripture. The advice here given, that those who undertake to expound any passage of the sacred writings should be careful to keep in their mind the general analogy and harmony of the Christian dispensation as *a whole*, (*κατὰ τὴν ἀναλογίαν τῆς πίστεως*), has unfortunately been too much lost sight of by theologians and commentators of all ages and denominations. Of all the various shades of opinion which distract the Christian world, how large a portion is referrible to the single abuse of dwelling with minute and almost exclusive attention to single passages torn from their proper position where bearing upon some peculiar chain of argument, and thus made to sanction some favourite preconceived theory at variance with the general character, and destructive of some of the most certain and palpable

expound them to others, illustrating Scripture by Scripture, according to the full meaning and spirit  
7 of the respective passages. Is our lot cast among the humbler services of the Church? let us execute that duty, such as it may be, to the best of  
8 our power. Are we called to instruct others? let us make our instruction advantageous to those committed to our care. To preach? let us preach with earnestness and sincerity. Let him that gives, give with simplicity and singleness of heart: let him that is entrusted with authority exercise it conscientiously, and for the good of those over whom he presides: let him that shows mercy, do so cheerfully and from the bottom of his heart.  
9 Let your mutual kindness to one another be in full sincerity, without deceit or dissimulation. Abhor that which is evil; cling to and cherish that which  
10 is good. Love one another as brethren, each preferring his neighbour to himself: not remiss in the  
11 performance of your several duties; but eager in your zeal, and serving the Lord in full humility:  
12 consoling yourselves in the hope of the fulfilment of God's promises: bearing your afflictions patiently:  
13 persevering in the fervency of prayer: imparting to the wants and necessities of your Christian brethren:  
14 practising hospitality. Bless them who persecute  
15 you: bless, and curse not. Rejoice with them who

doctrines, of the inspired writings! A wide and discursive range is to the full as necessary for the due apprehension of Scripture as a close and accurate examination of parts; but it is a faculty much less frequently met with, and which requires a rare combination of impartiality, discrimination, and judgment.

rejoice, and weep with them who weep. Be equal <sup>16</sup> in your bearings to all men; not seeking after eminence and distinction, but making yourselves companions to the meek and humble minded. Be not wise in your own conceits. Return not injury for <sup>17</sup> injury, but carefully live so that men may have cause to approve your conduct. If it be possible, <sup>18</sup> at all events so far as in you lies, be at peace with all men, not avenging your own quarrels, but let <sup>19</sup> the violence of your enemies pass away without attempting retaliation; remembering what is written, (Deut. xxxii. 35.) "Vengeance is mine, I will repay, saith the Lord." As also in the book of Pro- <sup>20</sup> verbs, (Prov. xxv. 21, 22.) "<sup>1</sup>Therefore if thine

<sup>1</sup> The practical inference to be derived from this passage quoted from the book of Proverbs, as from the preceding one taken from the book of Deuteronomy, is evidently this; namely, that we avenge not our own wrongs, but leave our cause in the hands of God, who, we may be assured, will finally execute justice in wisdom and holiness upon the whole human race. Such conduct is clearly perfectly compatible with the most complete Christian forbearance, as it seeks nothing more than that divine arbitration between ourselves and our adversaries which will undoubtedly be administered in perfect righteousness and mercy. From the whole tenor of the apostle's reasoning it is impossible for us to suppose that he recommends the display of acts of kindness to our bitterest enemies *for the purpose of aggravating* the final judgment against them; yet such has been the invidious interpretation given to this passage by the cavillers at revelation. May not the expression of "heaping coals of fire on the head of an individual" after all be nothing more than a strong oriental metaphor, intended to describe *the burning glow of shame and compunction* which the re-



enemy hunger, feed him ; if he thirst, give him drink ; for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire  
21 on his head." Be not overcome by evil to do in like manner, but rather let the goodness of your conduct subdue evil in others, till they follow your  
13 better example. Let every person whatsoever submit with due obedience to the authorities of the state ; for there is no authority but of God : and all  
2 existing authorities are as God's ministers. Who- soever therefore resists the power of the magistrate, resists the ordinance of God : and they who resist shall draw upon themselves the just penalty of their  
3 disobedience. For magistrates are not a terror to good works, but to evil : would you then stand in no fear of those in authority ? do your duty as a good citizen, and you shall receive commendation  
4 from them. For a ruler is God's deputy, for the improvement and regulation of public morals : if therefore you do evil, expect the chastisement of the law : for he bears not the sword of authority in vain : for he is, I repeat, God's deputy to execute  
5 vengeance upon the evil doer. Wherefore it is necessary for you to submit, not merely from a fear of punishment, but from the higher principle of  
6 duty and conscience. For the same reason also pay your taxes and contributions as required by your rulers, for they are God's ministers, holding their authority from him on this occasion also.  
7 Render therefore to all men their due : taxes to whom taxes are due, customs to whom customs,

payment of injuries with kindness must necessarily excite in every person not quite callous to generous and honourable feeling ?

fear to whom fear, respect to whom respect. Owe 8  
no man any thing but the debt of mutual and brotherly love, for all the prohibitions of the moral law are after all nothing more than injunctions to enforce this single duty. It is for this reason there- 9  
fore, because we are bound to do good and not evil to our neighbours, that we are forbidden to commit adultery, to kill, to steal, to bear false witness, to covet the possessions of another. In fact, the whole of our social duties of whatsoever description may be shortly summed up as enforced by the plain rule, "*to love our neighbour as ourself*;" for love 10  
necessarily abstains from working any injury to our neighbour, and consequently observes all the above-mentioned, and such like, precepts by which all injury to another is expressly forbidden.

These things do, my brethren, and earnestly; 11  
for the time is come when it behoves us to rouse ourselves effectually from our sleep: the hour of our salvation approaches, and is already much nearer, than when our consciences were first awakened by the word of revelation: the night is 12  
far spent, and the day is at hand: let us therefore put away the works of darkness, and put on the armour of the light: and, recollecting that it is 13  
the day, let us henceforward walk decently as in the day; not in riotings and drunkenness, not in fornication and lasciviousness, not in quarrels and envying; but put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, 14  
and study not to pamper the corrupt appetites of the flesh.

With regard to such brethren as may be per-14  
plexed by conscientious scruples on the subject of trifling and unimportant observances, my advice

is, 'receive them kindly, without distressing them by  
2 nice disputations on matters of indifference.' One  
man, for instance, believes all kinds of food to be  
lawful: another more scrupulous confines himself  
3 to a vegetable diet. Let not the former ridicule  
the conscientious abstinence of the latter, nor the  
latter censure as impious the satisfied conviction  
of the former. For God accepts the upright in-  
4 tentions of them both. Who art thou, let me ask,  
who presumest to pronounce an opinion upon the  
servant of another? let him render his account to  
his own master, by whose judgment he shall stand  
or fall; and stand he will, for God has power to  
acquit him.

5 Again, one man makes distinctions between days,  
as though one day were more holy than another,  
whilst some consider all days alike. My advice is,  
let every man act according to the deliberate con-  
6 viction of his own conscience, and in so doing,  
he who sanctifies certain days, sanctifies them to  
God; and he who makes no distinction of days,  
provided he do so upon principle, pleases God  
equally. He who is unscrupulous about meats,  
eats them to the Lord, and is thankful for the  
indulgence; whilst he who abstains from them  
through scruples of conscience, sanctifies his absti-  
7 nence to the Lord, and gives thanks also. For  
none of us either live or die for ourselves, and for  
8 our own pleasure, but if we live, we live to give  
glory to God, and if we die, we die to give glory to  
God, so that, whether we live or we die, we are  
9 God's property. For Christ died, and rose again,  
and was received back into life, that he might  
make both the dead and the living his own peculiar

possession. By what right then do you, does any 10 man, judge a brother? by what authority despise a brother? for all of us, high and low, shall stand alike before the judgment seat of Christ: as it is written 11 by the prophet Isaiah, (Isaiah xlv. 23.) "As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God." Are we then 12 all of us to give account of ourselves to God? if so, 13 let us not judge one another: but let our judgment be this, that we place not stumbling blocks in the way of our brother's conscience. It is true that I 14 individually am convinced, from what I conceive of the spiritual character of the Christian dispensation, that there is no meat which is any longer forbidden to Christians or unclean in itself: but what of that? to him who considers it forbidden it *is* forbidden. If then you wantonly shock your brother's scruples 15 for so trifling a consideration as this or that kind of food, you are in so doing guilty of a serious breach of brotherly love. Tempt not then thus unnecessarily the conscience of one for whom Christ himself submitted to die. Let not the integrity of 16 your own conviction on these points be a means of annoyance of others<sup>1</sup>. For the kingdom of God is 17

<sup>1</sup> The question respecting the lawfulness of meats, which may appear trifling to us in the present day, who have been brought up in the full possession of Christian liberty, must naturally have been one of considerable moment to persons recently converted from Judaism, and whose earliest religious impressions must have suggested to them a degree of scrupulosity on this subject which it would require no common strength of mind effectually to subdue in after life. The force of this prejudice at that period is evident from the sanction which the first council of Jeru-

not this or that meat, this or that drink ; but it is holiness, and peace, and joy, in the Holy Spirit.  
18 In these things whosoever serves Christ is acceptable to God, and should be approved by men.  
19 Why not then follow the works of peace, and such things as may serve for the edification of one another? Let not the purity of that divine holiness, which ought to exist among you, be sacrificed for mere questions about meats. All things it is true are clean, and permitted to those who have no scruples on the subject ; but they are no less sinful to him who sacrifices his conscience for the sake of  
21 conformity with others. Wherefore neither eat any particular meat, nor drink wine nor any other liquor, where by so doing you may lead a brother to sin against his own conviction, or may wound his  
22 feelings. Is your own conscience at ease on these points? Be it so : act according to it, as you shall give account of yourself to God ; and happy that

salem thought it expedient to afford to these scruples, as recorded in the fifteenth chapter of the Acts of the Apostles. To ourselves the discussion has indeed lost its interest, but the beautiful and truly Christian spirit of the Apostle's exhortation on this subject is applicable to all ages, and might afford a most salutary lesson to every denomination of believers in those little feuds and jealousies which are so apt to accompany slight and unimportant differences of religious opinion even amongst the sincerely well disposed. It is melancholy to reflect how many unworthy triumphs of fancied superiority, how much real pain and mortification to the sensitive and timid mind, how much domestic and social bitterness have been inflicted upon mankind during the last eighteen centuries, which might have been effectually spared had the *spirit* of this exhortation been duly and seriously attended to.

man whose breast thus acquits him. But he, on <sup>23</sup> the other hand, who makes scrupulous distinctions, and yet notwithstanding acts against them, is guilty of sin, because every wilful resistance to conscience is sin.

Let us then, who feel convinced of our Christian <sup>15</sup> liberty, be notwithstanding kind to the infirmities of others, sacrificing for the sake of edification and the <sup>2</sup> good of our neighbour, even those occasional indulgences of the innocence of which we may be sincerely confident. For Christ himself did not seek his <sup>3</sup> own gratification, as it is written in the sixty-ninth Psalm, "The reproaches of them that reproached thee fell on me." For all these things which have <sup>4</sup> been written of old in the Scriptures were written for our instruction, that we by patience and the comfort which they convey might have hope. May <sup>5</sup> then the God of patience and comfort give you mutual good will and forbearance one to another, according to the example of Jesus Christ: that you <sup>6</sup> may with one mind and one mouth glorify your God, and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. Wherefore receive one another kindly, as Christ <sup>7</sup> has received us, to the glory of God.

#### CONCLUDING ADDRESS.

And now, to return to the main argument and <sup>8</sup> object of this letter, the substance of what I would urge is this: "that Jesus Christ came to us in the first place as the minister to those of the Jewish covenant, to prove to them the veracity and faith of God, and to carry into effect the divine promises made to our forefathers: and, secondly, he <sup>9</sup> came, in order that the Gentiles also might praise

and glorify God, being justified through the same covenant of mercy. As it is written in the eighteenth Psalm, "For this cause I will confess thee  
10 among the Gentiles, and sing unto thy name." As Moses also testified to the like effect, (Deut. xxxii.  
11 43.) "Rejoice ye Gentiles with his people." And again as we read in the hundred and seventeenth Psalm, "Praise the Lord all ye Gentiles, and laud  
12 him all ye people." And again also as Isaiah has written, (Isaiah xi. 10.) "There shall be a root of Jesse, and he shall rise to reign over the Gentiles; in him shall the Gentiles rest their hope."

13 And now therefore may the God of that hope fill you with all joy and peace of mind in your belief, that you may overflow with hope, in the power  
14 of the Holy Spirit. For my own part, brethren, I am convinced from what I have known of you, that you are filled with goodness, and abundance of knowledge for your mutual instruction and edifi-  
15 cation. Still I have thought it my duty without reserve to put into writing a few suggestions for the purpose of refreshing your recollection on these points, as by my commission as an apostle I am  
16 entitled to do: being deputed to be the minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, a priest of the new covenant of the Gospel, in order that I may present them to him, as an acceptable offering, purified  
17 by the Holy Spirit. Holding this commission, I can look back upon the spiritual labours which I have myself already achieved, with a holy satisfaction as a faithful servant of God through Jesus  
18 Christ, (for I do not presume to claim any part in that rapid diffusion of the Gospel among the Gentiles in profession and practice which Christ has

elsewhere accomplished without any exertion of mine,) having had my administration assisted by 19 signs and miracles, operated by the power of the Holy Spirit; so that from Jerusalem, and round about unto Illyricum, I have successfully preached the Gospel of Christ. Nay, I rather made it my 20 ambition to proclaim the Gospel in regions where Christ was yet unknown, that I might not be erecting my own labour upon another man's foundation. As it is written in Isaiah, (Isaiah lii. 15.) "They 21 shall see him, who have never been told of him, and they who have never heard of him shall understand him."

It was in consequence of these necessary occupa- 22 tions that I have been so long, and so frequently, prevented from coming to you as I had proposed: but now, having no longer any field open for exer- 23 tion in these parts, and having been anxious for many years past to come to you, whenever I can 24 take my journey into Spain, I will contrive to see you: for I hope that I shall be able to pay you a visit on my way, and to have your company during part of my journey onwards from Rome, after I shall have indulged myself a short time in your society at that place. At present I am called 25 away to Jerusalem to arrange some matters for the believers there; for the Christians of Macedon and 26 Achaia have thought proper to make a collection of money for the relief of the poor members of the Church at Jerusalem; and in so doing, have only 27 discharged a just debt; since, having derived from the Church at Jerusalem so many spiritual blessings, it is their duty to repay the obligation to the best of their power, by the relief of their temporal wants.



28 So soon therefore as I shall have performed this,  
and completed the necessary arrangements, I pur-  
29 pose to pass through Rome into Spain; fully con-  
fident that I shall find you in the full possession of  
30 the blessing of the Gospel of Christ. Meanwhile I  
beseech you, brethren, in the name of our Lord  
Jesus Christ, and the love of the Spirit, to pray ear-  
31 nestly to God for me in your religious assemblies,  
that I may be preserved from the violence of the  
unbelievers in Judea, and that my ministry may  
32 be acceptable to the Church at Jerusalem; that,  
having accomplished that object, I may, with God's  
blessing, come to you, and repose myself a short  
33 time among you. The God of peace be with you  
all. Amen.

16 I recommend our sister Phœbe, who is a servant  
2 of the Church at Cenchrea, to your kindness: that  
you may receive her in the Lord as becomes the  
disciples of Christ, and assist her on any occasion  
in which she may have need of your good offices;  
for she has shown kindness to many of our friends,  
3 as well as to myself. Salute in my name Priscilla,  
and her husband Aquila<sup>1</sup>, who have been my fellow  
4 labourers at Corinth; and who, as I and all the

<sup>1</sup> The intercourse which subsisted at Corinth between Paul and his friends Aquila and Priscilla is mentioned in the eighteenth chapter of the Acts of the Apostles. It is there stated that Aquila was a native of Pontus, and had been recently expelled from Rome, together with the other Jews, in consequence of the offence taken against that people by the emperor Claudius, an allusion to which we find recorded in Suetonius's life of that prince. The names of Aquila and Priscilla however clearly mark their Italian origin, and accordingly we cannot be surprised to find them returned to

Gentile Churches remember with gratitude, saved my life in that city at the risk of their own. Salute 5 the society of believers also, who reside with them. Salute my dear friend Epænetus, my first convert to Christ when I preached in Achaia. Salute Mary, 6 who has laboured much in my behalf. Salute my 7 relations and fellow prisoners Andronicus and Junia, who are much esteemed among the Apostles, and whose conversion to Christianity preceded my own. Salute Amplias, my friend in the Lord. Salute our 8 9 fellow labourer in Christ, Urbanus, and my friend Stachys. Salute Apelles, that tried servant of 10 Christ. Salute the household of Aristobulus. Salute my relation Herodion: salute such of the 11 household of Narcissus as are converted to our faith. Salute Tryphæna and Tryphosa, who labour 12 in the Lord. Salute my friend Persis, who has also laboured much in the Lord. Salute Rufus, a 13 chosen servant of the Lord, and his mother, whom I also look upon as my own. Salute Asyncritus, 14 Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren who are with them. Salute Philologus, 15 and Julia, Nereus and his sister, and Olympas, and all the Christian brethren with them. Salute one 16 another with an holy kiss. The Churches of Christ salute you.

I entreat you, brethren, be on your guard against, 17 and avoid, all those who cause schisms amongst you, and lay stumbling-blocks in your way: for 18 they are not, as they pretend, serving the cause

Rome at the date of this Epistle, which is generally supposed to have been not earlier than A.D. 57, about the third year of the reign of Nero.

of our Lord Jesus Christ, but of their own selfish appetites; and by their fair and plausible speeches  
19 mislead the minds of the unsuspecting. For your obedience to the Gospel is every where spoken of; and I sincerely rejoice that it is so; but I am at the same time anxious that your faith may be pure, and without the taint of heresy or  
20 false doctrine. And be assured that the God of peace will enable you shortly to trample Satan under your feet. Amen.

21 Timotheus my fellow labourer, and Lucius, and Jason, and Sosipater, my relations, salute you.

22 I Tertius, who wrote out this letter at the apostle's dictation, salute you in the Lord.

23 Caius, whose hospitality I, with the whole Church, have experienced, salutes you. Erastus the steward of the city, and our brother Quartus, salute you.

24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

25 Now to him who is able to strengthen and confirm you in that Gospel which I have preached in the name of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of that mystery which God has kept secret  
26 from the past ages, but has now proclaimed, that through the means of the prophetic writings, and according to his divine purpose, it might be made known to all the nations of the globe, and thus  
27 bring them to the obedience of faith—to him the only wise God be glory for ever and ever, through Jesus Christ. Amen.

---

THE Epistle to the Romans has been generally considered as the most profoundly argumentative of all the

writings of St. Paul. Its subject not being one of merely local and momentary importance, but having reference to the moral dealings of Providence with the whole human race, it naturally involves the discussion of topics which, so long as the present world exists, must afford to our minds the almost irresistible excitement of intense interest, at the same time that they are confessedly too mysterious for human solution. Accordingly it is from this storehouse of theological metaphysics that the impatient curiosity of mankind, ever too prone to convert into a mere play for the intellect what is intended for the holier purpose of spiritual edification, has selected more matter for irreconcilable controversy, than from any other portion of the sacred writings. It is evident however that nothing could be more remote from the intentions of the inspired writer, than to afford materials for the display of this captious spirit. Although engaged by the transcendental nature of his subject in a chain of argument which could not avoid touching occasionally upon these much debated, and to us incomprehensible, points, we cannot but remark, that they are never obtruded by him unnecessarily upon the attention, nor allowed for a moment to interfere with, or derogate from, that tone of fervent and exalted piety, and those lessons of the purest practical morality, which it was his great aim to inculcate. "To vindicate the ways of God to man," is the primary proposition which forms the groundwork of his argument; and the superstructure which he has erected upon that immoveable foundation is the gratifying doctrine of the duty of the most unhesitating reliance on the infinite mercy and justice of a gracious Creator, and a demonstration of the great Gospel truth, that without practical holiness no man shall see God. When we recollect how much perverse ingenuity has been applied, for the purpose of rendering this beautiful summary of Christian ethics subservient to the morbid excitement of a controversy as unprofitable as it is interminable and mysterious, it will not perhaps be without its use, in our concluding remarks upon this Epistle, to recapitulate some of the more pro-

minent propositions contained in it, which, as constituting the main links of his argument, we cannot doubt it to have been the Apostle's intention expressly to inculcate. The following conclusions are therefore here adduced, as being at all events too broadly and explicitly stated by St. Paul, in the course of his argument, to allow us to hesitate in receiving them as bearing the sanction of his high authority. With regard to any other more abstruse inferences which the theological speculatist may be inclined to imagine that he can *also* discover in the positions laid down by the Apostle, we would only wish to observe, that, since Scripture cannot be really at variance with itself, they must, if true, be at least such as are consistent with those doctrines of holy writ, which are too clear and palpable to be made matter for controversy.

1. That all men are sinners in the sight of God, and can only attain to salvation by the aid of a dispensation of imputed righteousness, and not of personal merit.

2. That the criminality of mankind is the consequence of their disobedience to an acknowledged law of righteousness, either natural or revealed.

3. That the spiritual condemnation of the heathen world is the result of their violation of the sanctions of natural religion.

4. That the guilt of the Jews was the effect of their transgressions against the enactments of the Mosaic law.

5. That in our present fallen and degraded condition, which is the consequence of the sin of our first parents, the suggestions and desires of our carnal nature are in a constant state of warfare with our purest spiritual aspirations, and our better knowledge.

6. That, as it was the express object of our Saviour's mission to obliterate the effects of Adam's transgression, and to reconcile us to God by a satisfactory expiation for sin, it is obviously the duty of every Christian, to emancipate himself by every means in his power from the dominion of his carnal and impure appetites, invoking for that purpose the strengthening aid of the Holy Spirit, and

trusting to the imputed righteousness of Christ for his final justification.

7. That God's election of the Jewish nation was of a temporal character only : the spiritual and real election being confined exclusively to such individuals as should subsequently have approved themselves to him by their piety and obedience.

8. That the national election of the Jews, having been an act of gratuitous favour, and designed for a specific object, without reference to any claim of merit on their part, might be, and was, justly withdrawn when the arrangements of Providence so required it.

9. That the admission of the Gentiles into the Gospel covenant implied no loss of spiritual privileges to the believing Jews, but merely the impartial diffusion of God's favour to all nations without distinction, whether Jew or Gentile.

10. That, as the whole of the Israelitish nation was not in reality God's Israel, but the obedient only deserved that appellation : so in the Christian world it is not every one bearing the denomination of Christian, but the pure in heart, and the perseveringly righteous only, who can hope to attain to the blessings resulting from Christ's atonement.

11. That a life of unblemished holiness, of perfect obedience, and of implicit reliance upon God's faithfulness, is in strictness the bounden duty, and, so far as human frailty permits, will be actually required of every person whatever looking for salvation through the merits of our Redeemer.

Such are the principles *undoubtedly* inculcated in this beautiful Epistle. Whether or not they are compatible with what is usually termed the Calvinistic theory may be matter of opinion, according to the peculiar views and impressions of individuals. Certain it is, that no religious scheme can be pronounced to be that of St. Paul, which is irreconcilable with the admission of the foregoing propositions.

THE  
FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL  
TO THE  
CORINTHIANS.

---

THE history of St. Paul's residence at Corinth is related in the eighteenth chapter of the Acts of the Apostles. After having remained in that city for the space of eighteen months, during which period he succeeded in making many converts to Christianity, he proceeded to Ephesus, from which place he addressed to his infant Church the following Epistle, which is generally supposed to have been written by him about the time of Easter, in the year of our Lord 57.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

1 PAUL, called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ by  
2 the will of God, and Sosthenes our brother, to the  
Church of God which is in Corinth, to the sancti-  
fied in Christ Jesus, the brethren called to be his  
saints, and to all others who invoke the name of  
their and our common Lord Jesus Christ, in whatever  
3 part of the earth—grace and peace be unto you from  
God our Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.

SECTION I.

The following Epistle divides itself under two heads, the first of which consists of an earnest expostulation addressed by the Apostle to his Corinthian converts on the subject of several grievous abuses recently introduced into that Church, and of which he had received

private intimation : whilst the latter conveys his authoritative replies to various interrogatories respecting religion and discipline, which we learn from the context to have been addressed to him by the whole body of that community, for the satisfaction of certain conscientious scruples, and the regulation of their public worship. The picture which this Epistle affords us of the spiritual condition of that infant Christian society is far from gratifying ; and in the mild and affectionate remonstrances of the writer it is impossible not to observe the marks of the wounded and generous spirit of one deeply conscious of the unmerited neglect which he had experienced from persons, to the promotion of whose eternal welfare he had so zealously devoted himself, yet willing, so far as an imperious duty would allow, to spare them the pain of reproaches too evidently deserved. The humble and unassuming tone in which he alludes to his own important services ; the total absence of rivalry or jealous feeling with which he speaks of his coadjutors in the ministry, with the tempered yet severe energy of his remonstrances on the subject of their party feuds, their relaxed morality, and the indecorum of their religious meetings, afford a beautiful specimen of what a Christian teacher might and should be in all ages of the Church. We here see one anxiously scrupulous in the performance of his own duties, yet rejoicing in the successful labours of others in the same holy cause no less than in his own, and for both giving glory and thanks to God : one stern and inflexible in the great questions of sound belief and of practical holiness, yet manifesting even in the midst of his severity towards offenders, an eager anxiety to hope and believe the best ; and ever more desirous to lead them back to the path of duty, by kindling afresh their holy and generous feelings, than to compel them to it by harshness of inculcation, and severity of punishment. So happily has he exemplified in his own person his own beautiful precept, expressed in another Epistle, " Be ye angry, and sin not."

I thank my God continually for you, on account 4  
of the divine grace which has been given to you in  
Christ Jesus, that you have been enriched by him 5  
with all those spiritual gifts, both of language and  
of wisdom, which are Christ's own testimony to the 6  
soundness of your faith : so that you are deficient 7  
in none of the fruits of grace, waiting with patience  
for the final revelation and second coming of our  
Lord Jesus Christ, who shall strengthen and sup- 8



port you unto the end, that you may stand before him a blameless community in the great day of our Lord Jesus Christ. Meanwhile be assured, that that God by whom you were called to a participation in the redemption of his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, will not recede from his covenant which he has made with you.

10 And now I most earnestly exhort you, my brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that you would be of one mind, agreeing in the unity of one common faith, and using one common profession of your belief, without the admixture of party distinctions and divisions. For I have received a communication respecting you, my brethren, from some of the household of Chloe, that there are schisms and disagreements amongst you: for instance, one man, as I am told, will say, "I am a disciple of Paul," another, "I am of Apollos," a third, "I am of Peter," a fourth, "I am of Christ himself." What then, are there as many different Christs as there are converts? Did Paul ever profess himself to be more than the mere servant of our common Saviour? was *he* ever crucified as an expiation for your sins? or were you ever baptized to *his* name, as you were to that of Christ? I thank God, if such party distinctions and jealousies are to be the consequence of my coming to preach amongst you, that I have uniformly abstained from baptizing any of you with my own hands, (except indeed Crispus and Caius,) lest I should appear to be a partner in your folly, and to be attempting to establish a peculiar Gospel and sect of my own. I did indeed also, as I now recollect, baptize the house-

hold of Stephanus, but besides these I am not aware that I have baptized any others.

For the commission which I received from Christ 17 was not to baptize converts, but to preach the Gospel to the unconverted: and that, not with captious eloquence or the words of human wisdom, but in homeliness and simplicity, in order that the great truth of Christ's atonement might be shown not to require the aid of ingenuity and eloquence for its support: for to the lost and carnally minded 18 the doctrine of the cross is indeed foolishness, but, to us who look for salvation through it, it is the manifestation of the glorious power of God. As it 19 is written, (Isaiah xxix. 14.) "I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the knowledge of the intelligent." Let then the Greek 20 philosopher, let the scribe learned in the Jewish law, let the ingenious expounder of this world's wisdom, come forward, and produce their strong arguments:—I would ask them, "Has not God, by the sublime revelation of Christ crucified, shown their boasted wisdom to be but folly?" For when 21 the world, though gifted by God their Creator with moral perceptions to know right from wrong, and with the great book of God's creation laid open before them<sup>1</sup>, yet failed notwithstanding to form due apprehensions of his sublime and pure nature, it pleased God, by the unattractive and humiliating dispensation of a gratuitous amnesty for sin through an humble reliance in Christ's expiatory merits, to save those who turn to him with faith and submis-

<sup>1</sup> See Romans i. 20.

22 sion. The Jews indeed demand of us such divine proofs of our mission as were accorded to Moses from mount Sinai in thunders and earthquakes, and the Greeks require of us to bend our doctrine to make it accord with their own disputatious and captious philosophy: but not such is the unostentatious revelation which we are deputed to communicate to mankind. We preach a suffering and crucified Messiah—to the carnal pride of the Jews a stumbling-block: we preach the single-minded doctrine of humility, and poorness of spirit—to the self-complacent wisdom of the Greeks foolishness: 24 but to all who are called from the wranglings of carnal knowledge to the adoption of the righteousness which is from heaven, be they Jews, or be they Greeks, we preach Christ, and Christ only; Christ, in whom are manifested the immensity of the power, and the fulness of the unfathomable 25 wisdom, of God. For those very dispensations of God which to our imperfect apprehensions may appear foolish, are far beyond the wisdom of men to find out; and the humblest instruments which he may use, far exceed the utmost power of man to 26 equal. Look, for instance, brethren, amongst your own numbers; you can reckon amongst the converts as yet made to our faith very few of those whom the world calls men of learning<sup>1</sup>, very few

<sup>1</sup> Such was the reception given to Christianity by the authorities of this world from the first moment of its promulgation. "Never man spake like this man," was the exculpatory statement of the officers who had been sent by the pharisees to arrest our blessed Saviour's person, but who returned, without having executed their commission, in perfect astonishment at the cogency of his doctrine.

persons in authority; very few of noble birth; but 27 God, by thus accepting the low and ignorant in preference to the wealthy and the wise, has shown how this world's folly may put to shame its wisdom, and how this world's weakness may confound and put to shame its strength; and how the low, 28 and despised, and overlooked in this world may, by the divine favour, bring to nought the exalted in rank, and the pre-eminent in authority. In order 29 that no human being whatever might have any thing of his own, of which to make his boast in the presence of God. Even you yourselves, brethren, 30 owe to his mercy the spiritual advantages which you now derive from your faith in Christ, who has been made to us the manifestation of God's wisdom, and a means of righteousness, and holiness, and redemption. So true is the exclamation of the 31 prophet, (Jeremiah ix. 23.) "He that boasteth, let him boast in the Lord."

With this feeling, my brethren, of the unworldly 2 character of the Christian dispensation, I came first to preach among you the testimony of God, without

"Are ye also deceived? have any of the *rulers* or the *pharisees* believed on him?" was the reply. Of all the miracles worked by Providence for the establishment of the Gospel, none perhaps is more truly wonderful than the final triumph of that unworldly, unassuming, yet resistless principle, silently working its way against the leagued confederacy of wealth and temporal power, until it subjugated the throne of the Cæsars itself. "The kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers took counsel together against the Lord and against his Christ. Let us break their bonds asunder, and cast away their cords from us.—He that dwelleth in heaven shall laugh them to scorn."

attempting to recommend myself or my doctrine by  
2 any effort at human wisdom or eloquence: and accordingly I taught, and confined myself to one single topic only, namely, "Christ, and him crucified."  
3 And this I did (knowing how unattractive such a doctrine must be to carnal hearers) with weakness, and  
4 fear, and diffidence; but though my arguments and language possessed none of the attractive charms of learning and eloquence, God gave them weight by the spiritual gifts and the miraculous powers with  
5 which he allowed them to be accompanied, in order that your faith might not be built upon the mere foundation of man's wisdom, but upon the mani-  
6 festation of the power of God. Yet notwithstanding, weak as my arguments may appear to the unconverted, they are wise<sup>1</sup> to the apprehension of

<sup>1</sup> The self-denying character of the Christian dispensation is quite sufficient to account for the distaste with which it has ever been received by the worldly-minded, without our being necessarily obliged to infer that there is any thing in its doctrines at all revolting to the conclusions of our moral sense or of impartial reason. The substitution of universal charity in the place of self-love; of an implicit submission of the understanding to such portions of the divine arrangements as are obviously beyond our reach, in the room of a prying and dogmatical philosophy; and the total denial of any merit in our seemingly best actions, as affording a claim to a future recompense, must obviously have presented in all ages a formidable barrier against the admission of such a belief, to beings whose opinions on moral subjects are confessedly more frequently arrived at through the medium of their passions than of their intellectual powers. Admitting therefore in its fullest extent the perfect impossibility of unassisted human ignorance ever arriving at the remotest conception of the mysterious

the believer, however ill-adapted to the wisdom of this world, and its perishable distinctions. For the wisdom which I preach is the mystery of divine wisdom, which, though prepared among the dis-

Christian scheme, and the almost insuperable impediment which human prejudice must have opposed to its first reception, still it by no means follows as a necessary consequence that our moral and intellectual perceptions must under all circumstances remain incapable of perceiving its entire consistency with itself, and its nice adaptation to the peculiar constitution of our nature. To find our own way through a maze of difficulty is one thing; to apprehend the explanation of it when supplied by an understanding superior to our own is another. This distinction may be worth the consideration of those persons, who, in their zeal to advocate the cause of revelation at the expense of human reason, are disposed to depreciate the evidence arising from the apparent internal probability of the Christian dispensation as unsound. No person indeed who is at all aware of the very contracted area of human knowledge would presume much upon that faculty in the discussion of religious topics: but it surely is not to derogate from the dignity of revelation when we assert, that an humble and pious mind may be enabled to trace in it enough of internal probability, from what we can venture to surmise of God's attributes, to afford, independently of any external proof, a strong foundation for belief in its divine origin. Such at least seems to be the admission of the apostle in the passage before us. It is true that he asserts at the same time, that such a faculty of apprehension can descend to us from no other source than that which is the fountain of all true wisdom, the illumination of the Holy Spirit; but that very assertion declares the reality of the faculty so communicated. To argue otherwise were in fact to deprive that sublime dispensation of its hold upon our moral approbation, and to trench upon that satisfied conviction with which so many sincere Christians, who may be unequal

pensations of God's providence before the beginning of time for the redemption of mankind, he has only within our own age allowed to be openly promulgated; a mystery which none of the authorities of this world have duly apprehended, otherwise they would not have crucified the Lord of glory. But, as it is truly written by the prophet, (Isaiah lxiv. 4.) "Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God has prepared for them who love him." But God has graciously revealed them to us by his Spirit; that eternal Spirit which searches and sees all things, the mysterious and most secret dispensations of God himself not excepted. For as the spirit of man alone can detect the inmost workings of that individual human breast in which it is stationed, so the Spirit of God alone can penetrate and apprehend all the secret resolves and purposes of God's government. Now we have received, not the fallible spirit of this world, but the direct communications of that all-seeing divine Spirit, so that to us is given to know the operations of God's mercy, as extended to us and to mankind. And it is those divine communications which we now preach to the world, not in the artificial language of human wisdom, but as they are suggested to us by the Holy Spirit itself, expounding spiritual things in spiritual language. But the mere natural man apprehends not the revelations made by the Spirit of God, so as to be able to form a right judgment respecting them; for

to pursuing all the details of external evidence, repose upon it as a full vindication of the otherwise inexplicable arrangements of Providence.

to him they are foolishness, because he judges of them carnally and not spiritually. He, on the contrary, who is illuminated by the gifts of the divine Spirit loses none of the natural knowledge which he previously possessed, but has a due perception of the things both of the spiritual and carnal world;—but the carnal world, on the other hand, judges not him; “for what man,” as says the prophet Isaiah, (xl. 13.) “hath directed the Spirit of the Lord, or hath taught him?” But to us the mysterious dispensations of Christ have been communicated.

As yet, however, my brethren, I have not been able to speak to you according to the full communication of God’s Spirit which I have received, your judgments not yet being sufficiently matured to apprehend these mysterious subjects. I have therefore thus far addressed you as still in your carnal nature, still children in Christian knowledge: I have fed you from the first with milk, not with substantial food; for you were not then, nor are you yet, able to digest the harder mysteries of the doctrine of revelation. You are still, I repeat, in your carnal nature; for whilst envy, and strife, and party divisions prevail among you, may I not truly affirm that you are yet unregenerated, and walk according to the infirmities of the flesh? And walk you not indeed according to the flesh, so long as one exclaims, “I am a disciple of Paul,” another, “I am a disciple of Apollos?” And who, let me ask, is Paul, and who Apollos, but mere mortals, the humble ministers of Christ, who were the means of your conversion solely because the Lord gave them ability to be so? I perhaps first planted the good seed, Apollos came after me and watered, but



7 it was God who in his mercy gave the increase; so that the first planter is nothing, and the waterer is nothing; but the glory of the increase is God's only.

8 As to which of us planted, or which watered, is a matter of no importance, for we are but fellow-labourers in the same vineyard; and shall receive our pay from our common Master according to our

9 respective services: ours indeed is the labour of the tillage, but the produce of the soil is the property of God. You, my brethren, are a building

10 erected to God's glory. According to the best abilities which God's grace has given to me, I, like a skilful architect, laid the first foundation; Apollos, or whoever came after me, laid upon that the superstructure; but, whoever is the workman, let every man recollect, that he labours not for his own benefit, but that he is responsible to God

11 for the goodness of his work. One foundation, and one only, are we allowed to build upon, that, namely, which was the sole and single purport of my first communications to you:—JESUS CHRIST.

12 On that foundation it is our common duty, as servants of the same Master, to build according to the means entrusted to us; and accordingly one man may build upon it gold, another silver, another marble, another timber, another thatch,

13 another reeds: and, such as each man's work is, such shall it be proved to be, when the fearful day of trial comes, when the fire of persecution and temptation shall take possession of the building, and search out each separate part, whether it was

14 well and substantially laid or not. If any man's work shall stand uninjured through that trial, he will receive the glorious reward of one who has

converted others to righteousness: if it fail in the <sup>15</sup> trial and be consumed, he indeed individually shall be acquitted, but as one who has lost his labour, and whose property the fire has demolished <sup>1</sup>.

I have said that you are God's building. So you <sup>16</sup> are; you are God's temple, and the inhabitant within you is God's Holy Spirit. If any man then, <sup>17</sup> instead of doing his utmost to adorn and improve that consecrated building, wilfully injures or pollutes it, that man will God destroy. For even the earthly temple of God is a holy place, and if so,

<sup>1</sup> Many a Christian teacher must have had cause, in the apostacy of his flock, to mourn over his lost labours, during those fearful days of persecution which witnessed the first establishment of Christianity. It is impossible to read Pliny's account of his own success, at a period somewhat later than the date of this epistle, in extorting from some of the early converts an abjuration of their belief, without some sinking of the heart for the weakness of human nature, and feeling grateful to Providence that our faith and resolution have not been exposed to the same formidable trial. "Interrogavi ipsos, an essent Christiani: confitentes iterum ac tertio interrogavi, supplicium minatus: perseverantes duci jussi.—Propositus est libellus sine auctore multorum nomina continens, qui negarent se esse Christianos, aut fuisse, quum, præeunte me, deos appellarent, et imagini tuæ (Trajani), quam propter hoc jusseram cum simulacris numinum afferri, thure ac vino supplicarent; præterea maledicerent Christo; quorum nil cogi posse dicuntur qui sunt revera Christiani. Ergo dimittendos putavi. Alii ab indice nominati esse se Christianos dixerunt, et mox negaverunt; fuisse quidem, sed desiisse, quidam ante triennium, quidam ante plures annos; non nemo etiam ante viginti quoque. Omnes et imaginem tuam, deorumque simulacra venerati sunt; ii et Christo maledixerunt." *Plinii Epistolæ*, lib. x. epist. 97.

you, who are God's spiritual temple, should be all  
18 of you individually holy. Let no man then deceive  
himself or you, by adulterating with carnal know-  
ledge the revelation which you have received; but  
if he comes among you, preaching the wisdom of  
this world as the Gospel of Christ, let him learn to  
submit his understanding to what men will call  
19 foolishness, and so shall he be truly wise. For as  
what appears foolish to our carnal nature is wisdom  
in the sight of God, so what men may term wisdom  
is mere foolishness in his eyes. As it is written in  
the book of Job, (Job v. 13.) "He taketh the wise  
20 in their own craftiness." And again in the ninety-  
fourth Psalm, "The Lord knoweth the thoughts of  
21 the wise that they are vain." Wherefore, I again  
repeat, let no one among you boast that he is the  
disciple and convert of this or that particular teacher,  
for after all, what are we all but common labourers  
22 for your benefit? Let then your instructor be  
Paul, if it should so happen; let him be Apollos;  
let him be Peter; let our task throw us into col-  
lision with the authorities of this world; let our  
lot be life; let it be death; let us be struggling  
with the difficulties of our mortal condition; or  
looking forward to the hopes of eternity;—still our  
labours, be they what they may, are not for our  
23 own, but for your advantage:—you are Christ's:  
4 and Christ is God's. Deem of us then your  
teachers, not as ambitious leaders of separate par-  
ties, but as the joint servants of Christ, and the  
stewards of the dispensation of God's mysteries,  
2 who are responsible for our trust, and shall, we  
hope, be found one day to have discharged it faith-  
3 fully. With regard to myself, therefore, it is a

matter of very little moment what judgment you or any human beings may pass upon my services: in fact, I do not pretend to know myself sufficiently to pronounce an opinion how far I may have executed my commission faithfully: it is true I am conscious of no wilful omissions of my duty, but I am far from asserting therefore that I stand acquitted in all points: it is God only who can pronounce of me how far I have been a profitable servant. Therefore, my brethren, without drawing invidious and premature comparisons between us, let us your several teachers continue for the present to do our work among you to the best of our power, waiting for that day when the Lord himself shall come to judge us all: who shall bring to light and make manifest to all of you what have been the secret workings of our breasts; and then, and not till then, shall each of us receive from God the just commendation which he deserves. In making these remarks, my brethren, I have only made mention of a few names, such as my own, and that of Apollos, but I would apply the sentiment which I wish to inculcate to all as an universal maxim: namely, that you seek not after ostentatious unscriptural wisdom, nor allow any presumed advantages of this nature to inflate you with vanity, or to entangle you in party distinctions, or undue preferences of one person to another. For admitting that you, or any man, surpass another in talents or spiritual gifts: after all, what have you, but what God has given you, and if *given* to you, why then pride yourself upon it as though it were your own acquisition? so far however from practising this Christian humility, you imagine, as I am informed, that you are already

full of all necessary knowledge, that you are rich in spiritual privileges; that you have attained to the fulness of Christian edification, and no longer stand, as formerly, in need of my instruction:— I wish indeed it were so, and that I had nothing now to do but to enjoy together with you in  
9 quiet our common edification. For the office of an apostle is indeed one of toil and hardship. God seems to have reserved us, whom he has entrusted with that awful commission, as a spectacle in some great theatre, in which the whole creation, angels and men, are the spectators, that we may exhibit before them, even to the latest  
10 mortal agony, the endless variety of our sufferings. *We* bear all the reproaches and contumely of the Christian doctrine which we preach: *you* hold yourselves high in imaginary wisdom:—*we* are weak; *you* are strong:—*we* are slighted; *you*  
11 are courted and respected: from the first hour of our apostleship to the present, we have had to sustain hunger and thirst, and nakedness, and violence, and destitution; yet whilst we incur these  
12 hardships on your account, we earn our own bread by our<sup>1</sup> own personal and bodily labour; repaying maledictions with blessings; meeting persecutions  
13 with patient submission: when misrepresented by mankind calmly appealing to their better feelings, and in all respects submitting, up to this very moment, for the sake of the Gospel, to be considered as  
14 the refuse, the off-scouring of the world. My brethren, I write not this for your reproach, but, looking upon you as my beloved children, I am anxious

<sup>1</sup> See Acts xviii. 5.

to set you right where I feel that you have been in error: you may for aught I know have ten thousand 15 teachers of the Gospel among you at present, but you cannot have many fathers. I, who first brought you to the knowledge of Christ, am your spiritual father, and as such I earnestly require of you, that 16 my admonitions and influence may have the weight with you which they deserve. And with this feel- 17 ing, accordingly, I have sent unto you Timothy, who is my beloved son, and faithful in the Lord, to remind you of the tenor of my first instructions in the ways of Christ, as I still preach them, singly and purely, in every Church which I visit. Some 18 persons there are among you, I am aware, who calculate upon my not coming to you in person, and presume upon it accordingly: but come I will, 19 with God's blessing, and when I am come, I will judge of each man, not according to the confidence of his language, but according to his spiritual acquirements; for the kingdom of God does not consist 20 in the show of words and of eloquence, but in the power resulting from the gifts of the Spirit. How 21 then, my brethren, shall I come, when I do come? must it be with the salutary rod of discipline; or with kindness in the spirit of meekness? One 5 abomination in particular which has been reported to me, I must speak of at present: not only that there is fornication among you, but such fornication as is not tolerated even among the heathen, that a man should be living impurely with his father's wife. And yet whilst these enormities are taking 2 place among you, you are boasting of your spiritual attainments, instead of mourning that such an event has occurred, and doing justice upon the of-

fender by excommunicating him from your society.  
3 Absent therefore as I am in person, yet present with you in spirit, as your authorized religious instructor, I feel it my duty to forward by this written communication the sentence which I should have pronounced against the offending party, were I now resident with you, upon the spot: and that  
4 sentence is, that, having solemnly convened an assembly of all the brethren in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, and acting under my authority which  
5 I have received from the Holy Spirit, "*you through the power granted to you by our Lord Jesus Christ, exclude from the Church and all its privileges the person who has committed this sin, for the punishment and affliction of his body in this world, in order that his spirit may be finally saved in the great day*  
6 *of the Lord Jesus.*" It is to little purpose, whilst such enormities remain uncensured among you, that you pride yourselves upon your advancement in religious knowledge: know ye not that a little leaven, one tolerated bad example, may leaven and  
7 corrupt the whole lump? Purge away then from your community all the old leaven of the sins which you have abjured, and become henceforward a new lump, pure and unleavened; recollecting that Christ our expiatory paschal lamb has been sacrificed for us; therefore let us on our part keep the  
8 feast, not with the old leaven of our former sins, nor with the leaven of malice and wickedness<sup>1</sup>, but

<sup>1</sup> It is observable, that through the whole of his writings, St. Paul never omits an opportunity of inculcating the necessity of a strictly moral life, as the legitimate inference derivable from the doctrine of Christ's atonement, and the

with the pure and unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.

With regard to my injunction not to keep<sup>9</sup> company with fornicators, I wish you however to<sup>10</sup> understand, that I do not mean that you are necessarily to absent yourselves from all societies in which heathens who may be fornicators, or covetous, or extortioners, or idolaters, may chance to be present: because, as the world is constituted, such contingencies, so long as you mingle with it, cannot always be avoided: but what I intend to enjoin is,<sup>11</sup> that if any converted brother, calling himself a

natural fruits of faith. The Christian dispensation is in fact, from first to last, nothing more than a stupendous display of the total irreconcilableness of sin with the purity of God's government, and of the means adopted by infinite wisdom for its expiation. "The doctrine of Christ's satisfaction," says Dr. Leland, "is so far from giving the least encouragement to sin, that it tendeth to impress men's hearts with the deepest sense of the heinous evil and malignity of sin, and of God's just displeasure against it. Not only do those who teach that doctrine, as delivered in the Scriptures, insist as strongly as any others upon the necessity of repentance and personal holiness, in order to their acceptance with God, but they maintain that, at the same time that God promiseth pardon to the truly penitent, he taketh care to dispense that pardon in such a way as to make an awful declaration of his hatred against sin, and to vindicate the authority of his government and laws. What can have a greater tendency to prevent our abusing his pardoning mercy, and to excite in us a holy fear of offending him, than to consider that he would not receive even penitent sinners to his grace and favour, without a sacrifice of infinite virtue offered up on their behalf, consisting in the perfect obedience and suffering of the great Mediator?"—*View of the Deistical Writers*, Letter 14.



Christian, be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a slanderer, or a drunkard, or an extortioner, have no communings with such a person, nor even  
12 sit down with him at the same table. For with regard to the heathen, we profess to hold no jurisdiction over them: our authority is over the mem-  
13 bers of our own Church: with regard to the former, leave them to the final judgment of God<sup>1</sup>; but keep your own society pure from all pollution.

6 One other point which needs correction among you ought now to be mentioned, and that is what

<sup>1</sup> From this admonition of the apostle we learn the important lesson, that a Christian is only so far justified in marking by his personal demeanour any strong disapprobation of the irregular lives of others, as by such conduct he may hope to promote edification, either by the correction and amendment of the offending party, or by deterring others from adopting a similar course. When neither of these objects is attainable, the rule here given is simple: "keep yourself pure from all contagion of sin, and leave such cases entirely to the final judgment of God." It may be urged indeed, that as society is now constituted, it is scarcely possible for a public breach of morals to take place, without its affording sufficient matter of scandal to make it a peremptory duty in every religious person to express openly his disapproval of it. And such perhaps may be the fact. But still the apostolical precept is not without its use, at least as a corrective to our own inward motives and feelings. We should never forget that the measure of the censure which we may venture to pronounce upon the vices of our neighbours should be that of the degree of benefit which may be derived by its means to the cause of religion and good morals. Without such a precautionary rule we could scarcely hope to avoid falling into the sin of spiritual pride, and the fatal mistake of trying our conduct, not by the perfect standard of abstract

I hear respecting your suits against one another before the heathen tribunals on points which might have been arranged by private Christian arbitration. Is it becoming, let me ask, to bring your private differences to be judged of by pagan authorities, instead of by the powers of the Church? Know you 2 not who has said that the saints shall judge the world? and if so, are you not competent to decide upon such trifling points as these? are we hereafter 3 to judge angels, and shall we deem the unimportant transactions of this life above our competency? If 4 then you have litigations of this nature to arrange, let your arbitrators be, not the rulers of your Church, for they have higher duties to perform, but the inferior brethren, who may still be fully adequate to these secondary duties. A shame and scandal it 5 were indeed to you, if you cannot among your whole number supply a few persons of competent understanding to arrange the trivial disputes of one Christian brother with another, but must come with 6 your wretched bickerings to ask the aid of heathen magistrates. But, let me ask, why do these dis- 7 putes exist at all? Is it not better at once to suffer wrong, and to submit to loss, than to right yourself by such methods? *Suffer* wrong do I say? Should I 8 not more correctly designate many of you, were I to assert of you, not that you suffer injustice from others, but that you *commit it yourselves*? that you usurp that which is not your own to take, and that, from your own brethren? Is this the conduct which

holiness, but by that of our own imaginary superiority over others, as suggested by the partial estimate of an overweening self-love.

9 befits your holy profession? Know you not that the *unjust* shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived:—*neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor those addicted to unnatural appetites,*  
10 *nor thieves, nor the covetous, nor drunkards, nor slanderers, nor extortioners,* SHALL INHERIT THE  
11 KINGDOM OF GOD. And such as I am now describing were some of you:—but you have cleansed yourselves in the waters of baptism: you have consecrated yourselves to a holy life, and you have been acquitted and justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Divine Spirit.

## SECTION II.

The apostle in the next place proceeds to reply to the several interrogatories respecting religion and morals which had been submitted to his decision by the public assembly of the Corinthian Church. His several answers, together with the spiritual admonitions connected with them, constitute the remaining portion of this Epistle. The following are the topics discussed.

1. On the diversity of meats: whether Christians are required to attend to the old distinctions of the Levitical law, as to the clean and unclean.
2. On fornication.
3. On marriage and divorce.
4. On the expediency or in expediency of circumcision.
5. On the comparative expediency of a single state, and of matrimony.
6. On the use of meats which had been sacrificed in the heathen temples.
7. On the decorum and reserve of the female character, and the in expediency of women taking a part in the public services of the Church.
8. On the decorous administration of the Lord's Supper.
9. On the gifts of the Holy Spirit; the diversity of their nature and character, and their comparative utility.
10. On the decorum to be observed in the celebration of divine worship, with regulations for the promotion of that object.
11. On the resurrection of the body.

## ON DIVERSITY OF MEATS.

With regard to your question respecting diversity 12 of meats, I simply answer, that "all are equally allowable as food; but that, at the same time, there may be reasons which render them not all equally expedient; all may be in themselves lawful, but we are not therefore to make ourselves the slaves of our appetites." You will say that God gave food 13 for the belly, and made the belly to require food: be it so, yet recollect also that he will shortly destroy both one and the other.

## ON FORNICATION.

On the subject of fornication, it is most certain that our bodies were given to us, not for purposes of impurity, but that we might consecrate them to the Lord, as our Lord has already consecrated them, by himself condescending to assume our human nature; and accordingly as God raised the body of our 14 Redeemer from the grave, so will he by his almighty power also raise ours at the last day. Remember 15 then that you are members of Christ himself, integral portions of his mystical body. And are then our bodies, which are already members of Christ, and look to be, as he has been, raised up incorruptible from the grave, to become the members also of an harlot? By no means. Know you not 16 that he who associates with an harlot, becomes one with her; according to what has been declared in holy writ respecting the intercourse of the sexes: "they two shall be one flesh?" But he who unites 17 himself with Christ, is one with Christ in spirit and

18 holiness. Fly then, I intreat you, from fornication: other sins are external to man's corporeal nature, and, however otherwise blameable, leave his own person at least uncontaminated; but fornication is a sin against, and a degradation of, a man's own  
19 self. Know you not also that your bodies are the temple of that Holy Spirit which dwells within you, and which God himself gave to you: and that they  
20 are not your own property, but God's, purchased for him by the blood of Christ? Glorify then God both in your bodies, and in your spirits, for both are alike God's property.

## ON MARRIAGE AND DIVORCE.

7 Your next question is as to the regulations which I would have you adopt respecting marriages, and the legality of divorce. My first answer to it is, that, where it is possible, a single state is in my  
2 opinion preferable: but as every one may not have the gift of continence, then for the sake of avoiding sin, I say, let any man who is so disposed have his  
3 own wife, and any woman her own husband; and so, let the husband associate affectionately with his  
4 wife, and the wife with her husband; with this understanding, that the wife is to submit to the wishes of the husband, and the husband to those of  
5 the wife. Accordingly, let not the one repel the other, excepting at such times when they may abstain from one another by mutual agreement, on peculiar occasion of prayer and fasting; after which let them return to one another as before, that neither of them may be tempted to sin by incontinency  
6 in any other quarter. In speaking thus, however, I wish to be considered rather as permitting mar-

riage, than as recommending it universally: since I 7 would rather see others living singly and chastely as I do, if possible; but our temperaments have been differently constituted by God, and what is practicable by one, is not always equally so by another. To the single, therefore, whether they 8 have continued unmarried from the first, or are in a state of widowhood, my private opinion is, that it is better for them to remain single, as I am myself; at the same time if they doubt their own powers of 9 continence, let them marry, for marriage is preferable to a state of painful restraint. But to the 10 married I say, or rather not I, but Christ, (for it is our Lord's own injunction,) "Let not the wife separate from her husband, or, at least, if she do 11 so, and does not return to him, let her abstain from marriage elsewhere: and according to the same rule, let not the husband put away his wife." This command we have from Christ himself. With 12 regard to that part of your question which you put to me on the subject of marriages between parties, of whom one is a Christian and the other a heathen, as our Lord has left no injunction on such a case, my own opinion is as follows. "In a case where the husband is Christian and the wife heathen, and she is willing to continue to live with her husband, let her do so; and by the same rule let them act, 13 where the husband is heathen and the wife Christian, and the husband is content to continue to live with his wife; that is to say, let such a marriage be in all respects binding<sup>1</sup>. For the blessing attending the 14

<sup>1</sup> St. Paul's decision on the subject of this difficulty, which occasionally arose in the early ages of the Church

belief of the one party sanctifies and extends to the matrimonial connexion with the other; as it does

from the intermarriage of Christian converts with pagans, or, which was more frequently the case, the conversion of one only of the parties to Christianity, where both the husband and wife had originally been pagans, is a beautiful specimen of the caution and good sense requisite for the adaptation of a previously existing rule to a new combination of circumstances not contemplated, or at least not fully explained, by the original enactor.

In our Saviour's sermon on the mount (Matt. v. 32) we find the permission of divorce expressly limited to the single case of adultery; obviously upon the equitable ground that, where one out of two contracting parties has wilfully broken through a reciprocal compact, the other unoffending person ought no longer to be bound by it to his own injury. When however Christianity began to find its way through heathen countries, a fresh perplexity arose from the occasional difference of religion between the husband and the wife. Our Saviour's rule allowing of no divorce excepting in the case of adultery only, a Christian married to a heathen was thus incidentally engaged in a tie which religious obligation rendered indissoluble to the person so circumstanced, whilst, on the other hand, the heathen married to a Christian possessed that liberty of divorce which the laws of the Roman empire allowed indiscriminately to all its subjects, without the intervention of any scruples of conscience to prevent his taking advantage of it. It is evident therefore that here was the instance of a compact not entailing a reciprocity of obligation between the contracting parties, the Christian having no legal redress should the heathen be disposed to take that advantage which the constitution of his country allowed for releasing himself from the restraints of marriage.

The decision of St. Paul therefore, though at first sight it may appear to be an infringement of our Saviour's

also to the children who may be born from such marriages, and who may be looked upon as in all respects the progeny of Christian wedlock. Should 15 it however happen that the heathen husband or wife should choose to relinquish the connexion, let them do so; for the happiness of a Christian brother or sister ought not to be sacrificed to circumstances over which they have no control; remember however, that we ourselves as Christians are not justified, in these cases, in assuming that liberty of divorce, which we have no power to prevent our heathen connexions from taking advantage of, should it please them to do so. Perhaps it may so happen, 16 that by continuing to live with her heathen husband the Christian wife may be the means of his conversion; and perhaps the Christian husband may in like manner promote the salvation of his heathen wife. At all events, be that as it may, it is not for 17

exclusive rule, is in reality confirmatory of it, and founded upon the same just principle; namely, that in every mutual covenant the want of faith in one of the persons concerned operates a virtual release from any conscientious obligation in the other. Still however the apostle, with a becoming humility, makes this distinction between his own decision of the case in question, and the law of his divine Master; that whilst he refers to the latter as an infallible dictum, he advances the former as merely the best conclusion to which he can arrive in his attempt to accommodate an unforeseen contingency to what may be presumed of the real intention and object of the legislator. It was probably with a view to obviate the recurrence of this difficulty, that in a subsequent passage of this Epistle (chap. vii. 39) he enjoins widows, if entering upon a second marriage, to confine their choice to such persons for their future husbands as shall be professed Christians.



us to break a connexion which we have deliberately entered into, and which God has sanctioned. This my injunction in reply to the question which you have submitted to me I wish to be understood as intended to apply to all the Churches indiscriminately.

## ON CIRCUMCISION.

18 My next answer is to your question, which you urge as to the expediency of adopting that method, which some have recommended, of marking their abjuration of the Mosaic law by extirpating the mark left upon their bodies by the operation of circumcision. My reply is a simple one: let every one remain as he is. He that has been circumcised, let him continue so; he that is uncircumcised, let  
19 him not be circumcised. The real question is, not whether we happen to have been circumcised or otherwise, which is a matter of perfect indifference, but whether we are sincerely obedient to the com-  
20 mands of God. And on this principle I would say to every person who is apt to speculate upon the expediency of this or that change in his temporal circumstances, "remain patiently as you are with-  
21 out repining." Are you, for instance, in a state of slavery to another? regard it not, but submit to the condition in which God has placed you: though, at the same time, if you have the offer of your  
22 liberty<sup>1</sup>, it is your duty to avail yourself of it: for

<sup>1</sup> In this injunction we have a beautiful instance of the moderation of St. Paul's principles, and of his unwillingness to disturb unnecessarily by a premature, and consequently injudicious, reformation, the then existing order of society.

a slave who has been admitted to the terms of Christ's covenant has become consequently Christ's freedman; as he who, being free, is admitted into the same covenant, is consequently Christ's bondman. Being therefore all of us ransomed with no less a price than Christ's blood, and accordingly devoted to his peculiar service, it does not become us, provided we can justly avoid it, to be the slaves of merely human beings like ourselves. Still however I repeat, "remain patiently, as submitted to God's will, in whatever station he may have thought fit to place you."

ON THE COMPARATIVE EXPEDIENCY OF THE SINGLE  
AND MARRIED STATE.

You ask me, in the next place, "what is my opinion respecting a state of virginity; how far it is more pleasing in the sight of God than that of marriage?" On this subject I have no positive injunction

The opinion which he pronounces against the expediency of slavery as repugnant to the spirit of Christianity is perfectly decisive; but he notwithstanding recommends a cheerful submission to it, in persons whose emancipation could not be legitimately obtained, as the becoming acquiescence of a resigned disposition to the will of Providence, and a proper sacrifice of self-interest to the tranquillity of mankind. In denouncing however the principle, Christianity has laid the axe effectually to the root of the evil; and the consequence has accordingly been, that compulsory servitude has in the course of ages entirely disappeared from the greater portion of the Christian world, or at least, where it still unfortunately exists, remains only as a blemish deprecated even by those amongst whom by an unhappy combination of circumstances it is unwillingly retained.

to give, though my individual opinion as an apostle bearing God's commission may deserve to have some  
 26 weight. My opinion then is, that under the present distressed circumstances of the Church, such a condition is certainly preferable to the married state: that is, I mean, for such as are at this moment  
 27 single. Where indeed a person is already married, no doubt it is his duty to continue as such; but those who are still unmarried, I would certainly at present wish to dissuade from engaging themselves  
 28 in matrimony<sup>1</sup>. Still if a man choose to marry, he commits no sin, and if a woman choose also to marry, she commits no sin on her part: they must however make up their minds to incur many inconveniences and annoyances by so doing. These however I do  
 29 not wish to enumerate: but at all events there is

<sup>1</sup> It is observable, that the apostle's recommendation of a state of celibacy in preference to marriage is founded upon the then troubled state of the world, and particularly the persecutions to which Christians were at that time liable: *διὰ τὴν ἐνεστῶσαν ἀνάγκην*. A similar sentiment is recorded in the Gospels as having been expressed by our Saviour, when prophetically describing the miseries which would befall the inhabitants of Jerusalem at the time of its final capture, he observed, "Woe unto them that are with child and give suck in those days." But this declaration, as well as the former, was merely a prudential admonition, without the slightest reference to any supposed religious and spiritual advantage attaching to celibacy as contrasted with a married life. How far is this rational view of the question from sanctioning the superstitious obligation to a single state, which at the expense of so many of the kindly feelings of our nature, and to the hazard of the cause of good morals, the Church of Rome so inexorably forces upon many of its members!

one thing which it behoves us all, married or single, alike to recollect, namely, that our time on earth is short; and that they who have wives shall soon be as though they had them not; and they that sorrow, 30 as though they sorrowed not; and they who rejoice, as though they rejoiced not; and they who buy, as though they possessed not; and they who use this 31 world, as though they used, or rather I might say abused, it not; for the world and all that belongs to it passes away. One advantage undoubtedly the 32 single state possesses over the married, and on that account I give it the preference in recommending it to you; namely, that it has fewer of the pressing wants and cares of this life to provide for: a single man has nothing to do but to attend to his spiritual concerns, how he may best do his duty to God; a 33 married man, on the other hand, has the affairs of his domestic life to provide for, and the claims of a wife to attend to. In like manner the married and 34 the single women have their different allotment of duty and occupation. The latter can give her undivided attention to the care of her soul, that she may be pure in God's sight both as to body and mind: but the former is entangled in the occupations of her family, and in the discharge of the duties which she owes to her husband. I have 35 made these observations for the purpose of explaining what I conceive to be altogether for your interests to adopt: at the same time without any wish to lay upon you any unnecessary restraint, but solely anxious that you should from your own free will do what is becoming and expedient before God. Should however any father imagine that he 36 is acting unjustly by his daughter in imposing any

restraint upon her inclinations respecting marriage, if she be of full age, and there be no other inexpediency in the engagement, let him give his consent to it without scruple, and let the parties marry if  
37 so disposed. But he on the contrary who may be otherwise inclined, and from his daughter's age or other circumstances may deem her marriage inexpedient, being conscientiously satisfied that such is  
38 the case, will act well in keeping her single. So that he who gives his daughter in marriage, with propriety, does well; but he who, with propriety,  
39 restrains her from marriage, does better. But be it ever remembered, that a woman, once married, is indissolubly bound to her husband so long as he lives: in case of his death, she may take a second  
40 husband, provided he be a believer in Christ. She would indeed in my judgment act more wisely by remaining in her widowhood, but let her use her own discretion. I think however that in giving this opinion I am speaking under the direction of the Holy Spirit.

## ON MEATS SACRIFICED TO IDOLS.

8 <sup>1</sup> With regard to your next difficulty, for which you ask my decision, namely, "as to the propriety

<sup>1</sup> The question respecting the use of meats which had been sacrificed to idols was one of no small worldly moment to Christians living as a small isolated sect in the midst of a numerous heathen population. The flesh of animals which had been so sacrificed was, as we infer from various passages in the classical writers, after the consumption of certain parts upon the altar in honour of those imaginary deities, either immediately consumed by the assembled votaries in a species of public feast, or, if not so

and innocence of eating meat which has been previously sacrificed to an idol;"—I see the tendency

disposed of, was subsequently sold in the open shambles for the emolument of the ministers of religion. The converts to Christianity were thus exposed to a double loss and inconvenience, by their adoption of a new creed ; being excluded by their conscientious scruples not only from partaking in those festive banquets celebrated within the precincts of the temple, which, from their frequent occurrence, formed no inconsiderable feature in the social habits of that period ; but also from the purchase of many of the usual articles of human food, when offered for sale in the common market. The interested sophistry of the Corinthian converts had however, as it appears, invented a convenient argument, calculated to reconcile their personal indulgence with their newly acquired scruples, and to justify their conformity with their pagan neighbours in both these particulars. The argument is a curious specimen of the strange subterfuges which worldly men will have recourse to when the observance of the duties of religion involves the relinquishment of some temporal advantage. To participate in the feast upon a sacrifice offered to any *evil being*, or to purchase for domestic purposes the meat so sacrificed, knowing it to be such, was, they readily admitted, to become partakers in an act of unhallowed worship. But the false deities of the pagans they asserted were *not* evil beings, inasmuch as they were in fact *no beings at all* ; mere non-entities ; and as such could not possibly be the object of actual worship, nor entail any real pollution upon the sacrifices offered to them through the ignorance of their votaries. Under the protection of this salvo, they appear to have accommodated themselves to the practices of their pagan neighbours, and, as we infer from the indignant remonstrance of St. Paul, to have urged this wretched evasion as an ingenious and satisfactory exculpation of their conduct to the apostle himself. His answer is such as might be expected

of the argument which you suggest in exculpation of this practice, namely, that "a fictitious deity is

from a manly understanding, united to a humble and religious mind. He breaks at once through their casuistical cobwebs, by a direct appeal to their own practical good sense, and the unsophisticated character of the religion they professed: proving that, even by their own admissions, as implied by their knowledge of the Levitical sacrifices, and their own habitual celebration of the Eucharist, the participation in the subject matter of a sacrifice was *bonâ fide* a participation in that peculiar faith and worship to which such sacrifices were annexed. His injunction accordingly on this point is peremptory. "Where you *know* the meat which you find served at table, or exposed in the shambles, to have formed part of an idolatrous offering, abstain scrupulously from it." Yet at the same time, with a beautiful liberality of feeling which would not strain an inconvenient precept beyond the point actually required by the circumstances of the case, he notwithstanding allows them to eat indiscriminately from the meats set before them, provided they can do so in perfect ignorance of the previous facts, even though they may have purposely abstained from asking questions which might lead to an explanation. Thus far he admits that they may proceed innocently: one step farther would be an act of at least implied idolatry, incompatible with the purity of the Christian profession, and highly dangerous as an example to others. That this apostolical injunction had its effect in deterring professed Christians at a subsequent period from such equivocal compliance with pagan usages may be inferred from that Epistle of Pliny, from which an extract was given in a former note, in which that writer states, that, in consequence of the frequent abjurations of Christianity, produced by the increased severity of the government, the victims in the public markets, which were formerly scarcely saleable, have at length once more found abundant purchasers. "*Certè satis constat, prope*

a nonentity, and consequently can entail no real pollution upon meat so sacrificed;" but I would answer in reply, that these subtile and casuistic distinctions savour more of intellectual vanity in the proposer, than of that simplicity and rectitude of heart which is our best wisdom. For be assured, 2 that the man who is vain of the superior acuteness of his understanding is far more likely to fall into serious errors in judgment than the man, who, 3 making his love for God his guide, derives his knowledge of practical morality from that best and holiest source. It is indeed perfectly true, as you say, that 4 "an idol is an absolute nonentity," and that there is only one true and existent God. For though 5 there be many so styled deities in heaven or upon the earth, (whether called gods, or lords, or by any other appellation,) still *we* at least know that there 6 is but one God, the Father, from whom are all things, and from whom we exist: and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whose agency we and all things were created: but unanswerably true as this ab- 7 stract assertion is, still it does not meet the case in point. The real grievance is, that a scrupulous person, eating meat which has been so sacrificed, is apt to be fearful, lest in so doing he shall have given his concurrence to an idolatrous rite, and feels his conscience wounded accordingly. Grant- 8 ing, therefore, that particular meats neither give nor diminish our merits in the sight of God, that there is nothing gained by their use, and nothing lost by

*jam desolata templa cœpisse celebrari, et sacra solennia diu intermissa repeti; passimque vœnire victimas, quarum adhuc rarissimus emptor inveniebatur."*



9 our abstaining from them, still it is our duty to take heed that this liberty in which we may think fit to indulge respecting things indifferent may not prove a stumbling-block to a scrupulous and tender  
10 conscience. For if a person of this description sees you, who presume upon your stronger understanding, sitting down to table in a heathen temple, is there not danger lest he should impose silence upon his scruples against his better judgment, from mere deference to your authority, and thus become virtually a participator in an act of idolatry? for such  
11 it would be to him: and thus, may not the effect of your subtile distinctions be the ruin of a soul for  
12 which Christ has died? Be assured, that when you thus sin against your brethren, by bringing their principles into danger, even when their scruples may appear over nicely defined, you sin against Christ  
13 himself. For my own part, if my eating this or that description of meat is to be a stumbling-block in the way of my brother's conscience, most assuredly I shall uniformly make a point to abstain from it.

9 Do not however infer<sup>1</sup>, because I may from

<sup>1</sup> St. Paul is here led incidentally by the course of his argument into a digression, in which he takes an opportunity of repelling certain misrepresentations under which he had himself laboured during his intercourse with the Corinthian Church, on account of his having declined from motives of delicacy to avail himself of those temporal advantages and emoluments, which, as an apostle devoted to a harassing and laborious duty, he was justly entitled to claim. We learn from the early part of this Epistle, that strong party feelings and jealousies between the disciples of the various Christian teachers were at this moment

principle decline to avail myself of my Christian liberty in all points; as, for instance, in the case

distracting that community; and that even Paul himself, although the first planter of the Gospel in that district, had been latterly considered by some of his turbulent followers rather as the ambitious head of a rival faction, than as a disinterested fellow-labourer with others in the service of his Redeemer. Conscious of the delicate situation in which he was placed, among nominal converts to the faith, but of whom a large proportion had as yet imbibed but little of the true Christian spirit, he had endeavoured, by rendering his toilsome services perfectly gratuitous, to stifle these unworthy jealousies, and to afford an unanswerable refutation to the calumnies of his impugnors. Even this exemplary forbearance however does not appear to have entirely attained its object. Had he submitted to derive his support and maintenance from the contributions of the public, as the other apostles appear to have done, he would undoubtedly, as he knew, have been charged with preaching the Gospel from mercenary and interested motives; but in declining to do so, he was on the other hand immediately met by another and opposite calumny, which, if less opprobrious, was certainly not less injurious. Because he received no remuneration for his ministry from the Church of Corinth, it was therefore argued by his opponents, that he ought not to be considered as their peculiar and acknowledged apostle; and that his forbearance in demanding such a compensation was a tacit avowal on his part that he had no title to any jurisdiction or power of interference with them. His indignant refutation of this captious argument forms the main subject of the following digression, which extends to verse 14 of chap. x. in which he strongly asserts his undoubted right of maintenance, should he be, as he was not, disposed to claim it, and proceeds to state the reasons which had induced him to adopt that self-denying system which had been so uncandidly misconstrued. We have only to cast our eyes over this

of that right of maintenance which I may justly claim at your hands, that therefore that right does not exist. Am I not an apostle? am I not free to claim if I please, or not to claim if I please? Have I not been permitted to see in a miraculous manner our Lord Jesus Christ himself? Are not you, all of  
2 you, my converts in the Lord? If I am not an apostle to others, at least I am one to you, for you by the confession of your faith at this moment are sufficient proofs of the success of my apostleship  
3 among you. My answer then to those who may choose to speculate upon the reserve which I practise, in that I do not, like your other teachers, become a burden upon you for my maintenance, is  
4 this. Have I not a right to require a due provision of meat and drink at your expense if I think fit?  
5 Have I not a right to require the like maintenance for a wife, were I to bring one among you, as the other apostles have done in their several communities; and among the rest, our Lord's own brethren, and Peter? Or am I and Barnabas the only

ingenuous vindication of himself, in order to observe all the characteristics of a disposition of the very first degree of excellence; of one sensitive yet magnanimous; uncompromising yet kind and generous; conscious, as he himself expresses it, of having laboured more than all the other apostles, yet at the same time diffident of the value of his own exertions, and fearful, lest when called to his final account he should be found to have slumbered at his post. The subject of his exculpation is of a merely temporary character, and of momentary interest; but we may confidently assert, that the example which it affords, of what an effective and disinterested labourer in Christ's vineyard should be, will be of value to mankind so long as the world shall last.

apostles who are to be obliged, even against our will, to subsist by the actual labour of our own hands? Yet, let me ask, what soldier ever serves 7 in the field without his remuneration of pay? what husbandman cultivates a vineyard, without partaking of its produce? what shepherd feeds a flock, yet has no share in the milk it affords? Are these 8 my own arguments, invented specially to serve my interests on the present occasion? What then says 9 Moses in the law? (Deut. xxv. 4.) "Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn." Did God give this injunction solely that you may be kind and just to your brute animals, and is not the application to be made to the human race also? Surely it was enjoined for the sake of all of us, as a 10 salutary and wise regulation, that the ploughman may hope to receive the remuneration for his labours, and that the thresher may thresh with a certain assurance of his compensation also. Surely 11 then, if I have fed you with spiritual knowledge, it is not asking much in return if I require the bread of this world as my recompense. If your other 12 teachers at this moment claim such an allowance at your hands, much more may I. But I have not required it, nor do I now require it; and upon this principle; namely, that I may not, by becoming an incumbrance to you, diminish the effects of my ministry as a preacher of the Gospel of Christ. Look abroad elsewhere, and you find universally, 13 that they who minister in sacred things live by the offerings of the pious; and they who wait upon the altar feed upon the things sacrificed upon the altar: and such, we know, was the authority given by our 14 Saviour himself to his disciples when he sent them

15 upon their mission. (Matt. x. 9, &c.) But I have not availed myself of this right: nor do I make these observations with the slightest intention of so doing in future; for I would rather die than it should be said of me that I preached the Gospel  
16 for hire or reward. For after all, it is no merit of mine that I preach the Gospel; on the contrary, I have received the positive command of my Redeemer to do so, and woe indeed unto me if I preach  
17 it not. Willingly accordingly, or unwillingly, I must at all events preach it. If willingly, I have my reward as a faithful and zealous servant; if unwillingly, I have no claim to a recompense for having only done what was a peremptory duty.

18 What then is the remuneration I look to? this: that I may have been found to have spread abroad the Gospel of Christ without having been burthensome to any one, or abusing the just rights which  
19 my apostleship gave me. For though a full master of my own actions in this and other respects, I have waived my claims, and made myself a servant to every man, that I might gain the more converts to  
20 my Saviour. With this feeling it was that, whilst I resided amongst the Jews, I lived as they did, sacrificing my Christian liberty, and adopting all the scrupulous observances of their law, that I might  
21 save the souls of those within the law: as, on the other hand, I omitted the ritual ceremonies of the law whilst residing among the Gentiles, (not indeed without a due observance of the law of God as communicated to us through Christ,) in order that I might be the means of salvation to the Gentiles:  
22 and on the same principle I have submitted my own understanding on other occasions to the scruples of

timid and weak consciences, rather than distress them by the assertion of my innocent privileges: and thus have made myself all things to all men, in the hope of saving all. And this I do for the sake 23 of the Gospel, in the trust that I may finally be admitted to share in the fulness of its blessings. For it is not by remiss and relaxed exertions that I can expect to obtain the glorious reward to which I aspire. You know that in your own public games, 24 though all the competitors in a race may run, it is only one who achieves the prize;—(may you all run in such a manner in your spiritual race that you may attain to your immortal object;—) and you 25 know also what a system of privations and discipline of their bodies the various athletes will submit to for the sake of training themselves for the competition in which they engage; and yet their object is a perishable crown of laurel or parsley, whilst ours is the glorious crown of immortality itself. I then, 26 conscious of the immensity of the object for which I contend, run in this great race with all the exertion in my power; and wrestle, not as in sport, but with the desperation of one determined upon victory, struggling with all my might for the mastery over 27 my carnal and corrupt affections, lest I, who have excited others to this great spiritual contest, should myself be found wanting when brought to trial.

Rely not then yourselves, my brethren, upon the 10 mere fact of your past <sup>1</sup> conversion: nor, because you have become partakers of the Christian cove-

<sup>1</sup> The whole tenor of the preceding and following passages appears to be quite irreconcilable with the doctrine of the indefeasibility of grace.

nant, imagine therefore that you have no longer any spiritual hazards to incur. Recollect the case of our Jewish forefathers in the wilderness. All of them were alike defended by the pillar of the cloud, and miraculously preserved in their passage through  
2 the Red Sea; and by that passage were all baptized and initiated into the Mosaic covenant, by which God confirmed his promise to them as his own  
3 peculiar people. And all of them partook of the  
4 miraculous gift of manna in the wilderness, and all drank of that wonderful stream of water produced from the solid rock; (a stream typical of that pure fountain which gushes from the Rock of ages, of which we are assured that he who drinks shall  
5 thirst no more;)—and yet, what was the result?—they provoked God to anger in the wilderness,—  
6 *and they perished*. These things then are an awful and instructive warning to ourselves, that we do not forfeit our privilege as they did, by lusting after the carnal vanities of this world, as they did after  
7 the flesh-pots of Egypt; neither, my brethren, be you idolaters, as were some of them, of whom the sacred historian relates, (Exod. xxii. 6.) “the people sat down to eat and drink the sacrificed meats, and then rose up to dance their idolatrous  
8 revels:” neither let us commit fornication as they also committed, and perished in one day three and  
9 twenty thousand: neither let us grieve the Spirit of our Saviour as they grieved him, and were destroyed  
10 by serpents: neither murmur you against God, as some of them murmured, and were destroyed of the  
11 destroyer. My brethren, these punishments fell upon them as a fearful warning to others; and were written for our instruction, under this more perfect

dispensation to which we have been called. Where- 12  
fore I say again, let him who thinks that he is  
secure, take heed lest he fall. Your temptations 13  
may be severe, but they are only such as all man-  
kind must expect to encounter; and be assured  
that God will not withhold the support which he  
has promised to all those who call upon him for it,  
but will, with the temptation, also make a way to  
escape, that you may be able to bear it.

And now, my brethren, to return to my former 14  
admonition, respecting meats sacrificed to idols, let  
me exhort you, avoid every thing which can by im-  
plication involve you in the sin of idolatry. You 15  
urge that an idol is a nonentity, and that therefore  
you may innocently partake in meats which have  
been sacrificed to such merely imaginary beings.  
But mark how your own admission may be turned  
against yourselves, and how your own most sacred  
ceremonies will detect your own sophistry.—The 16  
cup of the holy communion of the Lord's Supper,  
do we not all partake of it, and in so doing *give our  
assent to the great doctrine of redemption by Christ's  
blood, of which it is the type?* Do we not in like  
manner *in participating the consecrated bread which  
we eat, make ourselves one with Christ, and Christ  
with us?* For by eating in common from that one 17  
mysterious bread, we become one bread, and one  
body with Christ. Look again to the Jewish sacri- 18  
fices. *Do not those who eat of the sacrificed meats,  
mean to imply their participation in the covenant with  
Him to whom those sacrifices are offered?* My an- 19  
swer then to your argument is this. I stop not to  
sophisticate upon such speculations as the entity or  
nonentity of the heathen idols, but I assert plainly 20



that the heathens *do* intend to address their sacrifices to other beings than the true God whom we worship, and that you cannot therefore, consistently with your admission in your own most solemn acts of devotion, partake with innocence of the sacrificed meats, as in so doing *you are making yourselves one with their false gods, and assenting to an idolatrous worship*. You cannot at once drink of the cup of our Lord's blood, and of the cup of their false and abominable deities; nor participate in the communion of the Lord's body, and the communion of their detestable superstition. Are we lightly to set up rival objects of adoration against the God we worship; and if we provoke his wrath, are we strong enough to stand against it? You talk of your Christian liberty, but recollect that that liberty must be compatible with expediency and edification, or it ceases to be innocent: remember also, that whatever your own opinions may be, you cannot eat innocently, so long as in so doing you wound a brother's conscience, which it is your duty to spare. What meat indeed you find for sale in the shambles, (though even that may have been, as we know it often is, previously sacrificed in some idolatrous ceremony, still,) such meat you may without scruple purchase and use, *provided you do not actually know it to have been so sacrificed*, as in that case you are neither directly nor indirectly sanctioning any profane rite; and we know that all God's creatures are originally good, as it is written in the twenty-fourth Psalm, "the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof." On the same principle, should any of your pagan neighbours invite you to a feast, and you like to attend, you may

without scruple eat whatever is placed before you, *so long as you do not know the meat so served to have previously formed part of an idolatrous offering.* The 28 moment however that you learn that it has been applied to such an unhallowed purpose, then abstain from it for the sake of your own conscience, and that you may not wound the consciences of others: for, to avail myself once more of my last quotation, “the earth is *the Lord’s*, and the fulness thereof.” Re- 29 member, I say, not only for the sake of your own conscience, but that *you may not wound that of others.* But why, you will say, is my innocent Christian liberty to be made subservient to another man’s mistaken and ill-judged scruples? If I eat with no 30 bad intention, and give God thanks for what I eat, am I to be blamed for so doing? I answer, that 31 whether in eating or drinking, or in any other occupation, our first object should be God’s glory: and 32 accordingly I say again, be not, even as you may suppose harmlessly, stumbling-blocks to the conscience of Jew, or Gentile, or of any member of God’s church whatever. Such has been invariably 33 the rule which I have laid down for my own practice; not seeking what may best suit my own personal convenience, but that far greater object, the salvation of others. In this respect, imitate me, for 11 my model is no less than that of Christ himself.

#### ON THE DECORUM OF THE FEMALE CHARACTER.

And now, to turn to another subject, I cannot 2 but commend you, my brethren, for the deference with which you have attended to many of my former injunctions: and accordingly, calculating upon

a continuance of the same obedience from you, I send you the following regulations for promoting the decorum of your public places of worship, and for a proper celebration of the divine offices.

- 3 I wish you then to recollect, that as Christ is the head of every man, so is a man the head of a woman, as the head of Christ is God the Father.
- 4 Every man therefore who officiates in the public prayers, or public exhortation, with a veil upon his head, is acting unseemly, as abandoning the privilege
- 5 and superiority of his sex. Every woman, on the contrary, officiating in like manner without a veil, acts inconsistently with her sex, the natural profusion of hair which God has given to the female marking what is the attire most befitting her condition; and accordingly for a woman to appear in public without a veil is little less unbecoming than
- 6 to see her at once with her head shorn. If she will dispense with the head dress which becomes her sex, why not part with her hair also? Let her
- 7 then wear a veil, as propriety requires. A man should appear in public with his head uncovered, as standing on the earth in God's place, and being
- 8 God's image: but the woman is man's image, for the man was not formed from the woman, but the
- 9 woman from the man; and the man was not created as an helpmate for the woman, but the woman as
- 10 an helpmate for the man. Wherefore a woman ought to wear her head veiled out of deference to
- 11 the rulers<sup>1</sup> of the Church. But in the sight of

<sup>1</sup> I am not satisfied that the word ἄγγελος ought in this place to be rendered according to the sense which I have given to it, but it appears to me to labour under fewer

God, as members of the Christian covenant, the man and the woman are both equal. For as the 12 first woman was formed out of the flesh of the first man, so every subsequent man is born of a woman; and both, as every thing else, are God's creatures. Ask your own natural feelings; is it consistent with, 13 or becoming her sex, for a woman to pray publicly with her head uncovered? I have already observed 14 that nature itself has marked this distinction between the sexes. Long hair is unbecoming in a man, as bespeaking effeminacy; but it is ornamental 15 to a woman, making a beautiful clothing for the head, and suggesting that style of dress which is most becoming to her situation.

ON THE DECOROUS ADMINISTRATION OF THE LORD'S  
SUPPER.

As to the emulations and party feelings which 16 have crept even into your places of worship, and to which I have already alluded, I can neither give them the sanction of my own approbation, nor that

difficulties when thus explained, than when taken according to its more usual meaning "angel" as in our established version. The testimony of early antiquity may be pleaded for both constructions: for some of those in support of the one here given, see Bingham's *Origines Ecclesiasticæ*, book ii. chap. ii. sect. 11. The well-known passage in the Apocalypse respecting the "angels," *i. e.* "bishops," of the seven Churches is also in favour of the same interpretation of the word. See also Prideaux's *Connection of the Old and New Testament*, part i. book vi. sect. 4, and Lightfoot's remarks upon chapters i. ii. iii. of the Revelations, in part ii. of his *Harmony of the New Testament*.

17 of the Churches of God: on the contrary, I must express to you the displeasure I feel upon that subject, as the effect of these disputes can be nothing else than that of converting your public assemblies from places of worship and brotherly love into scenes of unbrotherly animosity and disturbance.

18 And accordingly when you are met together for the ostensible purpose of common prayer, I hear, in the first place, that doctrinal differences on points of faith are beginning to show themselves amongst you; a circumstance I can partly believe, for

19 heresies will always grow up, even in the true Church, for the trial of those who shall remain firm

20 in the orthodox belief. Then, in the next place, your mode of celebrating the Lord's Supper is, as I hear, very unlike that solemn and brotherly communion of an affecting religious rite which such an

21 occasion requires. So far from an equal and temperate distribution of the holy elements, I understand your custom to be, that each man has his own separate and exclusive meal, each variously apportioned, so that, whilst one person from lack of means has little or nothing, another is surfeiting himself with intemperance. Is this doing it, as our Redeemer commanded us, in remembrance of him,

22 and after his model? If you must have your exclusive banquets, have you not your own houses for such purposes? or do you despise the sanctity of the Church of God, and wish to make a public display of your own luxurious living for the purpose of mortifying your poorer neighbours? What ought I to say and think of this conduct of yours? to

23 commend it is impossible. Remember the time, the occasion, and the purpose of the first institution

of that solemn rite, which I have faithfully taught you on a former occasion, as I received it from the communication of Christ himself. I restate it, in order to impress it yet more forcibly upon your memories. It was as follows. "Our Lord Jesus, on the night in which he was betrayed, took bread, and, having given thanks, he brake it, and said, 24 Take, eat, this is my body which is broken for you : this do in remembrance of me. After the same 25 manner also he took the cup after supper, saying, This cup is the new covenant in my blood : this do ye, as oft as ye drink it, in remembrance of me." In eating this bread then, and in drinking this cup, 26 you are solemnly commemorating our Lord's death until his second coming ; wherefore, he who eats of 27 that bread or drinks of that cup in such unseemly and unworthy manner is profaning no less a thing than the body and blood of our Lord himself, and incurring all the guilt of such profanation. Let a 28 man then search into his own thoughts, and put them into a befitting train for so solemn an occasion, and then, and not sooner, let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup. For he who eats and 29 drinks in your thoughtless and unbecoming manner, eats and drinks what will operate upon him rather as a curse than as a blessing, inasmuch as he recollects not that it is our Lord's body which he is thus making subservient to his own intemperance. And 30 hence it is, that by God's just judgments, many of you are weak, and sickly, and some have been cut off in their sins. For, would we but judge ourselves, 31 we should escape the judgments of God ; who now 32 judges us for these and our other sins in this life, in order that, taking warning ere it be too late, we may

escape that final condemnation which shall befall  
33 the mere children of this world. Wherefore, my  
brethren, when for the future you assemble to eat  
on this occasion, let it be in one common and tem-  
34 perate meal; and if a man must eat to satisfy his  
hunger, let him eat for that purpose in his own  
home, that he may escape sin and condemnation <sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> The strangely indecorous mode of celebrating the Lord's Supper here described conveys a far from gratifying impression of the spiritual advancement of that infant Church which St. Paul is addressing in this Epistle. The Apostle's temperate, dignified, and truly pious remonstrance, affords indeed a noble contrast when placed in apposition with that delineation of coarse and selfish feeling which calls it forth. Still however we cannot but observe, that, although his whole cast of sentiment, whilst describing those awful impressions with which it is every Christian's duty to approach the Lord's table, is solemn and reverential in the highest degree, still no single expression escapes from him which can with any probability be adduced in support of the doctrine of transubstantiation as taught by the Romish Church. If we consider him as intending merely to inculcate the necessity of purified and devotional feelings for a due participation in the most affecting rite of our religion, his language is highly just and apposite; but it falls far short of what might be expected from him were it his object to assert the actual divinity of the consecrated elements. Once admitting this portentous dogma, the papal Ritual is undoubtedly justified and consistent in all its subsequent inferences from such premises. If indeed the bread and wine of the holy communion be really transmuted into the very body and blood of Christ, then undoubtedly they have a claim to the direct adoration of all believers, and that minute attention to prevent the loss or escape of any particle of them, with the denial of the cup to the laity on the same principle of reverential precaution, and all those other regulations which Protestants denounce

My other regulations on the subject of your religious meetings I will pronounce when I arrive amongst you.

#### ON THE GIFTS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT.

You ask me, in the next place, “by what certain<sup>12</sup> sign you shall be able to know whether you have received the gift of the Holy Spirit?” I answer, by the plain and simple fact of “your conversion from sin to righteousness.” You know that you were<sup>2</sup> formerly heathens, led away by your own fancies to the worship of dumb and senseless idols, but have

as superstitious and unscriptural, are in fact most just and expedient. But the total silence of St. Paul is an unanswerable refutation of these superadditions of human speculation upon the simplicity of the truth as it is revealed in Scripture. He is too acute a reasoner not to perceive all the consequences necessarily resulting from such a doctrine had he really assented to it, and therefore the fact that he makes no allusion whatever to them can admit of only one explanation.

It may here by the way be worth observing, that one of the most atrocious calumnies advanced against the early Christians by their pagan persecutors, namely, that of devouring at their religious feasts *human flesh concealed under a sprinkling of wheaten flour*, was probably nothing more than a mistake arising from a literal acceptance of the figurative language of Scripture on the subject of the blessed Eucharist. “*Infans farre contectus, ut decipiat incautos, apponitur ei qui sacris imbuatur. Is infans a tirunculo farris superficie quasi ad innoxios ictus provocato cæcis occultisque vulneribus occiditur: hujus, proh nefas, sitienter sanguinem lambunt; hujus certatim membra dispartiunt, hanc foederantur hostiâ, hanc conscientiâ sceleris ad silentium mutuum pignerantur.*” *Minucii Felicis Octavius*, cap. 9.



subsequently abjured your errors, and embraced the  
3 doctrine of redemption. Now, as it is evident that  
no one speaking under the influence of the Holy  
Spirit can pronounce our blessed Saviour to be  
accursed; so we know from his own express assur-  
ance to Peter, (Matt. xvi. 17.) that no one can pro-  
nounce him to be the Lord and Christ, but by the  
4 aid of the Holy Spirit. It is true, that the opera-  
tions of the Holy Spirit are variously exhibited in  
different persons; still however it is one and the  
same Spirit which under this diversity of appear-  
5 ance operates in them all. Thus men have different  
functions entrusted to them, and for the discharge  
of which they are accountable, but it is the same  
6 God which distributes to each man his task: various  
powers and capacities are communicated to each,  
but it is one and the same God from whom they  
7 are derived. Now the gifts which descend to us  
from the operation of the Holy Spirit are dealt out  
to us individually in that form and that degree,  
which is best suited to enable each of us to perform  
8 effectually our respective duties. To one man, for  
instance, is given the communication of a wise and  
powerful understanding; to another, a ready appre-  
hension of the various parts of learning; yet it is  
9 the same Spirit who confers them both: to another  
again is given a submiss and firm confidence in the  
doctrines of revelation; to another, the gift of heal-  
ing diseases; but still again it is the same Spirit  
which manifests itself under these distinct appear-  
10 ances: to another again is given the power of work-  
ing general miracles; to another, skill in the inter-  
pretation of Scripture; to another, the power of  
distinguishing between the real operations of the

Spirit, and those which may be the result of imposition, or of an excited imagination; to another is given a ready fluency in languages; to another, the faculty of interpreting languages for the instruction of the unlearned; yet all this variety of faculties is 11 nothing more than the inworkings of one and the same Spirit, distributing to each individual according to its own good pleasure. For as the human 12 body is one single being, yet consists of many distinct members, the aggregate of those several members constituting by their union only one individual person; so is the mystical body of Christ, of which we all of us are respectively members. For by one 13 and the same Spirit we have all been baptized and united together in one common body, whether we were Jews or Gentiles, slaves or freemen; and have all drunk of and participated in the gifts of the one Holy Spirit. Now then, to follow up the illustra- 14 tion afforded by this remark, namely, that our bodies derive their single individual character from the harmonious agreement of the various limbs, each separately performing their due functions;—let us 15 suppose that the foot were to say, “Because I am not the hand, therefore I am not part of the body;” would that assertion be correct? or suppose that 16 the ear were to say, “Because I am not the eye, therefore I am not part of the body;” would that assertion again be correct? for if the eye consti- 17 tuted the whole body, where would be the faculty of hearing? or if the hearing constituted the whole body, where would be the faculty of smelling? The 18 fact is, that God has in his wisdom allotted the various portions of the body each for its respective use, yet so as to form by their combination the

19 whole man:—whereas if any one separate member were to be the whole body, where would be that harmony and proportion of parts of which we know  
20 it to consist? As it is, however, being one aggregate nature, consisting of the union and combination of distinct parts, the eye cannot say contemptuously to the hand, “I have no need of you:” nor can the head say to the feet, “I have no need  
22 of you.” Even the most subordinate and unimportant parts of our bodies, we know, have all their  
23 separate and positive use; and even those which are deemed the least honourable, we notwithstanding clothe with more costly attire than many others  
24 which we expose to observation: and thus God has wisely contrived that each several portion of our animal nature should have its due share of our care and attention, making up to them in one respect  
25 what is deficient in another: so that there should be no actual preference or preponderance of one  
26 part over another: and thus it is, that if one limb is in pain, the whole body suffers with it; or if one be indulged, the whole body is conscious of the  
27 comfort. Now, as it is with the human body, so is it with the mystical body of Christ, which is one in its individuality, yet composed of as many distinct members as there are believers in the community of  
28 the Church. God has accordingly apportioned to each their respective offices, making some of us apostles, others expounders of Scripture, others teachers, others workers of miracles, others healers of the sick, others helpers, others Church rulers, others  
29 speakers of various languages. But, as I said before, one member is not to claim the functions appropriated to another, and consequently not every man is

to expect to become an apostle, nor every man an expounder of Scripture, nor every man a teacher, nor every man a worker of miracles, nor every man 30 a healer of the sick, nor every man a speaker in various languages, nor every man an interpreter of languages to others. Of all these various gifts of 31 the Holy Spirit then let every man aspire to that which is best and most excellent;—and shall I tell you what, after all, that “best and most excellent” is? It is not the gift of languages, but something far 13 better: for be assured that, even if I have ability in all the languages of men and of angels themselves, and yet am without Christian love and kindness, I am after all but as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal. Again, it is not the mere interpretation of Scripture; 2 for I say again, though I had that, and the power of solving all mysteries whatsoever, and all knowledge however various;—nay, though I possessed faith, such as, to use our Saviour’s<sup>1</sup> expression, (Mark ix.

<sup>1</sup> I shall avail myself once for all of this incidental allusion to our Saviour’s own expression as recorded in the Gospels, (Matt. xxi. 21 ; Mark xi. 23.) to direct the reader’s attention to the many apparent citations from the works of the four Evangelists which occur in various parts of the apostolical Epistles: a circumstance which we can account for only by supposing, either that the Gospels were then extant in the form in which they have been transmitted to us, or that the writers of the Epistles derived their information from the same common source with those who subsequently undertook to record the events of our Redeemer’s history. Mr. Toland early in the last century, and other infidel writers within the last few years, have attempted to derogate from the authority of the four Gospels by ostentatiously bringing forward the apocryphal

23.) "would remove mountains," yet am wanting in Christian love and kindness,—I am nothing.  
3 It is not, again, merely what the world calls charity; for even though I expend my whole substance in feeding the poor, or give up my very body to be burned, yet, if I am wanting in Christian love and  
4 kindness, my good deeds are of no avail. What then is this love and kindness which I am now recommending as the most excellent of all the gifts of the Spirit? It is that state of mind which is slow to anger, whilst it regards the conduct of others with charity and kindness. It is that which envies not its neighbour, boasts not of itself: shuns pride  
5 and arrogance; prefers another's benefit to its own; gives way to no impetuosity of temper; imputes  
6 no evil intentions to others; takes no pleasure in injustice; but delights in and sympathizes with  
7 whatever is true and holy; conceals to the best of its power the failings of its neighbour; hopes and deems of every one for the best; and bears meekly with the waywardness of mankind, and the  
8 trials and calamities of life. This is the frame of

writings of the early ages of Christianity as of equal authenticity with those which the uniform consent of the various Christian Churches has admitted into the sacred Canon. But the numerous citations now referred to, and which no reader will find any difficulty in selecting for himself, appear, even if other and irrefragable proofs were wanting, almost decisive of the question. It is scarcely an exaggeration to assert, that from the apostolical Epistles and the Book of the Acts of the Apostles a tolerably accurate notion of the contents of the four Gospels might be derived, even if by some unfortunate accident those last-mentioned books should one day be lost to mankind.

mind; this the best gift of the Spirit, which shall survive death itself. As for the wisdom which we so ambitiously seek after, it shall cease and be forgotten; our gifts of language shall be silenced, our knowledge shall pass away as though it had never been: for our knowledge in this world is but a slight and imperfect surmise; our wisdom but a vague and partial apprehension of mysteries beyond the reach of our present limited faculties to explain. But when the fulness of God's dispensations shall be made clear to us, as it will be, then these inferior acquirements will be no longer wanted by us, as the mistaken guesses of the child disappear and are discarded before the full apprehension and perceptions of manhood. For in this life we see not truth itself, but its imperfect reflection only; but in that which is to come we shall be admitted to contemplate it face to face. Now we make partial surmises; then I shall apprehend God, as I am now apprehended by him. Meanwhile, during the course of our present mortal career, faith, hope, and Christian love form the three great excellences of that Christian character to which we aspire; but the two former are calculated for this world's necessities only; *the latter will accompany us to the next, and will last for ever*<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> It is consolatory to us, who live in a period in which the extraordinary dispensations of the Holy Spirit are no longer communicated, to observe how St. Paul, who was himself rich in those mysterious treasures, directly asserts the far superior value of the practical Christian virtues to the more ostentatious gifts of miracles and languages. This consideration ought to operate with us as a satisfactory vindication of the impartiality of God's providence in his

- 14 Having secured to the best of your power this most excellent and foremost of all the gifts of God's Holy Spirit, then in the next place aspire after the others: and, as it is your duty to prefer that which is really profitable to that which may be merely ostentatious, pray rather for the gift of duly understanding and interpreting the holy Scriptures, than for those more extraordinary acquirements which are  
2 dispensed only to a few. For after all—the gift of languages which so many ambitiously seek after—what is it? He who possesses that gift speaks not to the apprehension of the Church in general, who cannot follow him, but to God only: his knowledge indeed is from the Spirit, but it is dark and unpro-

dealings with the human race. Miracles were wanted for the first establishment of Christianity, and they were allowed to be performed; the necessity for them no longer existed when the infancy of the Church was passed, and they were finally withdrawn. But that single-minded, pure, and exalted affection to God and man, which is the consummation of the Christian character, and without which even faith itself were valueless, is a no less necessary acquisition now than in the apostolical age; and, being such, is, as we are expressly assured by Scripture, no less attainable by every sincere disciple of our Lord at this moment than it was to the primitive believers themselves. If then the possession of this pearl of price could have consoled St. Paul for the loss of all his other treasures, surely we can have no reason to feel differently, or to sigh in fruitless regret after the acquisition of those other powers, which, however more gratifying to our carnal vanity, could scarcely have been possessed by us without risk, as affording aliment to spiritual conceit, and tending to excite unworthy and invidious emulations among the common servants of Christ.

fitable to others. The able expounder of Scripture, 3  
on the contrary, addresses to the assembled Church  
the words of edification, and exhortation, and com-  
fort. He who possesses the gift of languages speaks 4  
in them for his own profit only: he, on the other  
hand, who expounds the Scriptures, makes his  
knowledge useful for the instruction of others. I 5  
wish indeed that you all possessed the gift of lan-  
guages, but I wish much more that you possessed  
the gift of the interpretation of Scripture: for the  
expounder of Scripture is far more serviceable to  
the Church in the exercise of his peculiar gift than  
the mere speaker of unknown languages, unless  
indeed the words of the latter be interpreted into  
the vernacular language of the country, in order  
that the whole assembly be able to derive instruction  
from them: and even when interpreted, what is the 6  
value of my gift of languages, unless the words  
which I may utter shall be available for the revela-  
tion of God's will, or for imparting wisdom, or for  
the exposition of Scripture, or for general instruc-  
tion? Just as is the case with common musical 7  
instruments, the pipe, for instance, or the harp;  
unless we produce upon them some definite and well  
modulated sound, no idea is excited in the minds of  
the hearers. Thus if the trumpet when sounded 8  
produce no peculiar and decided note, who will  
understand it as the signal for battle, and make  
his preparations accordingly? So you, if in your 9  
Churches you utter what is unintelligible to the  
minds of the assembled congregation, how will they  
be the better for your knowledge? not more so,  
than if you were speaking to the air. There is, as 10  
we know, a vast variety of languages in the world,



all of them understood by the nations respectively  
11 speaking them: yet if I know not the language  
of the country in which I converse, I am unintelligi-  
12 ble to the natives, and they to me. Wherefore, my  
brethren, as you express an anxiety to possess the  
gifts of the Holy Spirit, pray especially that you may  
abound in such as may tend, not to the indulgence of  
your own gratification, but to the practical advantage  
13 of the Church: and let him who speaks in an un-  
known tongue pray that he may have the gift of  
14 interpretation also. For if I pray<sup>1</sup> in an unknown  
tongue, my own spirit is indeed occupied in prayer,  
but the understanding of those who might wish to  
15 join with me is unedified. Let us then strive to  
pray in the spirit, and to pray to the understanding  
of our hearers also: let us sing our hymns in the  
spirit, but let us also sing to the apprehension of  
16 others. For if otherwise, when you invoke God's  
blessing upon the congregation of believers, how  
shall each private individual join in the supplica-  
tion, and pronounce the "Amen" from his heart,  
if he has been unable to follow the meaning of your  
17 words? Your benediction may be properly con-  
ceived with reference to your own understanding,  
but the rest of the congregation is not benefited.  
18 Think not that I speak thus from a wish to depre-  
ciate the gift of languages. "The fact is, and I  
thank God for it, I myself speak more languages  
19 than you all. And yet, whilst officiating in the  
Church, I had rather speak five words to the ap-

<sup>1</sup> How would the Church of Rome reconcile its practice of prayer in an unknown tongue with this injunction of the apostle?

prehension of my hearers, so as to communicate real knowledge to them, than ten thousand in a language which they do not understand. Do not, 20 my brethren, indulge in this childish display of unprofitable acquirements: be as children in a guileless disposition, and in simplicity of heart, but be men in that strength of mind which delights in the pursuit of true, and not merely ostentatious, wisdom. Remember what is written in the prophet Isaiah, 21 (Isaiah xxviii. 11.) "I will speak to this people with the miracle of various languages, and foreign speech, and yet not even for all that will they hearken unto me, saith the Lord." From which we 22 are taught to infer, that the gift of languages was imparted as a miraculous<sup>1</sup> sign to convince unbelievers, and not for the daily intercourse of believers. The gift of interpretation of Scripture, on the contrary, is lost upon unbelievers, who assent not to the truth of those Scriptures, but is of hourly value to us who look to them for the means of our salvation. If then, when your Church is assembled 23 for the purpose of common edification and prayer, all of you, instead of doing that which is most profitable for you all, indulge only in the wretched vanity of displaying your knowledge of various languages, and any indifferent person, or heathen, chance to step in, will they not say that you are mad? If, on the other hand, when you are so as- 24

<sup>1</sup> This assertion of St. Paul affords a satisfactory explanation of that arrangement of Providence by which the miraculous gift of languages was confined to the early ages of the Church, when the cause of revelation stood in more urgent need of these extraordinary aids than it can be said to do at present.

sembled, all who are competent to the task be occupied to their utmost in expounding the doctrines of revelation to the other brethren, a stranger or an heathen accidentally stepping in may not improbably be roused to the conviction of his own  
25 state, and taught to regard his soul's health: and thus perhaps may the awakened feelings of his heart find a vent, and he falling prostrate be induced to join in prayer to the true God, and may go away with the conviction that that God is as-  
26 suredly amongst you. But is it so, my brethren, in your assemblies? On the contrary, I understand them to be too often a mere display of ostentatious rivalry: and that one man has his psalm, another his discourse, another his display of languages, another his revelation of some mystery, another his interpretation. Let then, for the future, all that you do be for the great object of common edification. And for this purpose, and for the preservation of order and decorum in your churches, adopt the following regulations.

- 27 If any man wish to speak in a foreign language, let him utter one, two, or at most three, sentences at a time; and then pause, until what he has spoken shall have been interpreted to the rest<sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> The apostle appears to have adopted this regulation from the established mode of reading the books of the Old Testament in the Jewish synagogues. "After the Hebrew language had ceased to be the mother tongue of the Jews," says Dean Prideaux, "and the Chaldee grew up into use among them instead of it, (as was the case after their return from the Babylonish captivity,) their usage was, that, in the public reading of the Law to the people, it was read to them first in the original Hebrew,

If there be no person in the church competent 28 to interpret for him to the congregation, then let him remain silent, and offer his prayers quietly to himself.

Let the expounders of Scripture utter two or 29 three sentences only at a time, and then make a short pause, until the congregation shall have duly apprehended what they have said.

If, whilst one is speaking, any revelation occur 30 to another, let the first remain silent, in order to afford his neighbour an opportunity of uttering it. For, by restricting yourselves to the rule of one only 31 speaking at the same moment, the whole congregation will receive instruction, and derive the greatest spiritual profit. And it is right that each expounder 32 of Scripture should be willing in his turn to listen to, and improve himself by, the exposition of others : for God is not the author of confusion, but of peace 33 and harmony in the churches of his saints.

Let not the women attempt to speak in public 34

and after that rendered by an interpreter into the Chaldee language, that so all might fully understand the same. And this was done period by period. And therefore that these periods might be the better distinguished, and the reader more certainly know how much to read at every interval, and the interpreter how much to interpret at every interval, there was a necessity that some marks should be invented for their direction herein. The rule given in their ancient books is, that in the Law the reader was to read one verse, and then the interpreter was to render the same into the Chaldee ; but that in the Prophets the reader was to read three verses together, and then the interpreter to render the same three verses into Chaldee in the same manner." *Connection of the History of the Old and New Testament*, part i. book 5.

in your churches; for the reserve of their sex makes such a display of themselves unsuitable and  
35 inexpedient. Accordingly if they even wish only to speak so much as to ask questions for their own better information, let them reserve those questions till they return home, and are able to consult their husbands, but let them not take any part in the conversations in the church.

36 By observing these regulations you will not only keep order in your public meetings, but will check that undue vanity which is at present causing so much confusion, as well as leading to the display of so much spiritual presumption, amongst you. For do not imagine, as you appear to do, that the knowledge of the true God came first to me from you, or that you are the only persons with whom  
37 it rests at this moment. On the contrary, if you will flatter yourselves with your supposed spiritual attainments, and knowledge of Christian truth, show them at least by admitting that the admonitions  
38 which I now give you are from Christ. If any man choose to deny that they are so, I shall not attempt to convince him to the contrary.

39 Once more then, I repeat, keep up at all events in your public assemblies the habit of interpretation of Scripture, as a necessary part of the divine service; and with regard to the use of foreign languages, let it have its turn also,—but with modera-  
40 tion. Meanwhile, let every thing be done decently, and in order.

#### ON THE RESURRECTION OF THE BODY.

15 Thus much then for the external discipline and regulation of your Church; and now before I con-

clude this epistle, let me advert to the great doctrine of the resurrection of the dead, which I understand that some teachers amongst you have ventured to call into question. Now this is the sum and substance of that great Gospel truth which I taught amongst you, and to which you have made your profession as an article of faith; and which will be <sup>2</sup> the means of the salvation of your souls, if you accept it, not as a merely vague impression, but with the solemn conviction which I have attempted to inculcate in your minds. The foundation of this <sup>3</sup> our hope is the certainty which we possess of the resurrection of Christ himself. For I have already taught to you, my brethren, that which I had before received as an undoubted truth, that Christ died for our sins accordingly as had been foretold respecting him by the prophet Isaiah, (Isaiah liii. 5.) and that <sup>4</sup> he was buried, and that he was raised again from the grave on the third day, as the Scriptures had also foretold of him. And that he was seen after <sup>5</sup> his resurrection by Peter, and afterwards by the other apostles; and on a subsequent occasion was <sup>6</sup> seen by more than five hundred of the brethren at once, the greater part of whom are at this moment living to vouch for the fact, though some few are dead <sup>1</sup>. On another occasion he was seen by James, <sup>7</sup> and then again by all the apostles, and last of all he <sup>8</sup> was seen by myself, an apostle born out of due time, <sup>9</sup> the least amongst the apostles, and who do not deserve so proud an appellation, because I persecuted the Church of God. Still, by the grace of God, I <sup>10</sup>

<sup>1</sup> These two appearances of Christ subsequent to his ascension are not mentioned in any other part of Scripture.

am what I am. And the mercy and grace which he has bestowed upon me has not, I trust, been wasted; but I have laboured in his service more than all the others; or rather, let me say, it was not I that laboured, but God's grace that was with  
11 me. Be their labours, however, or be my own, what they may, such at all events is the doctrine which we all teach, and in which you have professed your belief.

12 If then it be true (and with such evidence who can doubt its truth?) that Christ really rose from the dead, how is it that some of your teachers have as-  
13 serted that there is no resurrection of the dead? If there is no resurrection of the dead, then assuredly  
14 Christ himself is not risen; and if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching unprofitable, and your  
15 faith equally unprofitable: nay, we, the apostles, stand convicted of having borne false testimony respecting God; for we have in that case asserted of God, against the real fact, that he raised Christ from the dead; which cannot be true, if the dead  
16 rise not: for, if there be no resurrection of the dead, Christ himself, as I just now observed, is not risen;  
17 and if Christ be not risen, then your faith is a mere delusion, and you are all of you still involved in  
18 your sins, without a hope of expiation; and then also have all those who have died in the faith of  
19 Christ perished likewise in their sins. Most assuredly, if it is in this life only that we are to look for the reward of our faith in Christ, we Christians are  
20 of all men the most miserable. But not such is the termination of our hopes. Christ, we know, *is* risen from the dead, the first fruit to God of those who lie in the grave, and the pledge of their resurrection.

For as by one man death came upon mankind, so <sup>21</sup> by one man came also the resurrection of the dead; and as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all <sup>22</sup> be made alive. But that end of all things is not <sup>23</sup> yet. Each must wait to receive his reward in that order which God has appointed. Christ was the first fruits of the grave: and next after him shall be raised Christ's own flock at his second coming: and after that shall be that final consummation <sup>24</sup> when he shall give up the kingdom to God the Father, and finally extirpate every other supremacy, and authority, and power. For he, our blessed <sup>25</sup> Redeemer, shall reign, as we are assured by the Psalmist, (Psalm viii.) "until God hath put all enemies under his feet." The last enemy that shall be <sup>26</sup> destroyed is death; but even death shall be destroyed in its turn, otherwise that promise, that "*all things* <sup>27</sup> *shall be put under his feet,*" would lose its completion. In saying however that "God shall put *all things* under his feet," it is of course evident, that God the Father himself is not intended to be included in that expression, as He it is who puts all things under him. But when all things whatever <sup>28</sup> shall have been put under him, then in his turn the Son himself shall be subject to God the Father, that God may be all things, and over all things. Why, let me ask, are we<sup>1</sup> baptized into that faith <sup>29</sup> of a crucified and dead Redeemer, to which our

<sup>1</sup> It can scarcely be supposed that St. Paul, in the rather obscure expression contained in the original text of this passage, *τί βαπτίζονται ὑπὲρ τῶν νεκρῶν*; has intended to give his sanction to a presumed superstitious usage of baptizing the living for, and in behalf of, the dead, as some commentators have imagined. The context is certainly not



already departed brethren have clung as their last hope in death, if the dead rise not? Why continue  
 30 we thus to chase a mere delusion? why thus to submit to persecution and tribulation hourly, yet  
 31 without an object? I protest, by those hopes which I have in Jesus Christ our Lord, my daily afflictions which I suffer for the sake of the Gospel, are equal  
 32 in their agony to death itself. Why did I, for what purpose, or in hope of what compensation, undergo so many fearful afflictions and dangers from the enraged populace at Ephesus, if my hopes are to terminate in this life, and the dead rise not? If so, let us throw ourselves at once into the frivolity and dissipation of the children of this world, and eat, and drink, and revel to-day, because we die to-morrow!  
 33 No, my brethren, be not deceived by this licentious sophistry;

“Such communings debase the heav’n-born soul;  
 And mar its holier purpose<sup>1</sup>;”—

34 On the contrary, I call upon you to rouse yourselves from all such dreams of sensuality and intemperance, and to sin not:—and I call upon you the more earnestly, because I am aware that some of you (I blush for you whilst I say it) are yet ignorant of God, and of the holy faith which you profess.

35 But some of you argue, as I am informed, of the *impossibility* of a future resurrection. “How can the

without its difficulties: but perhaps some light may be thrown upon it by referring to a similar and seemingly analogous expression contained in Romans vi. 3, 4.

<sup>1</sup> It will be remembered that the original passage,

Φθείρουσιν ἥθη χρῆσθ' ὁμιλίας κακὰ,

is a quotation from the Greek poet Menander.

bodies which have been wasted in the flames, which have mingled with the winds, or mouldered in the grave, be restored each to their original particles, and live again?" Wretched reasoners! look at the 36 very seeds which you cast into the ground, and you will find that the substance of the seed undergoes its own peculiar decomposition ere it can vegetate afresh: nor is the seed<sup>1</sup> which you sow the same 37

<sup>1</sup> This objection, derived from the supposed impossibility of the re-assemblage of all the component materials of the human frame at the day of judgment, which supplied an argument to the early heretics for impugning the great doctrine of the resurrection, though completely refuted by St. Paul, has nevertheless by some strange perversity afforded matter of discussion and perplexity to speculative theologians of all ages, and even within our own times. How, it has been asked, can all the various particles which once constituted a human body, but which are now dispersed among the elements, or perhaps actually forming part of the material substance of other persons, be so completely restored to their original locality, that each individual shall receive back the same identical atoms moulded afresh into the same identical limbs? The satisfactory solution of this difficulty is that given by the apostle, which, it may be worth observing, precisely accords with what the experiments of philosophers in more recent times would lead us to infer. It is now, I believe, universally admitted, that what is called the personal identity of sentient beings has nothing whatever to do with the substantial identity of their bodily organs. A human individual grows up from infancy to manhood, and from manhood to old age, during which period the whole substance of his limbs is changed again and again; yet his own recollections and internal consciousness tell him to the last that he is the same person who thought and acted fourscore years ago:—limbs are amputated, yet the sensations which ap-

with the vigorous plant which rises from it, but a mere grain of whatever plant it may chance to be, 38 to which God in his due time gives its own just and 39 peculiar development and figure. All flesh again is not endowed with the same identical characters, but there is one kind which belongs to men, another to beasts, another to fishes, and another to 40 birds: there are also bodies celestial, and bodies terrestrial: but the glory of the heavenly bodies is one thing, the constitution of terrestrial bodies is 41 another. Again the splendour of the sun differs from

peared to belong to them remain as matter of consciousness to the person so maimed: these facts seem to establish the conclusion, that our bodies are rather the vehicles of sensation than that they are themselves sentient: that they are instruments through which the soul acts, but which might be superseded by the substitution of others of greater or less capacity, without at all infringing our consciousness of our own identity. It is evident, therefore, that the re-annexation of the soul to the same or to different particles of matter at the final resurrection, can have no more to do with its own continuous duration and individuality, than the existence of the eye can be said to depend upon the optical contrivances by which its functions are assisted, or the personal identity of an artisan upon the peculiar implements by which he labours at his vocation. St. Paul's illustration of this mysterious question, therefore, is perfectly apposite. The grain of wheat is cast into the ground; the full and perfect stem, blade, and ear spring from it, all differing from the original seed in form, size, colour, and in their constituent material particles; yet the continuity of existence is never for a moment interrupted, but, whilst minute portions of the substance are successively withdrawn, the gradual substitution and assimilation of others build up the entire plant to the full development of its growth.

that of the moon, and the splendour of the moon from that of the stars; the stars also themselves have their various degrees of beauty and brilliance. So, raised from death to life, so, changed in constitution and character, will be man's body, when God shall create it afresh. It is sown in corruption; it shall be raised in incorruption:—it is sown in dishonour; it shall be raised in glory:—it is sown in weakness; it shall be raised in power:—it is sown a natural body; it shall be raised a spiritual body: for there is a natural body, and there is also a spiritual body. As it is written in the book of Genesis, "the first man Adam was made a sentient being:" the last Adam, on the contrary, was made a spirit communicating life to others: but it was not the spiritual man who came first, but the natural; and *afterwards*, in God's good time, the spiritual. The first man was made of the dust of the earth, and accordingly returned to it: the second man is the Lord from heaven. As was our earthly forefather Adam, so are we his earthly descendants; and as is our heavenly Redeemer, such will his glorified children one day become: and as we have borne the form and infirmities of the earthly, we shall also bear the glorious image of the heavenly. Let me not, then my brethren, be supposed to assert, that mere mortal flesh and blood can inherit the kingdom of heaven, or that our present wretched and corruptible bodies can inherit incorruption. Mark the wonderful and glorious dispensation which is prepared for us. All of us, the whole human race, they who shall be in their graves at Christ's second coming, and they who shall still be living upon the earth, all shall undergo an instantaneous change, in

a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trumpet. For the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and all of us  
53 shall put on a new nature: for it is necessary that this our corruptible nature should put on incorruption, and these our mortal bodies should put on  
54 immortality: and then, when this our corruptible frame shall have put on incorruption, and these our mortal bodies shall have put on immortality, then shall be finally accomplished the declaration of the Prophet, (Isaiah xxv. 8.) "Death is swallowed up  
55 in victory."—O death! where is now thy sting? O grave! where is now thy victory? The sting of death is sin; and that which gives strength and efficacy to sin, is that law of moral righteousness  
57 of which we have all of us fallen short: but thanks be to God who gives us the victory, not through our own merits, but through the expiation of our  
58 Lord Jesus Christ. Wherefore, my beloved brethren, continue firm in your faith, unmoved by the seductions of the world, and to the end of your career abounding in the work of the Lord, resting fully assured that your labour in the Lord's service shall not remain for ever without its reward.

## CONCLUSION.

16 With regard to the collection which I have recommended for the support of our distressed Christian brethren, I would advise you to follow the directions which I have laid down for the Churches  
2 in Galatia. That is, on the first day of every week let each of you lay by something from his gains for the establishment of a fund, in order that you may not have to commence your contributions after my

arrival. And when I arrive, I will send such persons 3  
to bear your liberality to Jerusalem as you shall  
specially commission in writing: and, if you wish 4  
it, I myself will accompany them in person. My 5  
present intention is to come to you, after passing  
through Macedon, which it is my object to visit, and 6  
to stay some time with you, perhaps the whole win-  
ter, in the hope of having some of you to accompany  
me afterwards on some part of my journey. I do 7  
not come to you sooner, as in that case I could only  
see you in my way through your country; but defer  
my visit until I shall have leisure, with God's  
blessing, to make a longer stay than I could afford  
at present. I shall therefore continue at Ephesus 8  
till Pentecost, where a promising opportunity of 9  
making converts seems to present itself, though I  
expect much and violent opposition. If, meanwhile, 10  
Timothy arrive among you, receive him well and  
kindly; for he is engaged upon our Lord's business  
as actively as myself. Let no man therefore think 11  
slightingly of him, but send him on his way in  
comfort, that he may reach me according to our  
arrangement: for I expect him together with the  
other brethren. With regard to our brother Apollos, 12  
I strongly pressed him to come to you with the  
others, but could not prevail upon him; but he will  
come shortly, when he has an opportunity.

Be watchful and firm in the faith: acquit your- 13  
selves like men: be strong; and do every thing, 14  
one with another, in love and charity. Farewell.

I beseech you, brethren, (you know the family of 15  
Stephanas, that they were our first converts in  
Achaia, and are at present employed in rendering  
service to the Church,) submit yourselves to their 16

instruction, and to that of all my other fellow-  
17 labourers in the Gospel. I am happy in the com-  
pany of Stephanas and Fortunatus, whose presence  
is some consolation to me for my absence from  
18 you : for they have cheered me much, as they will  
19 you upon their arrival. Receive them kindly. The  
Churches of Asia salute you. Aquila and Priscilla,  
with the other Christian brethren in their household,  
20 salute you. All the brethren here salute you.  
21 Salute one another with a holy kiss. My own  
salutation, which I Paul write with mine own hand,  
22 be with you. If any one among you love not the  
Lord Jesus Christ let him be Anathema, Maran-  
atha !  
23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.  
24 My love be with you all in Christ Jesus. Amen.

---

THE topics which form the subject of the foregoing Epistle, having reference chiefly to usages and opinions which the change of manners produced by the lapse of many centuries has long superseded, may at the first view appear to have lost much of their original interest ; but the fact is, that the admirable tone of truly Christian feelings with which they are discussed, and the practical inferences which may be derived from them, are calculated to instruct and improve mankind in all ages. The intention of a legislator is seldom so clearly perceived when put forth only in the shape of general rules and maxims, however accurately expressed, as when it is illustrated by its application to special cases, even though those cases may no longer form a part of modern manners : and it is this circumstance which attaches such immense value to the inspired composition now before us. Considered as a practical comment upon the abstract principles of the Gospel, by its application to some of those unforeseen emergencies which the natural course of

events must be expected to produce, it is calculated to supply an unerring rule, which no one who has imbibed the least portion of the Christian spirit can fail to apprehend, for the regulation of his conduct in every new position in which accident may place him. But to no one is it fitted to convey a more salutary lesson than to him who is occupied in treading in the apostle's footsteps in preaching the doctrines of the Gospel. To such a person, the impression received from the study of this invaluable exhortation will be at once disheartening and consolatory. He will learn what discouragement, what resistance from the perversity of the human temper, what mortifications, what disappointments to expect ; but he will learn also how to bear them without despair, if not without a murmur. He will learn at how early a period in the history of our faith the tares began to grow up together with the good seed ; and, whilst contemplating the ambitious feuds of the Corinthian Church, their relaxed morality, the coldness of their zeal, and the worldliness of their views, will strive to endure with cheerfulness and hope the many vexations attending his own ministry, from the recollection of those which even an inspired apostle, the eloquent, the meek, the energetic Paul himself, could not entirely escape. If in that infant period of the Church, when the great truths of Christianity had not yet lost their primitive freshness, and when the cogent arguments of Christ's immediate messenger were enforced by the operation of miracles, even then the spiritual parent had to mourn over the ingratitude of his children ;—surely the modern uninspired Christian teacher will find little cause for wonder, that the utility of his spiritual labours is often checked by the hostility of the profane, or the misconstructions of the speculative and falsely ingenious. But still the same great example of his heaven-taught precursor will call upon him to persevere ; and whether his way shall lie amid friends or assailants, he will like him unhesitatingly pursue it, without deviating, through deference to human prejudices, to the right hand or to the left ; and like him exclaim to the last, “ Woe unto me if I preach not the Gospel.”



THE  
SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL  
TO THE  
CORINTHIANS.

---

THE second Epistle to the Corinthians was written, as is evident from the context, at a short period, probably within a few months, after the date of the preceding. The commonly received opinion is that it was composed at Philippi in the year of our Lord 58.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

1 PAUL an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God,  
and Timothy our brother, to the Church of God which  
is in Corinth, together with all the Christian bre-  
2 thren who are in Achaia: grace and peace be unto  
you from God our Father, and from our Lord Jesus  
Christ.

SECTION I.

The second Epistle to the Corinthians, like the preceding one addressed to the same community, divides itself under two heads, the former of which, comprehending the first nine chapters, consists of St. Paul's reply to the exculpatory statement of the Corinthian Church produced by his late remonstrance upon their past conduct, together with a dignified exposition of the high importance of his apostolical commission, and an eloquent vindication of the course pursued by him in the execution of that arduous office; whilst in

the latter he reprobates with considerable but just severity the persevering ingratitude and turbulent conduct of some false teachers who were continuing to foment ill will, and to sow the seeds of pernicious heresies in that society.

In no part of the New Testament perhaps is the personal character of the writer more graphically drawn out than in the vivid and energetic display of kind and noble feeling conveyed in this interesting composition, in which we have the portraiture of a warmly affectionate mind, painfully anxious lest in the discharge of an imperious duty, more pain should have been inflicted upon the offending party than the circumstances actually required;—yet at the same time accompanied with that inflexible decision of principle, which feels that the indulgence of the gentler inclinations of our nature is not to be purchased by an indifference to the paramount claims of duty and of man's eternal welfare. Accordingly, in the former part of this Epistle we have the beautiful and affecting picture of an humble Christian teacher burning with holy love toward God, and charity to mankind; cheerful amid persecutions, and humbly looking forward to that period when he, with those entrusted to his ministry, shall exchange their present afflictions and infirmities for a blissful immortality; we see, in the concluding portion, that same person undauntedly asserting the discipline of his office, and establishing, unwillingly indeed, but peremptorily, and with a becoming confidence, his own personal claims to their obedience and respect.

The self-denying principles of Christianity have been accused by its adversaries as having a tendency to subdue the more energetic faculties of the soul, and thus to derogate from the dignity of human nature: but of this charge the character of St. Paul as it stands forth in the following Epistle affords a decisive refutation. The annals of heroism contain not a more striking specimen of a mind operated upon by ardent impulses, or endued with more persevering hardihood of moral courage; yet the sternness here portrayed is the sternness of a Christian saint, compatible with the most fervent kindness, the most disinterested benevolence, the most amiable gentleness of manners, and the most guileless simplicity of heart. And if accordingly we find the apostle at length roused by the unworthy taunts of his opposers into a tone of self-commendation, still it is such as necessarily results from the inevitable consciousness of the possession of high gifts; whilst it is stripped of the last remnant of human vanity by the avowal of accompanying infirmity, and by the humbling admission that, however transcendent, they are, after all, nothing more than an awful deposit intrusted to his charge, for the use or abuse of which a strict account must be one day rendered to their Almighty Giver.

3 Blessed be our God, and the Father of our Lord  
Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies and the God of  
4 all consolation, who comforts us in all our tribula-  
tion, so that we may in our turn comfort our brethren  
in their manifold affliction, by that same comfort  
which we have received as our own consolation from  
5 God. For as we are called to participate abundantly  
in the afflictions of Christ our Saviour, so does the  
divine support also which we have through him  
6 abound in us; recollecting that if we do suffer tri-  
bulation, it is for your comfort and salvation, the  
working out of which is forwarded by your patience  
under the same class of trials by which we ourselves  
are afflicted:—and that, if we are strengthened by  
that support which is from above, it is also for your  
spiritual encouragement, and the forwarding of your  
7 eternal welfare. Our confidence therefore in your  
perseverance in the faith is unshaken, knowing, as we  
do, that, as you are joint partakers in our sorrows,  
so you share also in the same divine consolation  
8 with ourselves. My brethren, I do not wish to con-  
ceal from you the persecutions which we have  
recently experienced in Asia, which have pressed  
most fearfully upon us, even beyond our strength  
to endure, and to the imminent peril of our lives;  
9 but we were allowed by God's providence to fall  
into this danger and total helplessness in our own  
resources, in order that feeling our own weakness  
we might learn more implicitly to repose our trust  
upon his protecting aid, who is able to raise the  
10 dead to life; and who has rescued us from this  
grievous peril of our lives, and even now holds his  
guardian arm over us; as we are humbly assured  
he will still continue to do during the remainder of

our course. And do you, my brethren, meanwhile 11  
aid us with your prayers before the throne of grace,  
that having brought down mercy and support upon  
us by your common petitions, you may with one  
voice return God thanks for the protection afforded  
by Him to us, through your intercession.

It is indeed, my brethren, no small cause of 12  
exultation in these my tribulations, that looking into  
my own breast I can confidently assert that the  
whole course of my converse with mankind, and  
more especially during my apostleship to yourselves,  
has been in the pure and simple spirit of the Christian  
faith, not compromising my doctrine in order to  
make it assimilate with the speculations of earthly  
wisdom, but preaching the merciful dispensations of  
God, as displayed through Christ; and that only.  
Accordingly, nothing which you will find in these 13  
my Epistles, will be in any degree at variance with  
those great truths which you have already read and  
apprehended, and in the due apprehension of which  
you will, I trust, continue to the latest moment of  
your lives: a hope which I the more confidently 14  
entertain, from having occasionally heard that you  
boast of the advantages which you have received  
from my ministry; as I hope hereafter to make  
my boast of you, when I produce you to my blessed  
Saviour on the great day of judgment as the glorious  
fruit of my spiritual labours upon the earth.

It was under this earnest anxiety for your welfare 15  
that I proposed some time ago to pay you a double  
visit, one in my way to Macedon, and another on 16  
my return from thence, in order that you might  
have a second opportunity of profiting by my in-  
structions, hoping that afterwards you might be

induced to accompany me on some part of my  
17 journey towards Judea. Now do not imagine that  
in having abandoned this intention I have acted  
from fickleness or caprice; or that from any selfish  
motive I determine upon one day what I abandon  
18 on the following. I am not, as God who knows my  
heart, can bear witness, a person who can change  
his "yes" into "no," or "no" into "yes," without  
19 due consideration and sufficient cause. The holy  
doctrine which I, as well as Silvanus and Timothy,  
have taught among you, was not, as your own  
recollection will testify, of this light and unsteady  
20 character, but one and the same consistent whole;  
what I affirmed from the first respecting God's pro-  
mises being affirmed by me to the last, my uniform  
and single object being the establishment of his  
21 veracity, and the furtherance of his glory. And  
God has borne testimony to my ministry by con-  
firming us in one common faith in Christ, and giving  
22 us the unction of his Holy Spirit, sealing us as his  
own peculiar property, and pouring the pledge of  
23 his love, his divine grace, into our hearts. My real  
motive for not coming at the time I proposed (and  
I appeal to God, as my soul shall answer it, for  
the truth of this assertion,) was that I might spare  
your feelings after the chiding tone in which I have  
24 been compelled to write to you. For I do not wish  
to appear to exercise my authority over you more  
harshly than my duty requires, but rather to be con-  
sidered as a fellow-labourer with you for the attain-  
ment of that joy which is the result of a stedfast  
faith in God's promises; for it is by faith alone that  
we stand firm in this our present state of trial.  
2 Now my anxious wish was that I should not take

another journey to you at a moment when, after what had recently passed between us, a meeting could not be otherwise than painful; for if I afflict 2 you unnecessarily, how can I look to you in my own afflictions for that consolation which I have been the cause of your wanting for yourselves? I thought it 3 therefore more expedient to put my censures and remonstrances upon paper and forward them to you, rather than to come to you at that moment in person, that I might not diminish the joy of my visit, whenever it shall take place, by mixing up with it the exercise of a necessary, though truly unpleasant, duty: being fully assured, that of all my well-wishers there are none who more cordially participate in my joys, whenever I can procure them thus pure and unmixed, than yourselves. And it was accord- 4 ingly with sincere agony and anguish of heart, and with a profusion of tears, that I addressed to you in my former Epistle, the severe admonition which you have received; and which so far from being suggested by any bitter feeling on my part, was in reality but the result of the anxious desire which I wish you to be assured that I entertain for your welfare.

With regard to the person <sup>1</sup> then whose conduct 5 provoked from me this strong and severe remonstrance, give him to understand that the pain which he caused to me was not so much upon my own account as upon yours, as it obliged me in some degree to extend my censure from him singly to certain other individuals amongst yourselves. As however 6

<sup>1</sup> The incestuous person alluded to in chap. v. of the first Epistle.

he has shown a proper contrition and submission to the wholesome discipline of the Church, let the punishment which has already been inflicted be considered sufficient for what has taken place ; and now accordingly, that he may not be borne down with deeper affliction than may be requisite for the purpose of reformation, let it be your endeavour to show to him such returning regard on your parts, and such commiseration, as his repentance seems to require. From this time then receive him, as heretofore, with love and kindness. I had also another motive in addressing you with so much earnest severity, and that was, that I might have proof of the readiness of your obedience to that spiritual authority with which I am entrusted. Be assured, however, that where you feel disposed to show forgiveness in cases like the present, I am no less disposed to do the same ; and in so doing act, as I trust, under the authority of Christ, for your spiritual edification, and in the hope of defeating the artifices of Satan : that we may not, either by undue severity or undue remissness, (for we know by how many ways he assails us,) give him any advantage against us <sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> There is much wisdom as well as good feeling in this observation of the apostle. The great aim of a Christian teacher should be rather to entice the wanderer back to the path of duty by gentle and kind expostulation, than to compel him into it by mere severity of discipline. The ill-judging but well-intentioned austerity of many truly good men has in this respect done occasionally serious injury to the interests of religion, and afforded a cause of triumph to its impugnors. Look where we will into the Holy Scriptures, we find them to consist more of exhortation than of reproof ; of promises than of threats. It is true indeed that

Now after my arrival at Troas with the intention 12 of preaching the Gospel of Christ, and where a favourable opportunity appeared to have been afforded me by the Lord for so doing, not finding my brother 13 Titus there, I could not restrain my anxiety to meet with him; and accordingly, taking leave of my friends in that place, I departed for Macedon. And thanks be to God who, wherever I go, makes 14 me to triumph in the cause of Christ, and who diffuses in every country through which I pass the sweet fragrance of the knowledge of his gracious dispensations; for I am in my ministry the sweet 15 fragrance of Christ to God, both in those whom I may be the means of saving, and in those who perish; to the latter, a fragrance terminating indeed 16 in death, to the former, a fragrance of immortality. For so arduous a ministry, who will dare to presume upon the sufficiency of his own natural powers? As for myself, I dare not, as many others have 17 done, adulterate, by a spirit of carnal accommodation, the pure word of God; but I preach it in truth and simplicity in Christ, as I received it from God, and with a full consciousness that his eye is now upon me, and that I shall one day render to him

the latter are never withheld where necessary, but it cannot be denied that the main character of the inspired volume is a predisposition to appeal in the first instance to our affections and good feelings. No follower of Christ should for a moment forget the beautiful metaphorical delineation of the character of our great Master, as given by the prophet Isaiah. "He shall feed his flock like a shepherd: he shall gather the lambs with his arm, and carry them in his bosom, and shall gently lead those that are with young." (Isaiah xl. 11.)



3 an account of my labours. Think not that in speaking thus of my own ministry, I mean to make an undue parade of my own exertions in the cause of the Gospel. With regard to you, I certainly can stand in no need at this moment of such a mode of recommending myself, as my past services may well stand me in lieu of any letter of recommenda-  
2 tion to you, or from you. The conversions which I worked while I stayed among you are my best letters of recommendation, letters deeply inscribed upon the tablets of my own heart, and known and  
3 read by all the world. Yourselves, I repeat, are my best letters of recommendation, a letter written by Christ himself, and entrusted to my charge; a letter written, not with ink but with the Spirit of the living God, and that, not on tablets of stone,  
4 but on the fleshly tablets of the heart. This legitimate boast, therefore, I have through Christ before  
5 God. Not indeed that I presume to attribute any success which may have attended my endeavours to my own natural strength; on the contrary, I acknowledge that I owe my sufficiency to the free  
6 mercy of God; who has made me an effective instrument in the ministry of the new covenant; a covenant, not like the former one given to Moses, of literal and adequate obedience to minute injunctions, but of spiritual righteousness: for the law of literal obedience is as a snare which leads to death; but the covenant of the Spirit is a law which re-  
7 stores to life. If then the promulgation of that law of literal righteousness, whose consequence is death, a law engraven upon mere stone, was still accompanied with such a display of divine glory, that, as we are told, the children of Israel could not look

stedfastly on the face of Moses, because of the glorious radiance of his countenance, (which radiance however was doomed to pass away, as was also that very ceremonial law itself,) shall not the promulgation of the law of spiritual righteousness be attended with a far more intense display of glory? For if the ministry of a covenant of condemnation (for such the Mosaic covenant practically was) made its first appearance in glory, assuredly much more shall the ministry of a covenant of justification and redemption excel in glory; (in fact the glory of the former is overpowered and quenched in the far superior glory of the latter;) and surely if the perishable law of Moses was glorious, the imperishable law of Christ shall be far more exceedingly and more permanently glorious.

With this solemn conviction of the paramount importance of my mission, I preach, as I have just now observed, these divine truths in simplicity, without guile or concealment, not acting like Moses, who spread a veil over his face, as a type of that dark and enigmatical covenant which he announced: (a veil which his countrymen wear upon their understanding to this very moment during the reading of the promises of the Old Testament<sup>1</sup>; a veil which Christ has taken away from those who believe him, but which yet even now obscures the perception of the Jewish nation when the law of Moses is read to them;—yet let them turn to the Lord, and that

<sup>1</sup> The apostle, in this passage, appears to intend an allusion to the custom which still prevails among the worshippers in the Jewish Synagogues, of wearing veils upon their faces during the reciting of the Book of the Law.

17 veil shall be withdrawn ; to that Lord, I mean, who  
is the Spirit, and not the mere external form, of  
holiness, and where the Spirit of holiness is, there  
also is freedom from the vexatious slavery of ritual  
18 obedience :) but, on the contrary, without veil or  
concealment, yet bearing, like Moses, upon my face  
the reflected glory of the Lord, I proceed onward on  
my glorious office, after the pattern of my blessed  
Redeemer himself, and under the infallible guidance  
of his Holy Spirit.

4 Bearing this sublime commission, and relying  
upon that superintending Providence which has  
guided me in time past, and still protects me, I  
faint not at the prospect of the difficulties which the  
2 world may throw in my path ; but renouncing the  
secret ways of impurity, and the craft of carnal  
wisdom, and without compromising the pure word  
of the Gospel in conformity to human prejudices,  
I recommend the plain doctrine of truth to the con-  
sciences of my hearers, having the all-seeing eye of  
3 God as a witness to my sincerity. It is to the  
unawakened and hardened understanding only that  
this glorious dispensation fails of its effect, and  
remains still a tissue of dark and unprofitable  
4 mystery ; to those only, in whom the god of this  
world has darkened their apprehension in wilful  
disbelief, so as to prevent the light of the glorious  
Gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, from  
pouring its illuminating influence into their hearts.  
5 For it is not myself that I preach, nor any doctrine  
of merely human invention, but the word of our  
common Lord Jesus Christ, in whose ministry I,  
with the other apostles, are as your servants to  
6 help you forward to salvation ; that same Almighty

Power, who said, "Let there be light, and there was light," having graciously condescended to pour the sunshine of his knowledge into our benighted hearts, to lead us, and you through our means, to the contemplation of his glory, in the immediate presence of the Lord Jesus. And if this mighty treasure<sup>7</sup> has been lodged by him, as we humbly feel it has been, in base and earthly vessels, it was that the excellence of his divine power might thereby be rendered more manifest by the meanness of the instruments which he has made available for the accomplishment of his purpose. Feeling then at the<sup>8</sup> same moment my own weakness, yet in whose service I am engaged, though hardly pressed on every side, I falter not; though apparently helpless, I despond not; though meeting with the world's per-<sup>9</sup>secution, I abandon not my hope in him who is able to rescue me; and though cast down, give not up the contest in despair; bearing for the present in<sup>10</sup> my perishable body that suffering even unto death to which Christ himself submitted, in the hope that the glorious immortality to which God raised him up may hereafter be accomplished in myself also. And thus in my present life I submit daily to the<sup>11</sup> perils and agony of death itself, that that better life which was earned for us by Christ may be made manifest in this my mortal flesh. But that which<sup>12</sup> is at this moment death to me, will, under God's blessing, be salvation and immortality to you. Wherefore, as the Psalmist exclaimed in the fulness<sup>13</sup> of his faith, "I believed, and therefore have I spoken:" such also is my language; I too believe, and believing, will give utterance to my faith; being well assured, that he who raised up the Lord<sup>14</sup>

Jesus from the grave, will also raise up and place me together with you, before his judgment-seat.

15 It is for your sakes then, my brethren, that I endure my present afflictions, in order that God's mercy being extended to many through my ministry, may cause the thanksgivings of many to ascend up

16 to him, in unceasing praise and gratitude. Wherefore I shrink not from the difficulties of my laborious office, feeling that however my external carnal nature may be wasted in the enterprise, my better and spiritual nature is but the more and more

17 invigorated: and knowing that these trifling temporal afflictions work out for me an immense and

18 overpowering recompense of eternal glory; whilst I look, not to the visible things of this transitory world, but to the invisible things of that which is to come. For those things which are visible to our mortal senses are, like them, perishable; but those

5 which are invisible are eternal. For of this I am fully assured, that if this my earthly tabernacle of flesh were destroyed, I have still in reserve an imperishable building, not made with hands, but the creation of God himself, prepared for me in the

2 heavens. Wherefore, whilst we continue in this our mortal covering, we groan and impatiently look

3 forward to that eternal and heavenly mansion, that we may be clothed with it, and so may not be left

4 bare and destitute: for in this our mortal covering we groan, not from an impatience of existence, and a desire of annihilation, but, on the contrary, from an anxious desire to put on a better covering, and that our mortality may be converted into immor-

5 tality. And he who has instilled this eager longing in us is God himself, who has given us, even in this

life, the gift of his Holy Spirit as an earnest that we shall not be disappointed of this sublime expectation. With such a substantial ground for our hope, 6 and being assured that so long as we are resident in our present mortal bodies we are in banishment from God, (for our desires dwell not upon the visible 7 things of this world, but upon those purer objects which at present we can only descry by the eye of faith,) our earnest longing is to be released from our 8 present mortal condition, and to be resident with the Lord. Meanwhile our unremitting endeavour 9 is, whether in banishment from him, or resident with him, that we may be accepted by him. For 10 we know that we must all of us appear before the tribunal of Christ, in order that each of us may receive his remuneration according to the works which he shall have done in this life, whether they shall have been good or evil.

Looking forward then to this awful day of divine 11 retribution, I do my endeavour to bring over my fellow men to the path of salvation, acquitting myself, by the earnestness of my zeal, as a faithful servant to God, as I trust that your own consciences can also bear witness of me. For I wish 12 not to boast of my own exertions, but that you, experiencing my unremitting anxiety for your welfare, may have reason to boast of me as your efficient minister in the presence of my impugnors. You think perhaps the impetuosity of my zeal ex- 13 cessive: be it so: for it is for God's service: you wonder at my deliberate and unwearied perseverance:—it is for your salvation. In this I but imitate 14 the excessive love of Christ for mankind; recollecting, that as he in his mercy died for all of us, so we

15 are all dead to this world in him: and as his death was incurred to give us life, so that life ought to be entirely devoted to the service of him who thus  
16 died and rose again on our account. From this moment then all inferior and earthly considerations are absorbed in this one great consideration; this world has become to us as nothing, and eternity as every thing. That blessed Redeemer whom some of us have known according to the flesh, is no longer a  
17 suffering, but a glorified Saviour; and as he has resumed his glorified nature, so are we, his servants and followers, transformed into new creatures; the deadliness of our former condition has passed away, and a new æra under a new dispensation has com-  
18 menced. This is the great work which God has wrought for us, in reconciling us to himself through the meritorious expiation of Jesus Christ; and we the apostles are his ministers, to declare unto man-  
19 kind this blessed doctrine of reconciliation; proclaiming that "the divine Essence in the person of Christ has reconciled the world to himself, no longer imputing to them their former trespasses: and that we the apostles are his appointed messengers to convey the intelligence of this merciful dispensation."  
20 Coming then to you as Christ's own ambassadors, and speaking to you as in God's own person, we implore you, in the name of Christ who died for you,  
21 be reconciled to God; to that merciful God who made him who never committed sin a sacrifice for sin on our account, that we sinners might through his  
6 redemption stand pure and holy in his sight. We then, as fellow-labourers in his ministry, most earnestly implore you, brethren, that we may not call you in vain to the acceptance of this covenant of

mercy. Recollect, we beseech you, the words of the 2 prophet Isaiah, (Isaiah xlix. 8.) "I have heard thee in a favourable season: and in the day of salvation I have assisted thee." Brethren, this *present* moment is the favourable season: this *present* day, if you will avail yourselves of it, is the day of salvation. We call unto you, as God's own appointed 3 ministers, anxious for your salvation, and anxious also that, by the earnestness of our endeavours, and the blamelessness of our conduct, we may be found to have acted worthily of our apostolical commission. In all things accordingly, to the utmost of 4 our power, we have striven to prove ourselves the faithful servants of him whose ministers we are:—in patience; in afflictions; in dangers; in destitution; in scourgings; in imprisonments; in popular violence; in toils; in sleeplessness; in hunger:—by purity of heart; by sobriety of judgment; 6 by equanimity; by that holiness of disposition which God's grace can alone communicate; by sincere love to all men; by preaching the word of truth; 7 by the display of miraculous gifts; by putting on the whole armour of righteousness on the right hand and on the left;—through honour, and through 8 disgrace; through good report, and through evil report:—as obscure individuals, yet exposed to public observation; as daily incurring the danger of 9 our lives, yet escaping from the hands of our enemies: as persecuted, but not killed; as in afflictions, yet filled with joy; as poor, yet communicating riches to many; as having nothing, and yet possessing all things. O Corinthians, my tongue 11 has not been silent, nor the feelings of my heart cold, when your salvation was at stake: if there 12



has been any deficiency of zeal amongst you, that deficiency has been from you, and not from myself.

13 Let then, my beloved children, let that zeal which I have manifested for your welfare be reflected back

14 from yourselves. Continue not, I beseech you, as heretofore, in unseemly and inexpedient community of intercourse with the calumniators of our faith. What sympathy can righteousness have with profaneness? what fellowship or intercourse can light

15 have with darkness; what concord can Christ have with Belial; or what common hope can the believer

16 entertain with the unbeliever? how, without profanation, can the<sup>1</sup> temple of God be placed in contact with an idol? for recollect that you yourselves are the temple of God, as his own assertion will bear witness; (Leviticus xxvi. 11, 12.) “I will dwell among them,” says he, “and will walk among them; and I will be their God, and they shall be

17 my people.” Wherefore, as says the prophet Isaiah, (Isaiah lii. 11.) “Come out from among them, and be ye separated from them, saith the Lord, and touch no unclean thing; and I will receive you.”

18 And if you will do so, then you may be assured, that the promise which God made to David will be realized upon yourselves; “I will be unto you a Father, and you shall be unto me sons and daughters.”

7 Wherefore, looking forward to the fulfilment of these divine promises, let us, my beloved brethren, cleanse ourselves both in body and spirit from every thing which may contaminate, making ourselves pure and holy in the fear of the true God.

<sup>1</sup> See the first Epistle to the Corinthians, chap. viii.

Receive me then, brethren, as one who has faithfully performed the work required of him to the best of his ability. I have wronged no man: I have misled no man; I have defrauded no man. In making this boast I mean not to insinuate any thing to your disparagement; for I have already assured you of the place which you hold in my heart, and that I am prepared to live and die together with you: on the contrary, great is my confidence in, much my boast of, the sincerity of your faith, which has been no small joy and consolation to me in the midst of my late sufferings. For my whole stay in Macedon was one continued series of unintermitting afflictions from persecutions externally, and internal apprehensions. But that God, who comforts those who are in calamity, sent me consolation, first, in the society of Titus, and secondly, by the gratifying account which he gave me of your spiritual welfare, of your anxious wish to see me, your contrition for those faults which I had remarked in your past conduct, and your earnest desire to be reinstated in my good opinion; all which was a source of sincere pleasure to me for your sake. I cannot therefore regret, though the necessity was painful to me at the moment, that I was induced to write to you a severe admonition: on the contrary I rejoice in the circumstance, not because I was obliged to give you pain for a moment, but because that momentary pain was a holy sorrow leading to repentance; a holy sorrow commendable in the sight of God, and disarming me from the exercise of that severity of discipline which is entrusted to me. For that sorrow which is commendable in the sight of God leads to salvation through

a repentance not to be repented of: but the sorrow which is produced by the carnal and corrupt motives  
11 of this world leads to death. Accordingly, reflect a little upon what have been the blessed effects of this laudable sorrow which my censures have produced in you: what eagerness, for instance, to convince me of the sincerity of your good intentions; what zealous vindication of your motives; what self-reproach; what fear of my ill opinion of you; what anxiety to be reinstated in my affections; what honest emulations; what earnestness of reproof against the party whom I had required of you to censure! Throughout the whole of this painful investigation you have clearly shown yourselves to  
12 have had no guilty participation in the criminality which I denounced to you. Although therefore one object of my admonition may have been the correction of the offender, and the avenging an injured person, still my great and foremost motive, and which I have most satisfactorily accomplished, was the entire vindication of yourselves in the sight of one another, and the manifestation of your inno-  
13 cence before God. Hence it was that the consolation which I derived in the midst of my afflictions from the knowledge of your exemplary conduct was so truly gratifying; and much also was that gratification enhanced by what I heard of your kind reception of Titus, and of the general good feeling  
14 displayed by you all towards him. For your conduct in this respect has completely borne out all that I had said to him in your favour, so that not only my communications directly with you, but also my report to him of you, have in all respects  
15 been found consistent with the fact. His own kind

feeling towards you also is of the most fervent character, in consequence of what he witnessed during his stay at Corinth of your ready obedience to my injunctions; and of the becoming awe and apprehension with which you received him. I sincerely therefore congratulate myself upon the well-grounded confidence which I have in all of you.

And now, brethren, I am certain that you will be glad to hear of the grace and mercies of God which have been poured upon the Churches in Macedon: how they have borne up under much temporal affliction with holy joy and patience: and in the midst of their own many wants and privations have still found the means of displaying their beneficence in relieving the wants of others; and that, without any solicitation on my part, not only to the fair extent of their means, but, as I can fairly vouch to have been the fact, beyond them. They accordingly requested me with much earnestness to take upon myself the charge of receiving and distributing amongst our poor brethren in Jerusalem the contribution which they had raised; with a truly Christian spirit, far exceeding what I had previously expected, giving themselves up implicitly to God's service, and to my spiritual direction as bearing God's commission. In consequence of this exemplary zeal of theirs I have desired Titus, as he has already mentioned the thing to you, so finally to excite you to a like emulation in works of charity: that, as you already abound in the other Christian excellencies, in faith, in apprehension, in knowledge, and in every good pursuit, and in your affection to myself, you may also show how largely you partake of this virtue also. I do not urge this as a

positive demand upon you, but because I am anxious that you should not be left behind others in the career of beneficence, and also not being quite incurious to make this practical appeal to your sincerity on the subject of your professed deference  
9 to my admonitions. You know, my brethren, all that our blessed Lord Jesus Christ did in his mercy for ourselves: that being Lord of the universe he submitted to be poor for your sake; in order that  
10 through his poverty you might be made rich. In accordance with that great example I cannot but press upon you my decided opinion of the expediency of your carrying into effect at an early opportunity that contribution which you will recollect was agitated and discussed amongst you with some appearance of zeal so long ago as last year.  
11 Now then let me urge you to carry that zeal into effect; that, as you have professed the inclination, you may also proceed to the performance according  
12 to your means. I say according to your means, because, where they are wanting, the sincerity of the  
13 wish is quite sufficient for your acquittal; for I am far from desiring that in the attempt to remove the pinch of want from others you should bring it upon  
14 yourselves<sup>1</sup>. All I am anxious for is a mutual

<sup>1</sup> The calm good sense contained in the admonition here given, and the cautious solicitude displayed by St. Paul in verses 20, 21, of this chapter, to place his own motives respecting the very delicate subject of a pecuniary contribution, which was to be entrusted to his management, beyond the possibility of suspicion, are worthy of observation; particularly as they afford a remarkable contrast with the vigorous exertion of spiritual discipline which immediately afterwards we find him prepared to adopt

reciprocity of kindness in meeting each other's necessities; that, as your abundance is now perhaps available for relieving the distress of your poor brethren in Jerusalem, so the time may come when their abundance may be called in to relieve in its turn any occasional poverty which may befall yourselves. As it is written of the Israelites when they gathered manna in the wilderness, "He that had gathered much had no superfluity, and he that had gathered little had no lack." (Exodus xvi. 18.)

I thank God that he has given to Titus on this occasion the same zeal with which I myself am actuated; accordingly the exhortation which he received from me on this subject was quite superfluous, as he set out entirely of his own accord for

if necessary, and with the candid avowal of his own paramount claims to the foremost dignity of an apostle. We cannot help perceiving also from the whole tenor of his exhortation, that the charitable donation under discussion had not been undertaken with that alacrity of zeal by his Corinthian disciples which, for so many reasons, he had a right to expect. The measure had now been in agitation a twelvemonth, and had even been made a matter of boast in the other Christian Churches, yet the actual collection was scarcely yet begun at the time of the date of this Epistle. Still however the earnestness of the writer betrays him not for a single moment into any uncharitable misconstruction of this delay, nor into any expression of disappointment inconsistent with his uniform urbanity and conciliation of language and sentiment. The tone of feeling expressed in the whole passage to the end of chapter 9, is beautiful in the highest degree, and affords a striking practical illustration of the attractiveness of the Christian character when sincerely adopting the gentle and unobtrusive morality inculcated throughout the Gospel.

18 Corinth to arrange the matter with you. I have also  
sent with him on the same mission another of our  
brethren whose praise in the ministry of the Gospel  
19 is spread abroad through all the Churches: and  
who also has been appointed by the Churches my  
fellow traveller and assistant in the management and  
distribution of the fund which has been collected  
to the honour of our Saviour, and the credit of your  
20 liberality; as I was most anxious that no possible  
blame might attach to me with regard to my stew-  
21 ardship of this large sum, and that I might stand,  
not only pure in conscience before our Lord and  
Saviour, but also above all suspicion in the eyes of  
22 mankind. I have also sent along with them another  
of our brethren, the sincerity of whose zeal I have  
in many instances experienced, and who is if possible  
more zealous on the present occasion from the con-  
fidence which, in consequence of my representation,  
he has in your good feelings.

23 Of Titus then my recommendation to you is, that  
he is my assistant and fellow labourer in preaching  
the Gospel among you: of the two other brethren,  
that they bear the commission of the Churches, and  
24 that they do honour to the cause of Christ. Justify  
then by your kind reception of them the expectation  
of the Churches whose messengers they are, and the  
favourable sentiments which they have imbibed from  
me respecting you.

9 With regard indeed to the proposed contribution  
for our poor brethren in Jerusalem, I feel that any  
2 exhortations of mine would be unnecessary: for I  
am fully aware of the readiness of your liberality, of  
which in fact I have taken an opportunity of speak-  
ing with approbation whilst in Macedon, having

informed them, what you know to be true, that yourselves with the rest of Achaia were commencing this work of charity a full year ago; and the consequence was that this mention of your intention was the cause of exciting a similar zeal in others. Still 3 however, with this implicit confidence in your good intentions, I have thought it more prudent to send my three brethren to you, lest, by any accident, the expectation which I have raised respecting your intentions should be disappointed; and that you may show yourselves as ready as I have boasted of you that you are. For it would be extremely 4 mortifying to myself, (to say nothing about the discredit to yourselves,) should the Macedonians who may possibly accompany me upon my visit to Corinth, find you unprepared with your contribution, and that I had spoken thus largely of your liberality without sufficient reason. I therefore thought it 5 necessary to urge my three brethren to be at Corinth before my arrival there, and to contrive that the donation which I have given the Church reason to expect from you, may be ready against my coming, that it may appear to be a willing effort of kindness on your part, and may not seem to be wrung from you against your inclinations by any urgency from myself. Meanwhile remember, that 6 "he who sows sparingly, shall reap also sparingly; and he who sows bountifully, shall reap also bountifully." Let every man however give according to 7 what he is sincerely willing to do from his heart; not against his will and as a matter of compulsion; for God loves a cheerful and free giver. And that 8 God who reads the secrets of the heart, is able in recompense to pour his mercies abundantly upon



yourselves, so that having a sufficiency of all earthly comfort, you may have the means of exercising this, 9 with every other good and Christian work : according to the assurance of the Psalmist, (Psalm cxii. 9.) “ he hath dispersed, he hath given to the poor : his righteousness endureth for ever ; his horn shall be exalted with honour.”

10 May he then, who gives the seed to the sower, both give you bread to eat, and multiply the produce of the seed which you sow, increasing in you at the same time in like proportion the fruits of 11 good works ; that you may be rich in the good things of this life, and may dispense those riches with liberality ; thus causing his own gifts to return back to himself in sentiments of thanksgiving and 12 gratitude. For it is not only the relief of our distressed Christian brethren which is the blessed fruit of these charitable exertions, but the harmonious concord of grateful hearts also which is thus made 13 to ascend to the Giver of all good ; whilst the poor, whose distresses you have relieved, praise God as well for your perfect adoption of the precepts of our blessed Saviour, as for your unaffected and cordial benevolence displayed to themselves, and to 14 all others in like necessity : and offer up their prayers for you in the fulness of their hearts, for that display of Christian grace thus manifested in 15 your conduct. Blessed be God for this his unspeakable gift.

#### SECTION II.

The remainder of this Epistle contains the apostle's eloquent and indignant vindication of his own spiritual jurisdiction, against the malice of his opposers in the Church of Corinth, with a statement of

his past exertions and sufferings in the cause of the Gospel, and of some miraculous communications which he had experienced in the earlier part of his ministry.

My brethren, I am not ignorant that it has been<sup>10</sup> said of me that my personal demeanour to you in your presence is meek and humble, but that my epistolary admonitions written to you in my absence from you are in a commanding tone of authority. Now I most earnestly entreat, in the name of the<sup>2</sup> humble and merciful Jesus, those my impugnors, who by making this charge would insinuate that my conduct is regulated by worldly and temporizing motives, that they will not compel me to repel this accusation in the most effectual manner, by adopting upon my arrival a harsher and more severe tone than my own inclinations would lead me to exercise towards them. Be assured that, however<sup>3</sup> worldly may be the feelings and passions of many with whom I am in collision, the weapons of my own warfare will always be of a spiritual character, not mere carnal implements, but such as are en-<sup>4</sup> dued by God himself with strength to pull down the fortresses of human policy: such as are powerful<sup>5</sup> to overthrow the strong holds of specious and carnal wisdom, and every proud feeling which elevates itself against God's revealed dispensations, and to bring every thought of the human heart into captivity to the obedience of Christ; and which, even<sup>6</sup> when your obedience shall be complete, will still be endued with a wholesome discipline to prevent any future wanderings into which you may deviate,<sup>7</sup> and to correct your backslidings. Why then draw unfair inferences from my personal demeanour, as contrasted with the tone of my writings? Let

me entreat those who may have thought thus uncharitably of me, and yet who probably flatter themselves that they are sincere servants of Christ, to give me at least the same credit which they give themselves, and believe that I am as sincerely devoted to my blessed Saviour as they are. Nay, if I were to assert of myself something more than this, and tell them plainly that I possess an authority over them which I have received from Christ himself, (for your edification, I admit, and not for your destruction,) I should not in thus boasting exceed the literal truth. Away then for the future with this invidious charge, that I presume upon my absence, and venture upon a higher tone of authority in my letters than I dare exert when resident among you. "His letters, forsooth, are severe and magisterial, but his person<sup>1</sup>, when amongst us, is humble, and his speech subdued and contemptible." Let those who have made this unfair remark be assured, that authoritative as my letters have been, such I can also be in person where expedience may require it. It is true I am not one of those self-conceited persons who measuring themselves by a standard set up in their own minds, presume upon an excellence which they do not possess, and form in consequence a mistaken notion of their

<sup>1</sup> It is well known that early tradition agrees with this passage in describing the personal appearance of St. Paul as unprepossessing. The apocryphal book of the Acts of Paul and Thecla gives the following portrait of him, which may not improbably have been derived from more authentic sources. "Ἴδον δὲ τὸν ἄνδρα ἐρχόμενον, τὸν Παῦλον, μικρὸν τῷ μεγέθει, ψιλὸν τὴν κεφαλὴν, ἀγκύλον ταῖς κνήμαις, εὐκνημον, σύνοφρον, ἐπίρρινον.

own qualifications. Without lending myself to such 13  
vague and exaggerated delusions, still however I  
cannot but be conscious of the high ground which  
I occupy, nor can I avoid measuring my actual  
authority over you by the standard of that commis-  
sion which I hold from God himself; an authority  
be assured which is fully competent to reach to  
yourselves if occasion requires. Suppose not then 14  
that you lie beyond the reach of my legitimate  
superintendence: on the contrary, the right of  
authority over you which I possess is the natural  
consequence of my having been the first to bring  
you to the knowledge of the Gospel. In asserting 15  
this jurisdiction therefore, I am not presuming to  
reap the fruits of another man's labours; nay, I 16  
rather hope to extend my line still further, by  
preaching yet more successfully and extensively in  
your neighbourhood, and even in the countries which  
lie yet more remote; but am far from wishing to  
assume to myself either the credit, or the autho-  
rity due to the spiritual exertions of others, with  
which I have had no participation. If however we 17  
must, any of us, boast, let us boast in the Lord;  
for it is not the estimate which we may choose 18  
to form of ourselves, but that which is formed  
of us by God, which is the real measure of our  
value.

Bear then for a moment with my weakness, (for 11  
such you may call it if you please,) but still bear  
with it, if in reply to these undeserved accusations  
I state broadly and openly the claims upon you  
which I cannot but feel that I possess. For I am 2  
jealous of you as my own peculiar converts, on  
God's account; and am earnestly desirous to be able

to present you with my own hands as a pure and  
3 immaculate virgin to your husband Christ; and accordingly I cannot but feel anxious lest, as the serpent deceived Eve by his subtilty, so some false teacher may intrude himself into my place, and seduce your minds from the true simplicity of the  
4 Christian doctrine. Bear with me, I repeat; for, even were some other teacher to come amongst you, and to preach the faith of some other Jesus than of him whom I have revealed to you, and were you through his means to have received the gifts of some other spirit than of that which you have received, or to have heard another Gospel than that which you have heard, you would most assuredly  
5 bear with him; and in what single respect have I less claim upon your attention and deference than any even of the foremost of the true apostles?  
6 Grant that my utterance is uncouth and feeble:—still let me ask, has the knowledge which it has conveyed to you been equally so? far otherwisc. Am  
7 I a fit object for taunting remarks because I have spoken meekly to you when I might have presumed upon the authority of my office? because I have preached the Gospel gratuitously amongst you, when I might have demanded the maintenance of  
8 an apostle? You know, all of you, that I have submitted to receive from other Churches, what perhaps I was scarcely entitled to claim at their hands, the means of my support, in order that I  
9 might not prove burthensome to you. Nay, when I was resident among you, and was in absolute want, I encumbered none of you, but received the relief of my necessities from the brethren who arrived from Macedon; nor subjected any one indi-

vidual among yourselves to any expense on my own account, neither will I so subject any one of you in time to come: for, as the truth which is in 10 Christ can testify, no one shall rob me of this boast, that in the whole region of Achaia I have been, and will continue to be, chargeable to no man. Why 11 so? you will ask. Is it because I love you not? God knows to the contrary: but in adopting this 12 resolution, I do so that I may give no advantage ground to the seducers who have insinuated themselves amongst you, and would gladly draw invidious comparisons, if they might, between their conduct and my own. Be assured that these men, however 13 disinterested they may appear, have not your real benefit at heart, but are false apostles, deceitful workers, assuming the character of apostles of Christ; nor be surprised that such is the case: 14 Satan himself we know can assume upon occasion the appearance of an angel of light. Why then 15 are we to wonder if his agents can put on the external garb of the ministers of righteousness? but their end shall be according to their works.

I have said, bear with me, nor accuse me of 16 weakness, if I plainly state my legitimate claims to your attention; or rather let me say that, even at the risk of being accused of weakness in boasting of myself unnecessarily, I *will* state them broadly and explicitly. Well then; be it, if you please so 17 to call it, not the humble bearing of an apostle, but mere human folly and vanity in me to speak in my own commendation; yet if others, who possess 18 no real claim, will vaunt their own praises for the purpose of misleading you, let me, at least, on my own part state what I know of my own qualifica-

19 tions, for your spiritual benefit. Bear with me,  
I say, and well may I use that expression, when  
I recollect to what a degree, wise and sagacious as  
you believe yourselves to be, you still can bear with  
20 others. You can bear with them if they enslave  
you; you can bear with them if they devour you:  
—if they waste your property; if they raise them-  
selves against you; if they strike you in the face.  
21 I, on the contrary, am reproached by you as being  
humble and timid in your presence: and yet, if  
comparisons must be drawn, (I say again, call my  
boasting weakness if you think proper to do so,)  
I have rival claims to assert as forcible as theirs.  
22 They will tell you perhaps that they are Hebrews:—  
I answer, So am I. That they are Israelites:—So  
23 am I. That they are the ministers of Christ;—  
the boast on my part may savour of ostentation,  
but I deliberately assert that so am I also, and in a  
far superior, let me add in a far more painful,  
degree:—in labour far more abundant; in scourg-  
ings far beyond any suffering which has befallen  
them; in prisons more frequently; in imminent  
24 peril of death often: five times have I received the  
punishment of thirty-nine stripes from the Jewish  
25 authorities; thrice was I beaten with rods by order  
of the Roman magistrate; once was I stoned;  
thrice have I been shipwrecked; a whole day and  
26 night I have struggled in the sea: many and  
harassing have been my wanderings, and in them  
many my dangers from rivers; from robbers; from  
Jews; from Gentiles; in cities; in deserts; in the  
27 sea; from false brethren; much has been my toil  
and weariness, many my sleepless nights, great my  
hunger and thirst, frequent my sufferings from in-

sufficient food, from cold, from destitution ; in addition to all which let me mention, not the least part of my many labours, the daily care and anxiety connected with the superintendence of all the Churches. Who is there amongst all those for whose spiritual welfare I have made myself responsible, who is weak in conscience with whom I do not sympathize ? who burns with an holy zeal against the corruptions which surround us, and finds not in me a zealous coadjutor ?—If I must boast, let me at least boast of these my afflictions and weaknesses ; for in speaking of such there can be little unseemly vanity ; and in saying what I have now ventured to do of myself, God the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, he who is blessed for ever and ever, knows that I have not exaggerated the truth. In addition to this catalogue of sufferings, I may also state the recent circumstance, that the governor under king Aretas at Damascus kept the city with a guard of the Damascenes for the purpose of apprehending me, but I was let down the wall from a window in a basket, and escaped from his hands.

Be however these things as they may, to boast of my own sufferings in the cause of Christ may perhaps appear unseemly and ostentatious. Well then, let me content myself with relating some visions and revelations from our Saviour which have come within my own personal knowledge. I knew a man, a servant of Christ above fourteen years ago, who, (whether he was in the body at that time or out of the body I cannot tell ; God knows) was caught up into the third heaven : such a man I myself knew, (whether indeed this revelation befel



him in the body or out of the body I cannot presume to say, God knows,) who was caught up into paradise, and heard there unspeakable things beyond the power of human language to express. Of a man thus highly favoured I may and will boast without scruple, but of myself I will not venture to boast unless it be on the score of my infirmities. Yet even were I to boast of myself I might find abundant occasion for so doing, and yet not go beyond the truth; but I abstain, lest any one should deem of me beyond what he sees me to be, or hears respecting me. And in fact that the preternatural revelations with which I have been favoured might not buoy me up with undue confidence in myself, God inflicted upon me<sup>1</sup> a thorn in the flesh, an infirmity with which Satan has been allowed to torment me, in order that I might not become a slave to spiritual vanity and presumption. Against this afflicting visitation I earnestly besought God thrice in prayer, that it might be allowed to pass away from me: but the answer I received was,

<sup>1</sup> Much needless discussion has taken place for the purpose of ascertaining what was this thorn in the flesh of which the apostle here makes mention. It has been generally supposed to have been some bodily disease; but from his own assertion that it was counteracted by the support of the divine grace, it seems more natural to imagine that it must have been some intellectual or moral infirmity which it gave him much trouble to conquer. Be that however as it may, the candour of the avowal is a strong proof that the peculiar marks of the divine favour which he had received had not impaired that humility and self-abasement of disposition which form so indispensable an adjunct to a truly Christian character.

“My grace and support is sufficient for you; for my might is best displayed through the medium of human infirmities.” And accordingly, with this 10 satisfactory conviction, I will continue to boast, and to boast gladly, of my infirmities, that the power of my Redeemer may through them be manifested upon me. Therefore it is that I even exult in my afflictions and weaknesses; in the insults to which I am exposed; in the wants I experience; in the persecutions under which I suffer; in my destitution for the cause of Christ; for when I am naturally weak, then, by his aid, I am made strong. You 11 will, perhaps, again tell me that I am still boasting unduly of myself. If I am so, the blame is with you, and your unmerited neglect of me, which has obliged me thus against my will to obtrude my claims and services upon you: for you cannot but know that, weak and unworthy as I am of myself, still in spiritual gifts and the labours of my ministry I have been inferior to none of the very foremost apostles. You can from your own experience bear 12 witness of me, that in my person have been manifested all the tokens which denote a true apostle; I mean patient perseverance in the execution of my office, and the proofs of the divine grace as displayed in my spiritual gifts, and my miraculous powers. In fact, what single circumstance can yourselves 13 point out in which my conduct to you was less exemplary than that of the other apostles to the other Churches? Was it that I put you to no expense for my maintenance? If this was an injury to you, forgive me for it.

I am now on the point of making you my third 14 visit: and in so doing it is my intention still to

burthen you with no greater expense on my account than was the case during my residence with you on the two former occasions. For it is not your wealth I covet, but yourselves; and considering you as my children in the spirit, I feel that it is my duty to lay up wealth for you, and not yours to provide for  
15 me. And accordingly most cheerfully will I spend my substance, and myself, for the salvation of your souls; even though the immediate consequence of my love for you should be the sacrifice of even  
16 your affection for myself. I am aware indeed that some of my adversaries may attempt to assert that, although I have abstained from burthening you with expense on my own account, still my forbearance may have been the result of selfish and ambitious  
17 motives. To this I shall only reply, by asking whether, if not directly for myself, I have at any time indirectly made profit of you to serve a friend?  
18 I have recently, as you know, sent Titus on a mission to you, in company with another of our brethren. Have either of them made any profit of you? or have they not rather in all points acted with the same feeling and forbearance with myself,  
19 and walked entirely in my footsteps? Imagine not that I am again making a boast of my own merits, whilst replying to these unjust aspersions: I declare, in the presence of God, and of my blessed Saviour, that I am now speaking not upon my own account,  
20 but upon yours: for I am not without serious apprehensions that, if these unworthy jealousies are allowed to continue among you, my arrival may not improbably be really painful to all of us, and that a visit, intended by me in kindness, may end by proving to be one of wholesome severity: for

such it must be, if I find, as I have too much reason to expect, strifes, party animosities, ill will, quarrels, mutual reproaches, private slanders, ambitious emulations, and acts of open violence still prevalent among you: and if the pride which I felt in the 21 imagined success of my spiritual labours in your behalf is, by God's will, to receive a check, finding, as I much fear that I shall find, to my sorrow, many whose sins I have already been compelled to notice, still persevering without remorse or compunction in their former habits of uncleanness, and fornication, and lasciviousness. .

I am now, I repeat, on the point of visiting you, 13 for the third time; and accordingly I wish you previously to understand, that upon my arrival inquiry will be made into what misdemeanors may have occurred during my absence, and that in each case I shall proceed according as the fact shall be established by the testimony of two or three witnesses. I gave you notice on a former occasion, 2 and I now repeat it in writing as strongly as I could do were I actually present with you, that neither former offenders still persevering in sin, nor any others sinning in like manner, shall escape with impunity, when I commence my inquiry into your conduct.

You ask me what proof you have that Christ 3 addresses himself to you by me. Recollect that Christ's presence has been manifested among you, not weakly, but irresistibly by the display of signs and wonders: for we know, that although he once 4 submitted to be crucified in the weakness of the flesh, he now lives for ever by the power of God; and that in like manner, as we now are weak in

our mortal nature as his followers and servants, so we shall one day live together with him through the same divine power. I reply then to your question  
5 thus. Examine yourselves, and search whether you are firm in this faith. Are not your own feelings a sufficient criterion whether the Spirit of Christ really resides within yourselves? or am I to suppose you  
6 aliens from the divine grace? By the same test then, namely, by the spirit of faith and holiness which I may appear to possess through the grace of Christ, judge for yourselves whether or not I speak  
7 by his authority. One proof of the reality of my mission to you I trust indeed will never be wanting; that I mean which consists in the holiness and purity of your lives; a proof which I earnestly pray for, not on my own account, but on yours; not that I may be found to have been a true apostle, (for I am prepared to have my own intentions and conduct misconstrued,) but that you may be found to have  
8 comported yourselves as becomes Christians. In this be assured that I speak the truth in full sincerity.  
9 My most earnest rejoicing is in your spiritual welfare, even though the price be my own personal privations: and my first and foremost object at this  
10 moment is your reformation. It is therefore on that account only that I write thus warmly to you before my arrival, in the hope that I may be spared the necessity of adopting severe measures when we meet, and that the authority with which the Lord has entrusted me may be for your comfort and edification, and not for the purposes of punishment.

11 And now, my brethren, for the present adieu. Meanwhile amend yourselves; encourage one another in good works; abstain from your mutual

disensions, and live in peace one with another. So shall the God of love and peace take up his abode among you.

Greet one another with an holy kiss. 12

All the brethren in Christ salute you. 13

May the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, and the 14  
love of God, and the communion of the Holy Spirit,  
be with you all. Amen.

---

THE second Epistle to the Corinthians is more remarkable, as giving us an insight into the personal character and the inmost feelings of St. Paul, than as being the vehicle of any new scriptural truth, or as containing the exposition of any of the more mysterious topics of revelation. When however we recollect what in all cases is the force of example upon our habits, and remember that the example here afforded to us is not that of an ungifted individual like ourselves, but of an inspired apostle, who had, on one occasion at least, been admitted to a glimpse of the unrevealed wonders of the other world, and observe in the interesting character here depicted all that we can imagine of Christian heroism and moral elevation, combined with the most unassuming humility, the warmest and gentlest affections, the most polished urbanity of manners, and the most guileless simplicity of heart, we cannot but consider this Epistle, if less gratifying to our speculative curiosity, at all events as replete with spiritual gratification as any portion whatever of the sacred writings. And accordingly, to those persons who read the holy Scriptures for the great purpose of attaining to practical holiness, the composition now before us is replete with the most invaluable instruction. From the kind, yet earnest remonstrances of the apostle to his wayward disciples, the austere moralist may learn to temper his reproofs with Christian gentleness, and to make his exhortations more forcible by rendering them less repulsive : from

the example of his inflexibility on the great points of duty, the timid and wavering may study how to acquire steadiness of principle; and from his frank, yet unassuming avowal of the miraculous interpositions with which he has been favoured, the talented and highly gifted may be taught how to possess the blessings of which they may be inevitably conscious, with that humility which becomes persons who know from what source those faculties descend; whilst, from his unrepining patience under afflictions, from the consideration of which our flesh instinctively shrinks with dismay, Christians of all ages and conditions may learn how to blush at their own impatience under trials which appear as nothing when compared with those with which God permitted his great apostle to be proved.

THE  
EPISTLE OF PAUL  
TO THE  
GALATIANS.

---

VARIOUS dates have been assigned to the Epistle to the Galatians, some as early as the years of our Lord 48 and 49. But as the apostle speaks in it of his second journey to Jerusalem as a not very recent event, which journey did not take place till seventeen years after his conversion, and as that last event cannot be placed earlier than the year 35, it seems scarcely consistent to assign an earlier period for its composition than the year 53 or 54. It does not appear from what city this letter was sent to the Church to which it is addressed.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

PAUL, an apostle, not of men, neither by man, 1  
but by Jesus Christ and God the Father, who  
raised him from the dead ; and all the brethren who 2  
are with me, to the Churches of Galatia—grace be 3  
unto you, and peace, from God the Father, and  
from our Lord Jesus Christ, who gave himself to 4  
death for our sins, that he might deliver us from  
the present evil world, according to the will of God  
and our Father, to whom be glory for ever and ever. 5  
Amen.



The Epistle to the Galatians has allusion to a heresy, which under some form or other will probably continue to contaminate Christianity to the end of time; namely, that tendency so prevalent with timid and scrupulous minds, to take refuge in ritual expiations and the supposed merit of human works, as an auxiliary means of reconciliation with God, in addition to that afforded by the plenary atonement of Christ. The Church here addressed had received from its first founder, St. Paul, the great primary doctrine of "Christ crucified," as comprehending within itself the sum and substance of the Gospel dispensation: but we learn from this Epistle, that after his departure, other teachers of a more worldly and speculative character had introduced themselves into that community, and inculcated the necessity of the adoption of circumcision and other rites of the ceremonial law, as concurrent requisites for justification, scarcely less necessary than faith itself. The object of the apostle, accordingly, is to bring back his deluded followers to the primitive simplicity of their belief, and to denounce this dangerous doctrine as destructive of the singleness and purity of the Gospel truth; as derogatory from the all-sufficient merits of our Redeemer; and as teaching men to build their hopes of salvation upon a false and unsound foundation. When we recollect the strong inclination which ascetics in all ages, and under almost every form of religion, have displayed for that spurious righteousness which is sought after by the maceration of the body, ceremonial practices, and capricious forms of worship, we cannot be surprised at the degree of anxiety displayed by St. Paul to check in its commencement this destructive error. He too well knew the character of the human mind not to anticipate the vast labyrinth of superstition into which such principles have an inevitable tendency to lead their advocates. In fact, the history of Christianity in later times, not with reference to the Romish Church only, but in a vast multitude of individual cases without the pale of that community, has shown the extreme deceitfulness of this easily besetting sin, and how very narrow is the boundary to weak, but sensitive and devout minds, which separates religion from superstition; and with what eagerness such persons will take refuge from the alarms of conscience or the instinctive dread of death in other modes of relief than that which the mercy of Providence has appointed for us. Where such morbid apprehensions exist, it is difficult to persuade the sufferers that the access to the throne of mercy has been made so easy as Scripture assures us that it is, and that through the imputed righteousness of our Redeemer all may obtain admission who humbly and earnestly ask for it. It is, however, on the other hand, highly necessary to observe, that although the apostle expressly declares our salvation to depend entirely, absolutely, and exclusively upon the expiatory merits of Christ alone, he still in

this, as in his other Epistles, emphatically asserts the necessity of good works and of a holy life as the concomitant of a Christian profession, and the natural fruits of that faith which he inculcates. The rational and satisfactory principle upon which this inference is grounded must be self-evident to all those who know what Christianity really is; namely, that its object is not to supersede the necessity of human works, but to supply their deficiencies: as then the atonement of Christ was intended to stand in the place of that perfect obedience which from the inevitable infirmity of our nature we cannot but fail of attaining, it can never be pleaded by us as a release from that practicable obedience, and those works of piety, justice, and mercy, which, however inadequate as a means of salvation, are by the assistance of the divine grace at all events within our power to perform, and are therefore justly due as an indispensable sacrifice of gratitude to our Almighty Benefactor.

I cannot but wonder that you have so soon<sup>6</sup> turned away from the gracious call which you have received to the covenant of redemption by the mercy of Christ, and have betaken yourselves to another and an unsound view of God's dispensations. The cause of this unsteadiness on your part I con-<sup>7</sup>ceive to be the mistaken notions of some false teachers who have risen up among you, who are desirous by their own partial interpretations to suggest to you unreasonable doubts, and to pervert the original simplicity of the Gospel of Christ. Against such inaccurate views of the covenant of<sup>8</sup> salvation I now therefore send my most earnest protest; solemnly declaring, that "*if I myself, nay, if an angel from heaven, presume to teach any other Gospel than that which I have already preached to you, let such teacher be accursed.*" What I have<sup>9</sup> so earnestly assevered on a former occasion, that same I now solemnly repeat, "*if any man teach a doctrine at variance with that Gospel which you have already received, let him be accursed.*" Think<sup>10</sup> you that I will falsify and accommodate my doc-

trine to meet the perverted views of men, rather than earnestly inculcate that which I know to be the word of divine truth? that I will vilify Christ's own commission, and, adapting the holy truths of revelation to the prejudices of mankind, become  
11 their servant by ceasing to be his? I distinctly declare to you, my brethren, that the Gospel which  
12 I have preached is no human doctrine. I received it not at first from any human being, nor do I bear my commission from any mortal creature, but from an express revelation of Jesus Christ  
13 himself<sup>1</sup>. You all of you have heard the history of my early life at the time when I was a rigid professor of Judaism; how I was a most eager  
14 persecutor and destroyer of God's Church; and how in consequence I made myself a deep proficient in rabbinical knowledge beyond any other Jews of my own age, and became a zealous champion of all the traditions and comments engrafted by our  
15 fathers upon the law of Moses. But when it

<sup>1</sup> Those persons who are disposed to assert, that a good and moral life is in itself a sufficient means of salvation, and that where that exists there is no necessity for a minute attention to the peculiar dogmas of the Christian belief, would do well to study this solemn and impressive statement of St. Paul. He on the contrary well knew to what a degree a single false position in philosophy or religion will distort every subsequent inference of a mind which has once given admission to it; and that trifling and harmless as opinions upon seemingly abstract questions may appear to the unthinking, they are in reality the operative principles which mould the character of nations, and impress upon each successive generation of mankind its peculiar and distinctive tendency to improvement or deterioration.

pleased God in his own good time, having destined me to this office of my apostleship from my mother's womb, to reveal to me in his infinite mercy the 16 great scheme of redemption purchased by his Son, in order that I might preach it to the various Gentile nations<sup>1</sup>, I derived not my instructions on that occasion at second hand from flesh and blood, but 17 instead of going directly up to Jerusalem to commune with the other apostles, who had preached Christ from the first, I went away into Arabia, and afterwards returned from thence to Damascus: nor 18 did I go at all up to Jerusalem till after the expiration of three years, when I went to hold a conference with Peter, and remained there with him fifteen days: yet even then I saw no other of the 19 apostles, excepting only James our Lord's brother, (this account which I now give you, I solemnly 20 declare in the presence of Almighty God, is true in every particular,) from Jerusalem I went into the 21 regions of Syria and Cilicia, and still continued 22 personally unknown to the Christian Churches of Judea, being only known to them by report as the 23 person who was now become a zealous convert to the faith, and a preacher of that Gospel which he once persecuted. And accordingly they gave thanks 24 to God for his mercies on my behalf. It was not 2 till fourteen years after this time that I paid another

<sup>1</sup> This is a most important fact, since it informs us that the coincidence which existed between the doctrines of St. Paul and those of the other apostles, was not in consequence of his having derived his knowledge of the Gospel from them, but from their having all drawn from one and the same source; namely, the infallible communication of the Holy Spirit.

visit to Jerusalem in company with Barnabas and  
2 Titus. This last journey I undertook in consequence  
of a revelation to that effect; and accordingly, whilst  
at Jerusalem, I explained to the other apostles that  
view of the Gospel which I had been preaching to  
the Gentiles; and this I did not publicly, but in  
private to those of the greatest authority among  
them, in order to satisfy them that no error or dis-  
crepancy had crept into and corrupted my doctrine.  
3 Yet not even then, although my visit was made  
expressly for the purpose of convincing the apostles  
of the correctness of my tenets, not even then did I  
oblige Titus, who was a Gentile, to submit to the  
4 rite of circumcision; a ceremony which, however  
harmless in itself, I objected to on that occasion, in  
order to give no encouragement to the opinions of  
some false brethren, who, jealous of our Christian  
liberty, were desirous to bring us back to all the  
5 slavery and incumbrances of the Jewish law. On  
that ground, therefore, I conceded not one tittle to  
them of the question in dispute, in order that no  
concession of mine for the sake of mere momentary  
concord might trench upon the completeness and  
sufficiency of the unadulterated Gospel covenant.  
6 But though I condescended to explain to the leading  
men among the apostles the revelation which I had  
been preaching to the Gentiles, yet (recollecting  
that God makes no distinction of persons, and that  
the present question was not one of personal weight  
of authority, but of purity of belief) even then, I  
neither surrendered to them, nor borrowed from  
7 them, a single iota of doctrine; but, on the contrary,  
when they perceived that I had received my own  
special commission to convert the Gentiles, as

Peter had received his to preach to the Jews, both 8 of us having been directly appointed and miraculously aided by Christ; James, and Peter, and 9 John, the three men of most weight among the apostles, acknowledging the authenticity of my call, gave without hesitation the right hand of fellowship to myself and Barnabas, in order that we might take upon ourselves the apostleship to the Gentiles, and they, on the other hand, continue to preach to the inhabitants of Judea. In fact, the only request 10 which they made, and to which I readily agreed, was that I should do what lay in my power for the relief of our poor Christian brethren of the Jewish nation.

Some time afterwards, however, when Peter came 11 to Antioch, I opposed him publicly to his face, because he deserved censure. For on former occa- 12 sions, before any message had been delivered from James on the subject of partial external conformity with some of the rites of the Levitical law, he without scruple had eaten with the Gentiles, and acted in all respects with the same liberty as they; but after the arrival of that message, he drew back, and kept himself aloof from them, for fear of giving offence to the prejudices of the Jews. And not 13 only he, but other converts of the Jewish nation, adopted the same timid line of conduct, so that the infection at last extended to Barnabas himself. Perceiving this, and that they were compromising, 14 by this want of frankness and steadiness, the sincere truth of the Gospel, I said before them all to Peter, "If you, who are by birth a Jew, can live without scruple after the manner of the Gentiles, and not according to the law of Moses, why do you at-

tempt to bring the Gentiles into the bondage of that law which you have in your own person abandoned<sup>1</sup>?"

15 Even I then who have been brought up as a Jew  
to all the observances and expiations of the Mosaical  
16 law, and not as one of the idolatrous Gentiles, am  
now convinced that no man is acquitted in the sight  
of God by the expiatory sacrifices of the law, but  
by faith in the mercies of Christ: and I accordingly  
rest my faith exclusively upon our Redeemer Jesus  
Christ, in order that I may be justified through  
him, and not through those ceremonial observances  
by which his expiation was prefigured: for I know  
that by the works of the law no man living can be  
17 justified. If then, whilst I profess to look for  
justification through Christ's merits only, I am  
still resorting to other methods to release myself  
from the yoke of sin, am I not making Christ's  
merits subordinate in efficacy to the power of sin, by  
thus practically asserting their incompetency to re-  
move it? God forbid that I should so undervalue

<sup>1</sup> The history of Cornelius, as recorded in the tenth chapter of the Acts, informs us how strong was the original disposition of St. Peter's mind to consider the Gospel dispensation as addressed particularly to the members of the Jewish nation, and how reluctant was his final conviction of the abrogation of the Mosaic ritual. Painful as is the contemplation of these little infirmities in men whom Providence has appointed as the great lights of the world, still however they are not without their use, as they afford another and a strong argument to convince us of the accuracy of that form of doctrine, in which men of such dissimilar feelings and prejudices, after these short-lived oppositions of opinion, were found ultimately to coincide.

that merciful dispensation. For if I erect afresh 18 those ritual ordinances which the Gospel dispensation has abolished, I return, so far as in me lies, to the original responsibility of those sins which Christ's blood had blotted out. For by acknowledging, 19 during my state of Judaism, the sanctions of the law, I became spiritually dead through the penalties of that law, from which death I was restored again to life through the vivifying operation of the Gospel covenant alone. Accordingly I am now crucified 20 with Christ; and yet I live again, or rather it is Christ who now lives within me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live solely through my faith in the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himself for me. Let me not then, by return- 21 ing to the bondage of the law, throw a slight upon the free mercy of the Gospel of God; for most assuredly if righteousness could be attained by the observances of the Levitical law, then were Christ's death a superfluous sacrifice <sup>1</sup>.

<sup>1</sup> The whole tenor of this passage, and in fact of the entire Epistle, is no less decisive against the Romish doctrine of penances as a means of reconciliation with God, than it is against the Judaizing heresy of the apostle's days. If a mere human being can make his own personal sufferings an adequate expiation for his sins, then we may assuredly say with St. Paul, that, so far as he is concerned, Christ's death was a superfluous sacrifice. The same argument may be applied to the doctrine of purgatory. If the human soul is to expiate its own offences by its own sufferings in a future state of existence, then Christ's atonement is no longer necessary. Had the devout men of former ages been content to derive their religious opinions from the plain language of Scripture instead of indulging in their own theoretical speculations, it is impossi



3 O senseless Galatians, who then has bewitched you to seduce you from the truth: you to whom the doctrine of Christ crucified for your sins has been so plainly laid down as the very foundation of your  
2 faith? Answer me yourselves; you have many of you, as you know, received the gifts of the Holy Spirit. Were those gifts first communicated in consequence of your performance of the ritual works of the law, or in consequence of your faith in the  
3 Gospel of Christ? Can your understandings be so senseless as to induce you to attempt to make perfect that righteousness which came to you originally through the operations of the Spirit by the  
4 gross observances of the flesh? Have you cheerfully suffered so many temporal privations in order to release yourselves from your carnal bondage, and to attain to the liberty which is by Christ, and are you now returning of your own accord to that self-  
5 same bondage? Have the gifts of the Holy Spirit which you have received, or the many miracles which yourselves have witnessed, been performed among you through the instrumentality of the works of the Mosaic law, or by faith in the Gospel of  
6 Christ? Remember what is recorded of our father Abraham, (Gen. xv. 6.) "He believed God, and it  
7 was accounted to him for righteousness." From which passage we infer, that all those who look to God through faith, are the true children of Abra-  
8 ham, and not those of the Jewish nation only. For

ble to conceive that these doctrines, so completely at variance with the merciful character of the Gospel dispensation, and in their practical effects so fearfully injurious to society, could have found their way into the Church.

God, when he communicated to our forefathers the Scriptures of the old covenant, foreseeing that he would justify the Gentiles through the medium of their faith, anticipated the promises of Christ's Gospel in his communications with the patriarch Abraham, when he declared to him that "in thee shall all the nations of the earth be blessed." It is 9 evident therefore that all the children of faith, all who believe in Christ's expiatory redemption, be they who they may, are included in the blessing then pronounced upon the believing Abraham. On 10 the other hand it is evident from those same Scriptures, that all who look only for that righteousness which is communicated by the duties and observances of the Mosaic law, are subjected by that same law not to a blessing, but to an actual curse. Witness, for instance, the denunciation, (Deut. xxvii. 26.) "Cursed is every one who continueth not *completely in all the performances* enjoined by the book of the law to do them." And who, of all the sons of Israel, shall say that his performance has been so perfect as to free him from the effects of this curse? Now that no man can stand 11 acquitted in the sight of God through the performance of the works of the law is again evident from the same Scriptures, (Habakkuk ii. 4.) "the just shall live by *faith*." But obedience to the ritual 12 law has nothing to do with *faith*; on the contrary, that law is a law of works, and of works *only*. As witness its own words, (Leviticus xviii. 5.) "the man who *doeth* all these things shall live through their means."

From that curse then which is thus denounced 13 against all who, owing obedience to the covenant

of works, have fallen short of the perfection which it requires, Christ has redeemed us, by becoming in his own person a curse in our stead; for such, according to the express language of the same Scriptures, he has literally been, (Deut. xxi. 23.) “cursed  
 14 is every one that hangeth on a tree.” And this he did in order that the blessing which was promised to the children of Abraham might extend even to the Gentiles, through faith in Christ Jesus, that believing in him we might receive the promises of the Spirit.

15 Brethren, let me use a familiar illustration borrowed from the every-day transactions of society. When a covenant or deed of obligation between two parties has once been formally ratified by each of them, it is binding in all its parts down to its minutest literal construction; nor from that moment can either of the contracting parties subtract from, or add to, one tittle of the obligations thus volun-  
 16 tarily incurred. Now, with this observation in our minds, let us refer to the *strict letter* of God’s promise to Abraham. What says it? “To Abraham, and his *seed*.” Here the reference is clearly to some one individual, and not to a multitude of persons: not to thy *seeds*, but to thy *seed*<sup>1</sup>. That

<sup>1</sup> It is worthy of observation, that in this, as in all his other references to the books of the Old Testament, St. Paul makes his appeal to them as to the *inspired oracles of God* in the strictest acceptation of the term: giving them credit not merely for substantial truth in their *main and general purport*, but for a store of implied wisdom which the eye of the student may be able to trace in *their most minute and apparently trivial peculiarities of expression*. This consideration ought surely to have had sufficient

one individual therefore evidently designates Christ. Again I would observe, that this original promise of 17 a future Redeemer in the person of Christ made to Abraham, cannot be cancelled by a subsequent and more restricted law, which was not given till four hundred and thirty years afterwards to Abraham's descendants. For if our redemption is after all to 18 be purchased solely by our obedience to the law of Moses, there is an end of that redemption which we look for through the original promise made to Abraham.

But if so, what then, we naturally ask, was God's 19 purpose in giving the law to Moses at all? I answer, that it was an intermediate provision intended for the preservation of religious obedience and good morals among the Israelites, till the ful-

weight to check that licence of theory with regard to the inspiration of the Jewish Scriptures which has been so hastily adopted by some theological writers of the present day. It has been said that the New Testament may be true, even though large portions of the Old should be shown to be founded upon mistake. I own, I see not how this opinion can for a moment be entertained by those who attach credit to the authority of St. Paul. How far the doctrine of the strict verbal inspiration of Scripture is tenable in all points may perhaps admit of question. Certain however it is, that the manner in which our Saviour and his apostles uniformly refer to the dicta of the Law and the Prophets, if it does not actually sanction this latter conclusion, ought at all events to impress us with a fearful sense of the responsibility we incur, when in attempting to reconcile the mysteries of Scripture to the prejudices of mankind, we explain away its direct and palpable assertions, or assail the credibility of its minutest historical facts.

ness of God's good time, when he should redeem the promise made to Abraham; and accordingly it was delivered by angels<sup>1</sup> into the hands of Moses, whom God had chosen as an intervening agent  
20 between him and the Israelites. But that Moses was appointed the *intervening agent* between God and the Israelites is at once a proof that the Mosaic law was, in the strictest interpretation of the term, a *covenant*, and in consequence *binding only on the contracting parties*; but these *special* dealings with the Jewish nation form rather the exception than the main character of God's moral government of his creatures. As the Lord and Arbiter of the whole human race, he rules over *them* generally by the single and authoritative exercise of his will, and not by a system of conventional dispensations.

21 Was then the law of Moses derogatory to the promise originally made by God to Abraham? By no means. Had the circumstances of human nature made it possible that our salvation could be obtained by perfect obedience to a law of works, I doubt not but that God in his wisdom would have so  
22 arranged it. This however, in consequence of man's inherent infirmity, not being the case, Scripture, in order to conduct us to salvation by another road, has called the whole of mankind, who lay alike in-

<sup>1</sup> The delivery of the ritual law to Moses by the intervention of angels is again alluded to by St. Paul in the Epistle to the Hebrews, chap. ii. 2. The book of Exodus expressly asserts, (Exod. xxxiv. 20.) that Moses was not admitted to a sight of God, although he is elsewhere described as conversing with him face to face; which is in perfect accordance with what is here stated by the apostle.

volved in all the penalties of disobedience, to the gracious promise of redemption to be imparted to believers through the operation of faith in the merits of Jesus Christ. Accordingly, before the covenant 23 of faith was open to the acceptance of mankind, we were kept under the intermediate and provisional stipulations of the Mosaic law, waiting anxiously for that better dispensation of faith in Christ, which was in its due time to be revealed. To return then 24 to the question, "why did God give the law to Moses at all?" I answer, that he gave it, in order that it might serve as a schoolmaster to train us up for Christ, that our salvation might finally be consummated through *faith*. That dispensation of faith 25 having been now at length revealed to mankind in the maturity of God's arrangements, they are consequently no longer under their former schoolmaster. For all of you have now become the sons of God by 26 faith in Christ Jesus: having been baptized in the 27 name of Christ, and having become participators in the covenant of redemption by faith in Christ.

Henceforth then there is no distinction between 28 Jew and Gentile; between the slave and the free-man; between the male and the female; for all of you are alike comprehended in the covenant of Christ; and if you are Christ's, then you are the 29 children of Abraham, and heirs to the promise made to him and all his descendants.

Having termed you *heirs*, I would remind you 4 that a man's son and heir, however great the succession which he may one day look to inherit, is, whilst in his minority, little different from a servant, being put under tutors and guardians until the time 2 fixed by his father for his becoming of full age.

3 In like manner we, during that intermediate dispensation of the Mosaic law, were as children put under the provisional tuition of a carnal form of  
4 righteousness. But when the fulness of time arrived, God sent his Son into the world, a Son born of a woman, and under the covenant of the Mosaic  
5 law, in order that he might redeem those who together with him had lain under the obligations of that law, so that also together with him they might  
6 receive the full privileges of sons. And accordingly it is, because he has thus acknowledged you for his sons, that God by his Holy Spirit authorizes and encourages you to invoke him in your prayers by the familiar and endearing name of Father.

7 From this moment then you are each of you no longer a servant, but a son: and if a son, then an  
8 heir of God through Christ. Look back then for a moment to the servitude from which you have escaped. Formerly, before you had learned to worship the true God you were slaves to the most degrading superstitions, trembling before your imaginary deities. Now on the contrary that you know  
9 who the true God is, or rather let me say, now that the true God acknowledges you for his sons, how, I cannot but ask, can you be so lost to the enjoyment of your Christian liberty, as to be desirous of returning to the false and fantastic righteousness which consists in a slavish deference for trifling  
10 ceremonies, converting your spiritual obedience into a superstitious reverence for this or that day, or  
11 month, or season, or year? Brethren, I much fear that, if such be your ideas of the holiness conveyed by the Gospel covenant, all my past exertions for your instruction have been but lost labour.

Take not, however, amiss what I have now said, 12 nor imagine for a moment that I speak to you in bitterness. Individually I have nothing whatever to complain of at your hands. You know under 13 what painful infirmities I first came to preach the Gospel among you; and yet, I cannot but recollect 14 with what kind of attention you received me in that trial of affliction, and hailed me, weak and broken down as I then was, as God's own messenger; as though I had been Christ himself announcing his own Gospel. What then is now become of all the 15 blessings which you invoked on that occasion upon my head? for I call yourselves to witness, that you would on that day have plucked out your very eyes, and given them to me, had I required them of you. Has your affection for me become less because I 16 have persevered in preaching to you nothing but the simple unadulterated truth<sup>1</sup>? False teachers, believe 17 me, have gotten among you; men who flatter your prejudices, and decry my doctrine, merely that they may supplant me in your esteem, and occupy my place. Let then your affection and obedience be 18

<sup>1</sup> This is a difficulty with which the ministers of the Gospel will have to struggle to the end of time. The simple tenets of revelation will not allow themselves to be bent and distorted according to the fluctuating tastes and prejudices of mankind. But the human mind becomes fastidious with regard even to the most important truths when incessantly repeated. Hence the advantage which the innovator in religion possesses over the sound and cautious teacher. The influx of new ideas is hailed as the acquisition of new truths; and a mere change of position in the human faculties is mistaken for a positive advancement in substantial knowledge.



manifested, as formerly, by your persevering attention during my absence to the pure doctrine which I have laboured to inculcate, and not merely to my person when I may at any time accidentally come  
19 among you. My dear children, with whom I am as it were once more in the pains of child-birth until  
20 you shall be completely born to the faith of Christ, I could indeed earnestly wish that I were at this moment with you, in order that I might address you in stronger language than I have yet used, for I  
21 am distressed and anxious on your account. You wish, it seems, to conform to the ceremonial usages of the law; if such be your feeling, look at least into what is related in that very book of the law  
22 which you so much admire. You will find it there recorded that Abraham had two sons; the one by  
23 a servant, the other by a freewoman: but the son of the servant was begotten according to the usual course of nature; the son of the freewoman, on the other hand, was born by a special intervention of  
24 Providence in conformity with God's promise. Now these women are types of the two covenants; the one, Agar, who was born in slavery, represents the law which was given to Moses from mount Sinai;  
25 for the name Agar is at this moment one of the appellations of mount Sinai in Arabia; and accordingly under this type we recognize the earthly Jerusalem, which is at present with her children in bondage to the slavish obligations of the Jewish  
26 covenant: but the heavenly Jerusalem on the contrary is free, and the common mother of all true  
27 believers. As it is written by the prophet Isaiah, (Isaiah liv. 1.) "Rejoice, thou barren that bearest not; break forth and cry, thou that travailest not,

for the desolate hath more children than she who hath an husband." We therefore, brethren, like 28 Isaac, are the children of the promise. But then, 29 as we are told that he who was born naturally persecuted him who was born according to the divine promise, even so it is now, as is manifest from the persecution which the professors of the Gospel daily experience from the animosity of the Jews. Yet 30 what says Scripture for our comfort? (Genesis xxi. 10.) "Cast out the bondwoman and her son, for the son of the bondwoman shall not be heir with the son of the freewoman." Now we, my 31 brethren, are not the sons of the bondwoman, but of the free.

Stand firm therefore in the liberty with which 5 Christ has made us free, and be not again entangled in the yoke of bondage. Behold, I Paul declare to 2 you, that if you adopt the rite of circumcision, the expiation offered through Christ's merits shall avail you nothing: for I assure you, that every man who 3 adopts circumcision *as a means of justification*, by so doing enters into a positive obligation to perform all the injunctions of the law whatever: and they who 4 look for justification and remission of their sins through the ritual works of the law, have nothing to do with the redemption wrought for us by Christ; they have forfeited their share in the covenant of grace and mercy. For we Christians, aspiring to 5 spiritual holiness, wait for that hope of justification which is to be obtained through faith; for to all 6 who have become partakers in Christ's covenant, the mere accidental fact of circumcision or of uncircumcision is of no manner of avail; that which is really available with God being that faith and con-

fidence in him which operates through love and  
7 charity to God and man. You were all of you,  
some short time since, well grounded in this belief.

What seducer then has now corrupted you, and  
8 turned you away from it? Most assuredly this  
doctrine is not from him to whose gracious sum-  
9 mons you originally listened. Beware then whom  
you resort to as your teachers; and recollect how  
easily heresy finds its way even into the true Church,  
and how a little leaven may leaven and corrupt the  
10 whole lump. I firmly rely upon what I know of  
you, that you will escape from these seductions;  
but the seducer, whoever he be, must expect to  
11 bear the just consequences of his offence. That  
your present misapprehension of the nature of the  
Christian covenant cannot be attributed to any in-  
struction which you have received from me is evident  
from this: that I am at this moment an object of  
persecution to the Jews, because I teach the useless-  
ness of circumcision. If I would but so far accom-  
modate my doctrine to their prejudices as to insist  
upon the necessity of circumcision, I might preach  
at the same time the faith of Christ crucified without  
offence or danger.

12 I sincerely wish, brethren, that these false and  
temporizing teachers were finally excluded from  
your society, that you might no longer be exposed  
13 to risk from their seductions, nor be induced to  
sacrifice that liberty in Christ to the enjoyment of  
which you have been called. When, however, I  
speak of liberty, be assured that I mean not licen-  
tiousness; it is not the liberty of unrestrained pas-  
sion which I recommend, but the cordial and unre-  
strained exercise of every kind and benevolent feeling

in mutual submission to each other. For, after all, <sup>14</sup> the numerous and nice distinctions of the Levitical law itself, which you so much admire, have this single maxim as their great end and object, "that you love your neighbour as yourself:" if therefore your <sup>15</sup> zeal lead only to hatred and bitterness, your ruin, both temporal and spiritual, must be the final consequence. I repeat then, let your ways be those of <sup>16</sup> spiritual purity and love, and the sinful and impure propensities of your carnal nature will necessarily lose their hold upon you. For the inclinations of <sup>17</sup> our carnal nature are at direct variance with our spiritual nature; and those of our spiritual nature with our carnal nature; each urging us in opposite directions, so that too frequently, where conscience would impel us one way, appetite bears us the contrary. But where the better and spiritual feelings <sup>18</sup> obtain the mastery, you are no longer under a law extreme to mark every nice and inevitable deviation. Now if you ask me what are those works of <sup>19</sup> our carnal nature, the indulgence in which is perfectly incompatible with spiritual holiness, I reply, that they are such as cannot possibly be mistaken. <sup>1</sup> They are adultery, fornication, impure thoughts,

<sup>1</sup> St. Paul has been emphatically designated as the apostle of *faith*; but this appellation can be considered as really apposite only, if under the term "faith" we mean to imply the necessary and inseparable accompaniment of a holy life. This is the final inference to which all his arguments invariably tend. If he attributes any priority to faith as compared with works, it is a priority of time, and not of importance; that priority which attaches to cause as connected with effect, but which affords no criterion whatever by which to judge of their respective value.

20 lascivious habits, idolatry, sorcery, animosity, contentions, emulations, violent anger, strifes, schisms,  
21 heresies, envy, murder, drunkenness, riotous revels, and all other kindred vices: with regard to which I now solemnly warn you, as I have warned you on former occasions, that "they who do such things  
22 shall not inherit the kingdom of God." On the other hand, the marks which attend a progress in spiritual holiness are these; love, cheerfulness, peace, slowness to anger, gentleness, goodness, sincerity,  
23 suavity, temperance: where these form the character of the mind, no captious distinctions of the ritual law shall be allowed to strip them of their reward.  
24 Recollect then, that the true followers of Christ have crucified with him their own carnal affections  
25 and appetites; and recollect also, that "*the proof of your being led by the Spirit is your living according to the works of the Spirit;*" not a self-complacent  
26 opinion of your own supposed merits, or a depreciation or jealousy of others.

6 If then any one among you, my brethren, be surprised into any fault, such as those to which I have alluded, do you who strive to walk according to the Spirit correct that person in the true feeling of meekness and charity; recollecting your very precarious tenure of your own better and purer principles, and fearing lest you should in your turn fall into temptation as he has done.

2 Bear one another's burdens; both their spiritual and their bodily infirmities; and so shall you fulfil  
3 the holy law of Christ. For if any man prides himself upon his own strength, being, as we all are, intrinsically weak, be assured that he is laying up eventual shame and mortification for himself.

Let therefore every man look earnestly after his 4  
own conduct, and not draw invidious comparisons  
between himself and his neighbour; and so let him  
make himself, if he can, individually excellent, not  
merely relatively so: for each man must bear his 5  
own responsibility for his own conduct, be it what  
it may.

Let every learner and pupil in the Christian know- 6  
ledge, repay his teacher for the instruction he has  
received from him by every display of affection and  
gratitude in his power.

Deceive not yourselves, my brethren, we cannot 7  
trifle with an all-seeing God. Be assured therefore,  
that as a man sows in good or evil works, in the  
like quality and proportion he shall eventually reap.  
He who sows to the propensities of the flesh, shall 8  
from the flesh reap corruption: but he who sows to  
the pure inclinations of the Spirit, shall from the  
Spirit reap eternal life. Let us not therefore be 9  
wearied in well doing; for in God's own time we  
shall, if we persevere unto the end, reap our reward.  
According to our various opportunities then let us 10  
do good to all men; and more particularly to our  
brethren in the Christian covenant.

You see how large a letter I have written to you 11  
with my own hand.

Believe me it is with an eye to their own security 12  
from molestation on the part of the Jews that your  
selfish and false teachers have so earnestly pressed  
you to be circumcised: they fear persecution if they  
teach in its full simplicity the doctrine of spiritual  
liberty obtained for us by Christ's meritorious ex-  
piation. As a proof of this you may observe, that 13  
those same persons observe not the other injunctions

- of the law of Moses, whilst they at the same time make a parade of their external mark of circumcision, and boast of their having induced you to  
14 adopt it also as they have done. But for my own part, God forbid that I should boast of any thing as the symbol or means of salvation excepting Christ's meritorious atonement only: through which all worldly interests and desires are crucified to me,  
15 and I to them. For within the pale of the Christian covenant it is not the accidental fact of our circumcision or of our uncircumcision which conduces to our salvation, but the total renovation of the moral character with all its various inclinations and pro-  
16 pensities. And accordingly to as many as live in conformity to this rule, whether they be Jew or  
17 Gentile, peace and mercy be unto them. For myself, I make this reply to those who insist upon the necessity of the mark of circumcision: "that I bear upon my flesh Christ's own mark, the marks of that persecution which I have sustained in his service."
- 18 May, my brethren, the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.
- 

THE history of all religions is the history of the various expedients by which mankind have in all ages attempted to silence the clamours of conscience, and to avert the wrath of heaven. Terror being a much stronger stimulant to the human breast than hope, the impressions entertained of the divine attributes by uncivilized nations have ever been of a gloomy and repulsive character; and consequently the expiatory rites which have been invented by a

superstitious imagination under such circumstances have almost invariably been characterized by cruelty and atrocity. A propensity however so deeply rooted in the constitution of our frame does not entirely disappear as civilization advances, and accordingly we learn from history that some of the worst superstitions of a darker period still continued to haunt mankind even in the most refined æra of pagan antiquity. The effectual death-blow to terrors of this description was that given by the revelation of the Christian covenant, which announces to us the important fact of the final reconciliation of God with the human race by means of an expiation, the completeness and sufficiency of which, if Christianity be true, cannot for a moment be doubted. A sincere believer in that doctrine therefore must necessarily, if he reasons consistently, enjoy an emancipation from superstitious fears which no other form of religious belief can profess to communicate. True however as this proposition is in theory, it is no less true, that in every period of Christianity sincere believers have been found who have wanted acuteness of perception to apprehend, or strength of mind unreservedly to rely upon, that complete liberty and reconciliation purchased for them by the invaluable atonement of Christ. Of all heresies, that which a susceptible and fragile mind most easily slides into is that of an inability to comprehend the full extent of the divine mercy. Hence it is that, conscious of its own defects and infirmities, it is ever pondering over its own little and fantastic attempts to avert the wrath of an offended God; ever striving to superadd to that great and all-sufficient sacrifice for sin once offered the tribute of its own personal sufferings, or of ceremonial rites to which from prejudice or education it has been taught to attach an imaginary value. Superstition is the canker which must necessarily take possession of every delicate mind which, abandoning the infallible guidance of Scripture, has recourse to its own conjectures for obtaining relief in a malady which nothing less than the word of revelation can cure. We cannot therefore be surprised to find how early the abuses resulting from this very natural propensity began to manifest themselves in



the Christian Church: and when we recollect to what an enormous bulk the corruptions derived from these gloomy and mistaken views have accumulated in the subsequent course of ages, we can be less surprised at the earnest and emphatic protest of the apostle against their first admission. "Let me fall into the hands of God, and not of man," was the exclamation of David, when left to choose between the visitations of pestilence or the sword of the enemy; and so will every Christian be disposed to exclaim, when he turns from the contemplation of the fearful self-inflicted sufferings of the ascetic, through mistaken notions of piety, to that calm sunshine of humble gratitude which the Christian Scriptures not only offer to our acceptance, but even impose upon us as a duty. It may be urged, however, that this mistaken estimate of man's relative position with his Maker is rather an infirmity than a sin. It may be said, "Why severely blame a weakness, the painful effects of which descend chiefly upon the head of the party yielding to it, and which may appear to require rather pity than censure?" But we shall hardly be disposed to repeat this question, when we recollect how completely destructive this view of religion is to our purest and best feelings of love to God; to our faith in the efficacy of our Lord's atonement; and to that cheerful and exhilarating sentiment of piety, which a more scriptural notion of Christianity is so well calculated to throw over our whole social existence. It is true that a superstitious Christian may be an object of commiseration rather than of personal blame: but so is every one else who sins through ignorance: but though a want of knowledge may be a justification in morals, it is no alleviation of the incalculable evil which results to mankind through its means. We should recollect also, that, as the minds which are naturally most alive to the best feelings of piety are the most inclined to fall into these painful errors, the measure of the injury thence resulting to them individually, as well as to society in general, is not merely the actual suffering which such principles may occasion to them; but that we ought also to take into the account the destruction of so many available means of

enticing others to religion by a bright and attractive example, and the loss of so much sincere and well-founded joy, which the contemplation of the immensity of God's revealed mercies is so well calculated to produce, and which has thus by a fatal misapprehension been converted into unprofitable terror. If it be urged that our Saviour himself recommends one species of mortification, namely, fasting, as a religious duty, and himself set the example of it, the answer is obvious; that as a means of piety, as a corrective of the petulance produced by prosperity or health, it may be, and is, highly profitable: the real mistake is, when it is relied upon as actually meritorious, and as a substitute for that expiation for sin, which can be obtained through Christ's blood alone. The various forms under which this very natural but pernicious delusion has shown itself in different ages, according to the circumstances of each respective period, is matter of curious but melancholy observation. To the converted Jew and the Judaizing Gentile of the primitive Church it suggested an anxiety to return to the vexatious Levitical bondage from which they had been recently emancipated, and to adopt an heterogeneous and ill-assorted creed, in which the practice of circumcision and other unprofitable ceremonies was considered as a concurrent means of justification with the atonement of Christ itself. A few centuries afterwards it peopled the Egyptian deserts with ascetics, who, having originally retired thither for purposes of general mortification of the body, finally set the example, which was so eagerly followed in other countries, of the most fantastic and capriciously diversified modes of self-torment. It introduced the unscriptural doctrine of purgatory into the Eastern and Western Churches, and gave rise to the institution of the various monastic orders, and with them to a state of spiritual bondage, far exceeding that against which St. Paul so eloquently declaims in the Epistle now before us. To trace it through its infinite diversity of shapes would be endless; perhaps, in fact, few piously disposed persons exist who have not at some period of their lives felt a tendency to this delusion; from which they have finally escaped only by fixing their attention upon that one

great basis of all scriptural truth, "Christ crucified," which as it affords the only solid foundation for a believer's hope, so it is the great practical security for a holy and pure life. If the Protestant communities have been less disfigured by these gloomy superstitions than the Church of Rome, it is because their knowledge of the sacred writings is greater ; without the continual and salutary corrective afforded by which, no goodness of intention, no degree of piety, however sincere, could have preserved them from the same pitiable degradation.

v

THE  
EPISTLE OF PAUL  
TO THE  
EPHESIANS.

---

THE following Epistle is generally supposed to have been written at Rome during the time of St. Paul's first imprisonment, about the year of our Lord 61. For the narrative of the apostle's visit to Ephesus, see Acts xix.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

PAUL an Apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of 1  
God, to the saints who are in Ephesus and to the  
believers in Jesus Christ; grace be unto you and 2  
peace from God our Father, and from our Lord  
Jesus Christ.

SECTION I.

The object of the Epistle to the Ephesians, as of that to the Romans, is to assert the absolute impartiality of God's moral government in his dealings with mankind, and to show that the blessings resulting from the expiatory redemption of Christ, which had been prepared by his foreknowledge before the creation of the world for the abolition of the sin introduced by our first parents, are offered indiscriminately to the acceptance of the whole human race, whether Jew or Gentile. This part of the argument occupies the first three chapters. The remainder of the Epistle consists of an earnest exhortation to an holy life, as a consequence necessarily deducible from this doctrine.

3 Blessed be God and the Father of our Lord Jesus  
Christ, who has blessed us with every spiritual blessing  
in the heavenly things which are in Christ ;  
4 according as he chose us in him before the foundation  
of the world, that we might be holy and with-  
5 out blame before him, in love ; having predestined  
us to the adoption unto himself through Jesus Christ,  
6 according to the good pleasure of his will ; to the  
praise of that glorious display of mercy which he  
has extended to us in the person of his beloved Son,  
7 by whom we have redemption through the expiation  
of his blood, namely, the forgiveness of our sins,  
8 according to the riches of his grace and mercy in  
9 which he has abounded towards us ; having made  
known to us in all wisdom and divine knowledge  
the mystery of his will (according to that good  
10 pleasure which he purposed in himself) to gather  
together in the completion of his own good time,  
all things in Christ, both the things which are in  
heaven, and the things which are in earth ; that  
11 they should remain in him. In whom both we  
Jews have obtained an inheritance, according to  
the predetermined purpose of Him who makes all  
12 things subservient to his will ; that having rested  
our hopes in this life upon the promises of Christ,  
we might hereafter receive our eternal reward to  
13 the glory of his merciful dispensations ;—and in  
whom you Gentiles also, having embraced the word  
of truth, namely, the eternal Gospel of salvation,  
have reposed your belief, and have had his gracious  
promises ratified to you by the gifts of the Holy  
14 Spirit :—that awful pledge of our future inheritance  
given to us as our consolation in this life, to comfort  
us until the day when he shall redeem his pur-

chased possession, and display the whole glory of his grace and mercy.

Wherefore I on my part, having heard of your <sup>15</sup> faith in the Lord Jesus, and your love towards all his holy servants, do not cease giving thanks <sup>16</sup> on your account, making mention of you in my prayers, and beseeching the God of our Lord Jesus <sup>17</sup> Christ, the Father of glory, to give you the Spirit of wisdom and of revelation in the knowledge of Him : that the eyes- of your understanding may be <sup>18</sup> enlightened, in order that you may know to what an immensity of hope he calls you to look forward ; and what are the riches of the glory of his inheritance which he has imparted to his saints ; and what <sup>19</sup> is the immensity of his power as displayed towards us who believe in him : a power which shall one <sup>20</sup> day raise us up from the dead, as it has already raised Christ ; calling him from the grave, and placing him upon God's own right hand in heaven ; far <sup>21</sup> above all the <sup>1</sup> angelic beings ; and above every name

<sup>1</sup> The passage which I have rendered "far above all the angelic beings," is in our established version literally translated from the original Greek "far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion." It is well known that the Jewish commentators arranged the angelic hierarchy in three classes, in the following order : first, Seraphim, Cherubim, Thrones : second, Dominions, Virtues, Powers : third, Principalities, Archangels, Angels. St. Paul is evidently alluding to this division in the present passage, as also in chap. iii. 10, and in chap. vi. 12, of this Epistle. See also Colossians i. 16, and ii. 10. 15. Our poet Milton has reference to the same tradition in various passages of his *Paradise Lost* ; as in the following verse,

Thrones, Dominations, Princedoms, Virtues, Powers.

*Par. Lost*, book v. verse 601.

that is named not only in this world, but in that  
22 which is to come; and placing all things under his  
feet, and making him to be the universal head over  
23 his mystical body, the Church; and the fulness of  
him who fills all things, and whose glorious essence  
2 pervades all places: of him who has quickened  
you to life in Christ; you who were dead in your  
2 trespasses and sins, in which you once walked ac-  
cording to the manners of this world; making your-  
selves servants to the prince of the power of the air,  
that evil spirit who still works in the children of  
3 disobedience; amongst whom we Jews also formerly  
pursued our course in the appetites of our flesh,  
following all the evil propensities of our carnal  
inclinations and our corrupt imaginations. For we  
were, by our nature, like the Gentiles, the children  
4 of wrath, but God in the riches of his mercy loved  
5 and took compassion upon us, and quickened us also  
to life in Christ, who like you were dead in our  
sins, (for the salvation whether of Jew or Gentile is  
6 the work of his free mercy only,) and has raised  
you and us up together, and has given us our place  
7 amongst the heavenly things in Christ Jesus; in  
order that he might show, in the ages yet to come,  
the superabundant wealth of his mercy, in his good-  
8 ness towards us in Jesus Christ. For your salvation,  
I repeat, is through his mercy only, the consequence  
9 of your firm reliance upon him: it is not your own  
work, but God's free gift to you: not purchased by  
your righteousness, that no man may set up his own  
10 merits against the loving-kindness of God. For in  
all respects we are his work, created anew by him in  
the Spirit of Christ Jesus, that we might serve him  
in good works, which God has prepared and ap-

pointed for us, that we might walk in them as his servants.

Remember then, my brethren, that you were 11 formerly Gentiles, living according to the lusts of the flesh; despised, because of your uncircumcision, by the Jews who boasted of their own circumcision as God's distinguishing mark impressed upon their bodies; that you were in those days ignorant of 12 your Redeemer, excluded from the covenant of the Mosaic dispensation, and strangers to God's stipulated promises in Jesus Christ, running your career through this world without hope, and without the knowledge of God; and then again remem- 13 ber with gratitude that you are now no longer aliens from him, but admitted near to Christ, and having an interest and participation in the redemption through his blood. For he it is who has made 14 our peace both with himself, and with one another; having broken down that partition wall of jealousy which separated the Jew from the Gentile, and 15 having abolished by the sacrifice of himself the rigorous law of ritual injunctions; in order that out of these two divisions of mankind he might build up a new and united race: establishing harmony between them, and reconciling both to God in the 16 one holy covenant of the cross, having destroyed all the former animosity which existed between them. Therefore has he preached the tidings of salvation 17 as well to those who were at a distance as to those who were near; giving to all of us, both 18 Jew and Gentile, one common access, through one and the same Spirit, to God the Father. From 19 this moment therefore you are no longer foreigners and strangers to us, but fellow-citizens with God's



20 servants, and members of his household: being  
built, as we ourselves are, upon the foundation  
of the apostles and the prophets, Jesus Christ him-  
self being the chief corner stone of the building;  
21 in whom all the several portions being duly united  
form one great edifice, an holy temple to the Lord:  
22 an integral part of which edifice you yourselves  
are, in order that God's blessed Spirit may dwell  
within you.

3 On this account it is that I Paul am at this time  
a prisoner; because as a minister of Jesus Christ  
I have proclaimed salvation to you the Gentiles.  
2 For you are all, I trust, aware of the dispensation  
of God's mercy which has been given to me on  
3 your account, in the mysterious revelation to me of  
his will respecting you, (as I have mentioned to you  
4 in a former letter, by referring to which you may  
perceive the knowledge of the dispensations of  
5 Christ which has been vouchsafed to me,) a revela-  
tion which in the past ages was kept back from the  
knowledge of mankind, but which has been recently  
communicated to his holy apostles and prophets by  
6 the Spirit, namely that "the Gentiles should be  
fellow heirs together with the Jews, and members  
of the same body, and joint partakers in the same  
blessed promise of redemption through Christ, by  
7 faith in his Gospel." Of which Gospel I am a  
minister, according to the grace and miraculous  
gifts which have been bestowed upon me by God;  
8 and although less than the least of his saints, I have  
received this gracious appointment to preach among  
the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of the Gospel  
9 of Christ, and to teach all men the mystery of that

dispensation which has been reserved <sup>1</sup> from the beginning of time among the secret counsels of him who has created all things through Jesus Christ; in order that his manifold wisdom, as displayed through <sup>10</sup> his Church, might be finally made manifest to all

<sup>1</sup> It is expressly asserted in various parts of the apostolical Epistles, that the redemption of mankind by the expiatory atonement of Christ was decreed by the divine foreknowledge before the creation of the world. Hopeless as must be every human attempt to inquire into the unsearchable mysteries of God's providence, still we may surely venture to surmise from this revealed fact, that the prospective arrangement then made by the infinite mercy of our Creator for averting the miseries consequent upon the introduction of sin was adequate in its operation to the gracious object contemplated by him: in other words, that widely spread as is the transmitted evil, the consequence of the fall of our first parents, the remedial effects of our blessed Saviour's atonement will one day be fully co-extensive with it. This consideration may perhaps serve to lessen in some degree, though it cannot remove, the difficulty which attends that most momentous paradox in the works of Omnipotence, the existence of sin. That the same great Being, who originally made it a part of our moral constitution that we should stand in need of the trials to which we are exposed for our ultimate improvement, or who foresaw that such would be the result, provided at the same time a means to all who should not wilfully resist the offer, for averting the destructive consequences otherwise necessarily accompanying such a state of probation, is indeed a mysterious dispensation which human reason is perfectly inadequate to solve, but it presents at all events no moral inference incompatible with our most firm conviction of the infinite perfection of the divine attributes.

- 11 the powers of heaven; according to his eternal  
12 purpose of redeeming us through Jesus Christ, in  
whom we have confidence and a fearless access to  
God, in the full reliance of faith in his promises.  
13 Wherefore, my brethren, I beg you not to be dis-  
mayed at my present sufferings on your account,  
14 which are for your glory; and I fervently bend my  
knees in prayer before the Father of our Lord  
15 Jesus Christ, from whom his whole family in hea-  
16 ven and earth is named, that he would grant to  
you grace, according to the riches of his glory,  
that you may be strengthened by the gifts of his  
17 holy Spirit in your inward nature, that Christ may  
dwell in your hearts through faith; and that, being  
firmly rooted and established in love towards him,  
18 you may be able to understand together with the  
other servants of God what is the breadth, and  
length, and depth, and height of his wonderful  
19 dispensations; and may perceive the surpassing  
and inconceivable love of Christ towards you, and  
may be filled with all the fulness of the Spirit of  
God.
- 20 Now unto him who is able to do all things for  
us in far greater proportion than we can ask or  
think, by that mighty power which works within  
21 us,—to him be glory in the Church for the salvation  
which is by Christ Jesus, through all ages, for ever  
and ever. Amen.

## SECTION II.

The Apostle here subjoins an exhortation to good works, which are enumerated by him under the following heads:—viz. submission to those in authority;—brotherly love;—integrity;—purity of language and manners;—sobriety;—the relative duties of husband and wife;—the relative duties of parents and children;—the relative duties of masters and servants;—holiness and faith in God.

Wherefore, my brethren, I, a prisoner for the 4  
cause of Christ, beseech you to walk worthily of the  
vocation by which you have been called, with all 2  
lowliness of mind, with meekness, with forbearance,  
with kindness towards one another, doing your utmost 3  
to preserve the unity of the Spirit in the bond of  
peace. Be as one body and one soul, as you have all 4  
been called to the attainment of one common hope;  
acknowledging one and the same Lord; one and the 5  
same faith; one and the same baptism; one and 6  
the same God and Father of all, who is over all  
things, and pervades all things, and dwells within  
you all. Recollect, however, that although you 7  
all acknowledge one common Master, you are not  
all at this moment called to the enjoyment or exer-  
cise of the self-same spiritual gifts, but that Christ  
has distributed to every man his peculiar function  
according to his own good pleasure: as we are 8  
assured by the Psalmist, (Psalm lxxviii. 18.) "having  
ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and  
gave gifts to men:" (in which prophecy, by the way, 9  
we may observe, that the mention of the ascension  
of Christ necessarily implies his previous descent  
into this world, and into the grave, from which he 10  
ascended to the highest heavens, that he might fill  
and rule over all things.) And according to that 11  
good pleasure, therefore, in allotting to the various  
members of his Church militant upon earth their  
various departments, he has appointed some men to  
be his apostles, some to be prophets, some to be  
evangelists, some to be pastors, and some to be  
teachers, for the due arrangement and subordination 12  
of the community of believers, for promoting the  
great work of the Gospel, and for the discipline and

13 harmony of his Church; until its several members shall have attained that unity of belief, and that uniform and consistent knowledge of the Son of God, which shall mark its full maturity and its complete and final establishment on a scale worthy  
14 of its divine Founder. In thus varying the character of his spiritual gifts according to the existing wants of the infant Church, he has wisely provided at once for its discipline and our instruction, that we should no longer like children be capriciously tossed about from one system of opinions to another, under the influence of false and designing teachers, who  
15 might attempt to waylay us by their subtlety: but, on the contrary, that holding one common faith in mutual love and good will, we might as the several members of one and the same body grow together in strength and harmonious proportion under our com-  
16 mon head Jesus Christ; under whom his whole body, the Christian Church, symmetrically and firmly arranged in all its joints and various articulations, all of them exercising their peculiar and distinct offices, increases daily in health and beauty in its progress to maturity.

17 Aspire then, my brethren, all of you, I earnestly implore you in the name of our common Redeemer, aspire to this unity of love and discipline, nor continue to walk, each man in the folly and vanity of his own imagination, like the heathens by whom  
18 you are surrounded; who have their apprehensions darkened, and are aliens from the life of God, through the ignorance of their understandings, and the callous  
19 obduracy of their hearts; and who, having lost the very sensation of remorse, have given themselves up

to lasciviousness, and to the unrestrained exercise of every work of uncleanness.

Not such, my brethren, is the lesson which you 20 have been taught by the pure Gospel of Christ; if indeed you have learned it as you ought, and have 21 imbibed its precepts as inculcated by the blessed Jesus: that Gospel, whose foremost injunction is, 22 that "you put away all the destructive appetites, all the deceitful propensities, of your unregenerated nature; that you acquire new aspirations, new habits, 23 and put on that new and regenerated man which is 24 created after God's own image in righteousness and true holiness." In conformity then with this lovely 25 doctrine, put away from among you all falsehood and deceit, and let your dealings with one another be in entire truth and sincerity, recollecting that we are common members of the same holy body. If pro- 26 voked to anger, let it at least be such as shall lead you into no sin, nor let any provocation keep it alive till the sun set, that your holy religion be not evil 27 spoken of. Let him who has stolen steal no more; 28 but betake himself to honest and useful labour, that, instead of defrauding others, he may have the means of giving to those in necessity. Let no indecent 29 or filthy language proceed from your lips, but such sentiments only as are edifying, and calculated to afford benefit to the hearers; nor profane or dese- 30 crate that pure and holy Spirit within you, by which you have been sealed as God's own children against the day of your redemption. Let all bitter- 31 ness of feeling, all violence of anger, all animosity, all clamorous contention, all injurious expressions, with every harsh and unchristian disposition, be

32 taken away from among you: and be kind and sympathizing with one another, forgiving each man his neighbour, as God, for Christ's sake, has for-  
5 given you. Be then in this, as in every other respect, imitators of God, looking up to him, as affectionate  
2 children to the example of a beloved parent, and walk in love and affection one to another, as Christ loved us, and gave himself an offering and a sweet-  
3 smelling sacrifice to God for us. As to fornication, and impure ideas, or covetousness, let them not be even remotely alluded to in your conversation, but let your intercommuning be such as becomes  
4 Christians, without obscenity, or foolish talking, or mimicry, or whatever else is unseemly; remembering that the best use of the gift of speech is that of  
5 praise and gratitude to God. For of this you have already been assured, that no fornicator, nor person of impure life, nor covetous person, whose god is his wealth, has any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God.

6 Let no man deceive you with sophistry and false distinctions on these points; but receive it as an undoubted truth, that for these offences the just anger of God overtakes the children of disobedience. Be not partakers of their evil deeds. You  
8 were once all of you dark in your understandings as your heathen neighbours; but the Lord in his mercy has shed the light of his divine knowledge upon your hearts; walk in it then as children of  
9 light, (for the fruit of his blessed Spirit shows itself  
10 in goodness, and righteousness, and truth,) seeking out what is pleasing in the sight of God, and practising it. And not only abstain from any participation in the unprofitable works of darkness in this

sinful generation, but openly mark by your words and conduct your abomination of them; for their 12 evil deeds done in secret are shameful even to mention. And yet all these things, having the full glare 13 of day poured upon them, shall be made manifest in all their deformity. Awake then, says the blessed 14 Gospel, awake thou who sleepest in darkness; awake from the death of sin, and God himself shall give thee light. See then, my brethren, that you walk 15 steadily in that light, not as fools, but as wise men; availing yourselves of your time whilst you have it: 16 for the days in which you live are evil; wherefore 17 waste it not after the manner of the unwise of this world, but recollect what conduct it is which the Lord requires at your hands. Be not drunk with 18 wine, nor addict yourselves to riotous living, but let your habits be those of spiritual holiness, express- 19 ing your joyful feelings in psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs, singing and making melody 20 with a grateful heart to the Lord; giving thanks always for all your manifold blessings to our God and Father, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ. Submit yourselves one to another in the fear of God. 21 Wives, submit yourselves to your own husbands, 22 as to the Lord: for the husband is the head of 23 the wife, as Christ is the head of the Church; presiding over it as over his own body: as therefore 24 the Church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be subject in all things to their husbands. Hus- 25 bands also, on your part, love your wives, as Christ has loved his Church, and given himself for it, that he might render it holy, having purified it by his 26 blessed Gospel in the pure waters of baptism, and 27 present it to himself a glorious Church without



spot or wrinkle, or any other blemish, holy and un-  
28 defiled. So ought husbands to love their wives  
as their own bodies; for he, who loves his wife,  
29 loves himself; and no man ever hated his own flesh,  
but rather nourishes and cherishes it, as the Lord  
30 cherishes his own Church: for we are members of  
31 his body, "bone of his bone," as Adam said of Eve,  
"and flesh of his flesh; and therefore," as the same  
passage of Scripture proceeds to say, "shall a man  
leave his father and mother, and shall be joined  
to his wife, and they two shall be one flesh,"  
32 (Genesis ii. 23, 24.) in which description of the  
union of the sexes was mystically designated also  
that union which exists between Christ and his  
33 Church. In imitation of this great example do each  
of you individually cherish his own wife as himself;  
and let the wife in her turn reverence her husband.  
6 Children, obey your parents in the Lord, for this  
2 is right; remembering that that same divine com-  
mandment which requires you to honour your father  
and your mother is the first to which a special and  
peculiar promise of a blessing is annexed: namely,  
3 "that it may be well with you, and that you may  
4 in your turn live to attain to old age." And you,  
fathers, do not irritate your children by harsh treat-  
ment, but bring them up in the instruction and  
5 wisdom which is of Christ. Servants, be obedient  
to those who are your masters upon earth, with  
becoming awe and respect, and sincerity of service;  
and recollect that in so doing you are also doing  
6 your duty to Christ. Obey them then, not merely  
because their eye is on you, and to obtain appro-  
bation from mere mortals like yourselves, but as the  
servants of Christ, and from a hearty desire to obey

God's holy will: acting cheerfully and contentedly 7  
in your humble situation, and thus showing your  
submission, not so much to men, as to God who  
has thus disposed your lot in life; knowing that 8  
all our good actions are recorded by God, and that  
whether we shall have been masters or servants, we  
shall all be rewarded by him according to our  
works. And you, masters, be in like manner kindly 9  
disposed towards your servants, not threatening  
them, nor presuming upon your authority over  
them; but recollecting that you have also a Master  
who is in heaven, in whose eyes the earthly dis-  
tinction of master and of servant is as nothing.  
Finally, my brethren, be strong in holiness, and in 10  
the protecting power of the Lord; and put on ac- 11  
cordingly that armour which righteousness only can  
supply, that, so armed, you may be able to stand  
against the machinations of the devil. For the 12  
Christian's warfare is not against flesh and blood,  
which is able only to destroy the body, but against  
spiritual beings leagued for his eternal destruction,  
the various orders of evil angels who rule over the  
dark elements of this world, and who surround the  
earth, looking down upon us, and seeking whom  
they may devour. Wherefore, I repeat, put on the 13  
whole armour of God, that you may be able to  
stand in the evil day, and to stand victorious and  
uninjured. Stand, therefore, having your loins girt 14  
about with sincerity and truth; and having put on  
the breastplate of righteousness; and having your 15  
feet shod with holy zeal to go on the blessed mis-  
sion of preaching the Gospel of peace: but above 16  
all, bearing before you the shield of faith, that with  
it you may be able to extinguish all the fiery darts

- 17 of the evil one : and take the helmet of salvation,  
and the sword of the Holy Spirit, which is the in-  
18 spired word of God : praying also without ceasing  
in every form of earnest supplication, under the  
guidance of that blessed Spirit, not for yourselves  
only, but with persevering intercession also for all  
the various members of God's universal Church.
- 19 Pray too, my brethren, for me also, that divine wis-  
dom may be imparted to me, to open my mouth  
with boldness in the cause of truth, and to expound  
truly, and to the conviction of my hearers, the sub-  
20 lime mysteries of the Gospel dispensation, for the  
service of which I am God's ambassador, though at  
this moment in fetters ;—pray for me, that notwith-  
standing my present sufferings, I may have boldness  
to accomplish the full object of my mission, and to  
speak as I ought to speak.
- 21 With regard to my present circumstances and  
condition, Tychicus my beloved brother, and a faith-  
ful servant of Christ, will give you all requisite  
22 information : I have sent him to you therefore for  
that object, that you may know how I am situated,  
and may receive consolation from him on my  
account.
- 23 Peace, love, and faith be to all the brethren from  
God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.
- 24 Grace be with all them who love our Lord Jesus  
Christ in sincerity.
- 

THERE is a disposition natural to all religious enthu-  
siasts, of whatever denomination, to consider themselves as  
the personal favourites of the Almighty, and to attempt to  
limit the communication of the divine mercies, not merely  
to their own peculiar creed, but also to some chosen few,

whom, from some perhaps casual association of feeling, they conceive to be more immediate objects of God's approbation. It requires, in fact, no easy sacrifice of our own partial views and worldly feelings, to enable us to apprehend fully that unbounded amplitude of benevolence developed in the revelation of the Christian scheme. The invariable result of human speculations upon the mysteries of theology has been rather to set limits to, than to extend the scale of God's mercies. Such being the harsh tendency of the human judgment in all ages, we need not be surprised that the Jews, whose peculiar selection as God's favoured people had been confirmed by so many repeated displays of divine power, and which the undisputed possession of so many centuries had appeared completely to establish, should have clung to this flattering mistake, with a degree of desperate pertinacity which even the preaching and miracles of our Saviour himself could scarcely shake. In the Epistle to the Galatians we have seen how reluctantly even the inspired apostles emancipated themselves from it, although the express intervention of heaven in the case of the conversion of Cornelius, and the subsequent descent of the Holy Spirit upon his Gentile associates, might have been expected to remove every doubt upon that question. The solemnity of assurance with which, in the Epistle before us, St. Paul combats the same delusion, is another proof how deeply rooted was that inveterate prejudice in the Jews of his day. Those persons who are anxious to imbibe the true spirit of Christianity, would do well to advert to this circumstance, which teaches us how inevitably, without the corrective illumination afforded by Scripture, the human mind will ever adapt its notions of the comprehensive and beneficent dealings of Providence to its own contracted conceptions and unjust predilections. The period in which any mischief to mankind might be apprehended from the peculiar error denounced by the apostle is indeed long passed by; but the lesson which this Epistle conveys has a secondary reference to one of the most prevalent of human weaknesses, and will therefore continue to be useful so long as our present nature shall continue to be what it is.

THE  
EPISTLE OF PAUL  
TO THE  
PHILIPPIANS.

---

THE date of the following Epistle, falling within that of St. Paul's two years' residence at Rome, must necessarily be placed about the years of our Lord 62 or 63.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

1 PAUL and Timothy, the servants of Jesus Christ,  
to all the saints in Christ Jesus who are in Philippi,  
2 with the bishops and deacons ;—grace be unto you,  
and peace, from God our Father, and from the Lord  
Jesus Christ.

This Epistle, which was addressed to the Church at Philippi by St. Paul during the period of his first imprisonment at Rome, consists of a beautiful and affecting delineation of the apostle's calm resignation under the persecution to which he was at that time subject, and of the warmth of his affection towards those converts for whose edification it was written. Although containing no points of doctrine which have not been discussed in his former Epistles, the whole composition is in the highest degree interesting and instructive as a brief summary of Christian faith and practice, and also as affording a most gratifying impression of the perfectly amiable character of the writer, and of the good disposition of those for whom he expresses such earnest attachment.

I thank my God in all my recollections of you in 3  
my daily prayers which I offer with much joy and 4  
gratitude to God on your account, for your unani- 5  
mous perseverance in the faith of the Gospel, from  
the day in which you first received it even to the  
present moment: feeling firmly confident, that he 6  
who began this good work in you will enable you  
to persevere in it until its final accomplishment in  
the great day of our Lord Jesus Christ. Nor can 7  
I, nor ought I to, do otherwise than thus earnestly  
pray for you, when I recollect how my conviction  
of your sincerity in the faith, and of your partici-  
pation with me in the gifts of the ever-blessed  
Spirit, gave me consolation and confidence during  
the period of my imprisonment, and afterwards,  
when I was called to make my defence before the  
emperor, and in my subsequent labours for the pro-  
pagation of the Gospel. God is my witness how 8  
ardently I love you with all Christian affection ;  
and I earnestly pray that the fervency of your zeal 9  
and mutual good will may abound in you still more  
and more in all holy wisdom and knowledge ; that 10  
you may be able to assign the grounds for the faith  
which is in you, remaining sincere in your belief,  
and pure in the soundness of your doctrine, until  
the great day of Christ ; being filled with those 11  
fruits of holiness which proceed from faith in Jesus  
Christ, to the glory and honour of God.

Brethren, I rejoice in being able to assure you, 12  
that the persecutions under which I have recently  
laboured have rather promoted than retarded the  
cause of the Gospel ; inasmuch as my imprison- 13  
ment for the sake of Christ has been a matter of

notoriety, not in the palace<sup>1</sup> only, but in all other  
14 places; and many of our brethren in consequence,  
hearing of the courage with which I bore my confinement,  
have themselves derived from thence fresh confidence to preach the word of God without  
15 fear. It is true, that not all of them have displayed  
this increased zeal for the propagation of the Gospel  
from pure and worthy motives; for though some  
have had no other object than to spread more  
widely the knowledge of Christ, others, I fear, have  
assumed this increased energy for no better reason  
than that of personal emulation against myself;  
16 these latter preaching Christ, not from any hearty  
wish to the cause, but solely for the purpose of triumphing  
over me at a time when my own exertions  
17 were restrained by my imprisonment; the former  
from sincere and holy conviction, and a desire to  
assist my endeavours in the service of truth, when  
I was precluded from any effectual services of my  
18 own. But what of that? Let their several motives  
have been what they may, still at all events the  
great purpose has been answered; whether it were

<sup>1</sup> It is generally supposed that Poppæa, the profligate wife of Nero, was well disposed towards the Christians in consequence of St. Paul's preaching at this period. Such a convert was not indeed calculated to reflect credit upon Christianity; but it is not improbable that her influence may have been the means of rescuing the apostle from his impending perils, and thus of promoting the cause of the Gospel. When we consider the elevated tone of morality which pervades the writings of Seneca, it seems not a very improbable supposition, that much of what we admire in the works of that inconsistent character may also have been derived from personal communication with St. Paul during his residence in the neighbourhood of the imperial palace.

from unworthy, or whether from worthy feelings; whether in rivalry, or whether in sincerity; still the work has been done, and the faith of Christ has been preached; and accordingly most sincerely have I rejoiced, and do still rejoice, in what has occurred. For I am firmly convinced, that all this will contri- 19  
bute to my eternal salvation through your prayers in my behalf, and through the protecting aid and guidance of the Holy Spirit of Jesus Christ; trust- 20  
ing, as I most confidently do, that God will not allow the efforts of my apostleship to be brought to shame; but that now, as on all former occasions, whether my impending lot be life or death, I shall be enabled by my personal exertions in his cause to promote the glory of my blessed Redeemer. If my 21  
life for the present be spared, it will, I am assured, be that I may expend it in Christ's service:—if I am to die, it will be for my own individual benefit. Longer life will be to me but longer toil: yet which 22  
to pray for, whether life or death, I know not. Two different feelings call me in two different di- 23  
rections: my own wishes lead me to long for death and to be with Christ, as far the best alternative for myself; but, on the other hand, I feel that you 24  
cannot yet spare me: that my services as an apostle are yet necessary for the work of the Gospel; and feeling this, I am confident that it is not yet 25  
God's pleasure to release me, but that I shall be called to remain with you yet some time longer for the advancement of your joy and comfort in the faith; and that you will have yet further reason to 26  
boast of the success of my spiritual labours among you, after I shall have been permitted to see you once again.



27 Be, however, this as it may, do you, at all events,  
my brethren, live worthily of the Gospel of Christ,  
that either, as it may please God, present with you  
I may see, or absent from you I may hear, the  
unanimity and firmness of your faith, and rejoice in  
your zeal and exertions for the propagation of the  
28 truth. And be not dismayed at the violence of  
your persecutors, which, whilst it marks them as  
the children of perdition, is to you only another  
proof that your heavenly Father designs you for  
29 salvation, since he has been pleased to allow you  
not only to profess your faith in Christ, but also to  
30 suffer persecution for his sake : such persecution as  
you have seen me undergo on former occasions, and  
such as that to which you know me to be at this  
2 moment exposed. In the name then of that holy  
consolation which we all feel in Christ, in the name  
of our community of Christian love, in the name of  
those blessed gifts of the Spirit of which, we trust,  
we have all participated, in the name of that dispensation of mercy and charity which our Redeemer  
2 has bequeathed to us, fill up, I beseech you, the  
measure of my joy in you by the unanimity of your  
faith, the fervency of your love to God and to one  
another, and the kindliness and harmony of your  
3 social intercourse. Let no petty jealousies exist  
among you ; no desire to raise yourselves by the  
depression of others ; but in all your intercommuni-  
ings, in all your judgments respecting persons, let  
each man deem meekly of himself, and prefer his  
4 neighbours' interests to his own. Avoid accordingly  
every selfish feeling, and let your foremost object be  
5 the good of others ; in this respect making the ex-

ample of Christ your model, who, although arrayed 6  
with the glory of divinity, and feeling it no robbery  
to be in all respects as God, yet voluntarily sub- 7  
mitted to strip himself of his high privileges, and to  
put on the form of a servant, assuming all the  
infirmities of our nature, and clothing himself with 8  
human flesh, to submit to death itself, and not  
to death merely, but that of a malefactor upon the  
cross: wherefore God on his part has highly exalted 9  
him, and given him a name above every other name;  
that at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, 10  
of things in heaven, and things on earth, and  
things under the earth; and that every tongue 11  
should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the  
glory of God the Father. Wherefore, my beloved 12  
friends, according to that doctrine which I have  
always taught, and which you have so earnestly  
received, strive, I beseech you, not merely with the  
former zeal which you displayed when I was with  
you, but much more now that I am prevented by  
my persecutors from visiting you, anxiously and  
perseveringly strive, with fear and trembling, to  
work out the great work of your salvation; for you 13  
have God's own Spirit to assist your endeavours;  
which in its mercy can give you both will to attempt,  
and ability to perform. Perform then the duties 14  
required of you without murmurings or discontent;  
that you may show yourselves a blameless and 15  
single-minded people, the inoffensive children of  
God, among a perverse and obstinate generation,  
as lights in the midst of surrounding darkness, 16  
clinging to the word of life: so that I may finally  
have reason to boast of you, in the great day of our

Redeemer, that the labour which I have bestowed  
17 upon you was not expended in vain. God grant  
such a glorious termination to my exertions, and  
then even though it be my lot to be made a sacrifice  
and offering for your faith, I gladly hail the condi-  
18 tions, and rejoice for and with you. May you also,  
in your sufferings in the same holy cause, feel the  
same consolation which I have done, and rejoice for  
and with me.

19 I hope, by the blessing of our Lord Jesus, to  
send Timothy shortly to you, that I may have the  
20 consolation of hearing respecting you. For I have  
no one with me who is so ardently and sincerely  
21 attached to you as he is. The others with whom I  
am obliged to associate at present have rather their  
own interests and convenience at heart than the  
22 furtherance of the cause of the Gospel; but of his  
merits and good disposition you have proof as well  
as myself, having witnessed with how much affec-  
tionate attention, as a son under the direction of his  
father, he has laboured with me in the toils of my  
23 ministry. Him I hope to send immediately, the  
moment that I learn the result of my present busi-  
24 ness; and I trust in God's mercy, that I myself  
shall be enabled to follow him after no long interval.  
25 I have however thought it expedient already to send  
to you Epaphroditus my brother, and fellow labourer,  
and fellow soldier, as my messenger to you, and  
one who has afforded me much assistance under  
26 my late afflictions: for he was very anxious to  
return to you, particularly as he knew that you had  
felt considerable uneasiness on the subject of his  
27 recent illness. He has been indeed extremely un-  
well; so much so as to have been in considerable

danger of his life<sup>1</sup>: but God was merciful to him, and through him to myself also, as his loss would have indeed been a fearful addition to my other sorrows. I was therefore the more anxious to send 28 him to you, that you might have the pleasure of seeing him restored to health, and that I might have the satisfaction of sympathizing in your common gratification. Cherish him therefore, in the 29 name of Christ, with all joy, as one of those to whom you owe much; for his dangerous illness was 30 brought on by his zeal in Christ's service, in consequence of his not husbanding his strength, but over fatiguing himself in the ministry of the Gospel, whilst affording me by his own individual exertions that assistance which I have been in the habit of receiving from you all.

<sup>1</sup> The following is Dr. Paley's remark upon this passage. "No intimation is given that Epaphroditus's recovery was miraculous. It is plainly I think spoken of as a natural event. This instance, together with one in the second Epistle to Timothy, ('Trophimus have I left at Miletum sick,') affords a proof that the power of performing cures, and, by parity of reason, of working miracles, was a power which only visited the apostles occasionally, and did not at all depend upon their own will. Paul undoubtedly would have healed Epaphroditus if he could. Nor, if the power of working cures had awaited his disposal, would he have left his fellow traveller at Miletum sick." This fact, Dr. Paley justly observes, contains a strong internal proof of the authenticity of the Epistle, and of the sincerity of the writer: a forged document would not have spared the miracle, and an impostor writing for the furtherance of his own selfish views, would not have voluntarily deviated into an admission of his own inability to assist his friend in his calamity.

3 And now, my brethren, once more let me exhort you, "*rejoice in the merciful dispensation of redemption through Christ's merits only.*" This I have often impressed upon you before, but it is a sentiment which I cannot too often repeat, nor you too often  
2 hear. And accordingly I repeat, beware of those teachers, who, like angry dogs, bark at the simplicity of this faith, and who would adulterate it by intermixing with it the cancelled obligations of the ceremonial law; beware of the circumcision<sup>1</sup> which they would enforce upon you as a necessary means of justification, but which if used by you for that purpose, so far from being a symbol of holiness, will be nothing less than the cutting you off from  
3 the covenant of Christ. We in fact are the true circumcision, we who worship God in the spirit of holiness, and who make our boast of the merits of Christ Jesus, and not of a mere mark impressed as  
4 a symbol upon our flesh. And yet, may I venture to assert, were I disposed to make my own boast of that external righteousness which consists in carnal observances, I might do so, with as much or more confidence than themselves; having been brought up from my infancy in the most punctilious deference to all that the ritual law of Moses requires;  
5 having been circumcised on the eighth day from my birth; one of the true blood of Israel by descent;

<sup>1</sup> The ideas intended to be conveyed by this passage having been suggested by the relation which exists between the Greek words *περιτομή* and *κατατομή* are incapable of being rendered in our own language otherwise than by a paraphrase. To native Greeks the apostle's implied allusion must have been readily intelligible.

a member of the tribe of Benjamin; a Hebrew from Hebrew parents; educated in all the legal learning of the Pharisees; a zealous persecutor of Christ's Church, which I then deemed sinful innovation; and an observer of every tittle of those rites and ceremonies which the law requires; yet all these proud acquisitions, as I once deemed them, this carnal righteousness, I have now learned by the wisdom which has been communicated to me from Christ to consider but as lost and unprofitable labour. And not these things only, but every thing else, all which the world counts honourable and desirable, I have also learned to consider as vanity, when compared with the paramount importance and excellence of Christ's Gospel; for the sake of which I have abandoned all, looking upon them as the vilest of refuse, in order that I might obtain the great prize of salvation through Christ, and be enabled to shelter myself in him; not urging my own righteousness in the performance of the law of ritual works, but pleading my humble reliance upon the merits of my Redeemer, and clinging to that justification of the sinner before God which is communicated through the medium of faith: that I may know him, and the power of that great Being who raised him from the dead; and that, having partaken in the afflictions which he underwent whilst upon earth, I may share also in his death, in the hope that I may finally be a partaker in his glorious resurrection. For I flatter not myself that I have as yet attained that great object, nor the perfection to which I trust that I shall one day be admitted; but I pursue it with my most earnest endeavours,

grasping at, and striving to lay my hand<sup>1</sup> upon that righteousness for the attainment to which my blessed  
13 Saviour laid his hand upon me. I repeat it, my brethren, I dare not as yet flatter myself that I have already attained; but I anxiously devote myself to this one single object, looking forward to the end of my race, not stopping to consider the ground over  
14 which I have already passed; and keeping in my eye the glorious prize which is to crown my labours; the calling of God from above to the righteousness which  
15 is in Christ Jesus. Let this glorious prize then, my brethren, be the common and unanimous object of us all; and leaving the minuter differences of opinion upon less important<sup>2</sup> matters to be reconciled by the

<sup>1</sup> This beautiful picture of a humble and zealous Christian cannot be too much admired. If such was St. Paul's estimate of himself, what human being shall dare to rate his own endeavours after righteousness more highly?

<sup>2</sup> We have here the best practical rule for attaining that unity of faith which all mixed communities of Christians profess to aim at, but which so few attain. It is not by the litigation of minute differences of opinion, but by their accordance in those main propositions which compose the basis of Christianity, that the sentiments of large religious communities can ever be made to harmonize in one consistent whole. Where the great doctrine of Christ's atonement, and of sanctification by the Holy Spirit, are once assented to, either the less important coincidences of belief will follow of course, or at all events any remaining conflict of opinion will be so modified and diminished, as to render its continuance perfectly compatible with the most entire good will to God and man. But the impatience which would elevate into importance every trifling dissimilarity of feeling, so far from establishing that unanimity which it so injudiciously pursues, not only by the angry feelings

illumination of that Holy Spirit, who will not let you wander from the truth, let us at all events be of one 16 mind with regard to those great vital principles which form the standard and criterion of our faith. Be 17 you then followers of my doctrine, and of all those who adhere to the same doctrine unadulterated by human inventions; for many there are calling 18 themselves Christians (against whom I have often forewarned you, and now warn you once more, and that even with tears) of whom I must unhesitatingly declare that they are enemies to the doctrine of redemption by the death and sufferings of Christ; men whose end is destruction; whose God is their 19 belly and their bodily appetites, and whose glory is in their own debased views and in their own carnal pursuits. But our conversation, my brethren, is 20 there where we have placed our hopes, even in heaven itself, from whence we look for the coming of our Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: who shall 21 change our frail body that it may become like to his glorious body, through the operation of that mighty power by which he is able to subdue all things to himself. Wherefore, my beloved friends, you who 4 are my crown, and my boast, whom I so earnestly love and am so anxiously desirous to see, stand firm I beseech you in this the very basis and groundwork of our faith.

I beseech most earnestly Euodias and Syntyche 2 to be of one mind towards each other, as becomes

which it excites, but also by the intellectual embarrassment which it creates, is the prolific mother of heresies in the Church, and of those fearful animosities which have for so many ages disfigured the society of Christians.



3 Christians: and I beg of you, my faithful friend  
and coadjutor, to use your good endeavours towards  
them, recollecting the kind assistance which they  
afforded me and Clement, and my other fellow  
labourers, whose names are written in the book of  
4 life, in the toils of our ministry. Rejoice in the  
5 Lord always: again I say it: rejoice. Let the meek-  
ness and forbearance of your conduct be known to  
6 all men. The eye of the Lord is upon you. Be not  
over anxious respecting your allotment in this life;  
but, in all your prayers for the relief of your im-  
pending wants, repose yourselves with confidence in  
God's merciful arrangements, giving him thanks for  
7 all past and present blessings: and the peace of  
God, which surpasses all that we can conceive of it,  
shall keep your hearts and minds, through Christ  
Jesus.

8 Finally, my brethren, whatever things are true,  
whatever things are honourable, whatever things are  
just, whatever things are pure, whatever things are  
amiable, whatever things are commendable; what-  
ever is virtuous, whatever is really praiseworthy—  
9 make such things the object of your pursuit; using  
also your earnest endeavours to carry into practice  
all those lessons which you have at various times  
and in various manners received from me, and which  
it has been my aim to illustrate by my own conduct:  
and the God of peace shall be with you.

10 I have been much gratified, and thank our Lord  
for it, by the beneficent recollection you have lately  
testified of me, by your liberal donation, which I  
was aware that you had in contemplation some  
11 time ago, but wanted the means to send it. I do  
not say this because my late privations have been

any great cause of affliction to me; for I have learned to be contented with my daily lot, be it what it may: I know how to accommodate myself with 12 poverty, and not to be elevated by prosperity; I have learned the difficult art how to bear with equal temper abundance of food, or its privation; to abound in the good things of this life, or to be excluded from them; for the strength which I possess is 13 from Christ himself. <sup>1</sup> Nevertheless you have acted 14 kindly and properly, in contributing thus liberally for my relief. You know, my beloved friends, that 15 when, in the commencement of my apostleship, I passed through Macedon to preach the Gospel in other districts also, no other Church contributed any thing to my support, but yourselves only: even when 16 I was resident in Thessalonica, you, on two separate occasions, gave me proofs of your liberality. Now I 17 am far from desiring these donations on my own account; though I cannot but rejoice that your conduct has been such as will one day reap its due

<sup>1</sup> It will be remembered, that the apostle has on a former occasion (2 Corinthians viii. 1—6.) spoken with much commendation of the liberality of the Macedonian Churches, of course including that of Philippi, for the relief of the distressed Christians at Jerusalem. It appears from this passage that they had subsequently contributed a fund for his own support during his tedious imprisonment at Rome, in addition to what they had formerly given towards his maintenance whilst preaching the Gospel in Greece. There is something very amiable in this interchange of kindness between the great spiritual teacher and his disciples, which presents a striking contrast with the cold and niggardly disposition displayed by the wealthy Corinthians, to which he alludes more than once in his Epistles to that community.

- 18 reward. At present be assured I have no wants ;  
your liberality has supplied, and more than supplied,  
them all, in the donation which I received from you  
by the hands of Epaphroditus ; and which will have  
proved, I trust, a sweet-smelling, acceptable, and  
19 pleasing sacrifice to God himself. And he, the God  
whom I serve, shall supply all your wants by the  
riches of his mercy, in glory, through Christ Jesus.  
20 Now to Him our God and Father be glory for ever  
and ever. Amen.
- 21 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren  
22 who are with me salute you. All the saints, particularly those of the emperor's household, salute you.
- 23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.
- 

To those persons who read the holy Scriptures for the purpose of mere moral edification, and with whom the tranquil amenity of disposition which is the result of a humble and sincere faith in God, and of charity to mankind, is in higher estimation than the intellectual excitement afforded by the intricate problems of theology when considered as a science, this short Epistle will be found to be replete with the best possible instruction. It affords a faithful and a delightful representation of what a community of Christians may, and ought to be. It is the picture of a suffering, yet, so far as the pressure of temporal affliction will permit, of a triumphant Church : a Church in which both the pastor and his flock are labouring under severe privations, and looking forward with awe, though not with apprehension, to impending persecution. Yet in the place of complaint or remonstrance we can perceive in it only the feelings of unshaken confidence in the divine mercy, of un-

**affected purity of heart, and of single-minded uncalculating benevolence.** The harassed mind of the apostle appears to repose with delight, in the midst of his own personal sufferings, upon the recollection of the often experienced good will of his favourite disciples ; and we learn from his own words with what warmth of affection they in their turn repaid the kind solicitude of their instructor. From the perusal of this interesting composition every reader will necessarily rise up a better Christian : and, if not more learned in those profound and momentous truths which are developed in other portions of the sacred writings, at all events deeply imbued with those fervent conceptions, and those harmonized and chastened feelings, which constitute the main substance of practical Christianity.

THE  
EPISTLE OF PAUL  
TO THE  
COLOSSIANS.

---

THE following Epistle was written nearly at the same period with that addressed to the Ephesians, A.D. 61, and conveyed from Rome, where St. Paul was then a prisoner, by the same bearer, Tychicus.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

1 PAUL an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God,  
2 and Timothy our brother, to the holy brethren believing in Christ in Colosse—grace be unto you and peace from God our Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.

The subject of the Epistle to the Colossians is nearly the same with that of the one written to the Church of Ephesus ; namely, the perfect impartiality of God's dispensations, in calling the Gentiles equally with the Jews to a participation in the Gospel covenant. The apostle also in the course of his argument alludes incidentally to the growing heresy of the Gnostics, and then, as usual, concludes his Epistle with an earnest exhortation to a holy and moral life.

3 We give continual thanks in our prayers for you to God and the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,  
4 having heard of your faith in Christ Jesus, and of  
5 the love you bear to all his saints, in consequence of the hope which you have treasured for yourselves

in the heavens, according as it was first preached to you in the Gospel of truth ; a Gospel which has 6 been communicated not to you only, but to all the world, in which it is now bringing forth the fruits of righteousness, as it has done in you ever since the merciful dispensations of God were first revealed to you. That same doctrine which you 7 originally received from myself, you have also subsequently learned from my friend and fellow-labourer Epaphras, who is my faithful assistant in the ministry of Christ ; and who has reported to me respecting 8 that fervency of holy love which the divine Spirit has kindled in you.

Having received this encouraging account of you, 9 we in consequence have not ceased to mention you continually in our prayers, entreating God that he would fill you with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding : and that you 10 may henceforth walk worthily of the Lord in all that is pleasing in his sight, bringing forth abundantly the fruit of good works, and increasing daily in the apprehension of his ways ; being endued, by his glo- 11 rious assistance, with power to bear your present afflictions, not only with patience and equanimity, but even with joy ; giving thanks unto our heavenly 12 Father who has made us fit to be admitted partakers of the inheritance of his saints, by extending to us the light of the blessed Gospel, and delivering 13 us from the power of darkness, and comprehending us within the kingdom of his beloved Son : through 14 whose precious blood we have the promise of redemption, and remission of our sins ; who is the 15 image of the invisible God, as he was antecedent in existence to the whole created universe. For by 16

him were created all things which are in heaven, and upon the earth ; all things visible, and invisible, all the spiritual hierarchy under whatever denomination they may come ;—all were created by  
17 him, and for him<sup>1</sup> ; and as he was, and is, prior in existence to them all, so they all exist in and by  
18 him. He, that same blessed Being, is the head of his own mystical body the Church : he, its first author ; he, in his own person, the first-fruits of the grave, that in all things he might lead the way for us, and in all things be supreme Lord over us.  
19 For it pleased the Father that the fulness and completion of all created beings should dwell in him ;  
20 and that through him, and through his precious blood shed upon the cross, expiation and reconciliation should be made for all things, whether they be things upon the earth, or things in the heavens.  
21 And accordingly by that blessed redemption he has now reconciled you to himself, who were formerly alienated from him, and living in enmity to  
22 him in the midst of your evil works ; that having submitted his own body for your sakes to a cruel death, he might present you to God holy, unblame-  
23 able, and unimpeached. Of which redemption you cannot fail to participate, if only you will remain firm and stedfast in your reliance upon him, and suffer not yourselves to be turned away from your hopes in that Gospel which has been recently com-

<sup>1</sup> What can be a stronger assertion of our blessed Saviour's divinity than this passage of the apostle, which declares him to have been the Creator of all things visible and invisible, not excepting the very angels themselves ? For the explanation of the words which I have rendered "the spiritual hierarchy," see the note appended to Ephesians i. 21.

municated to you, and not to you only, but also to every other creature under heaven; of which Gospel I, Paul, am his appointed minister. Accordingly, 24 I rejoice in my present afflictions which I undergo on your account, and readily take my share in bearing those tribulations which befall in this world the servants of Christ, in the hope that I may be serviceable to his body, the community of his Church: doing my utmost in the ministry of the 25 dispensation of God's will, which I have been commissioned to preach among you: a mysterious<sup>1</sup> dispensation which has been concealed from the knowledge of the past ages, but which now, in the fulness of time, has been revealed to his saints; to whom 27 God has been pleased to make known the riches of this glorious and mystical covenant with all nations; namely, of Christ resident within you, and calling you to the inheritance of glory; whom we 28 preach; warning, and instructing all men in the wisdom of divine holiness; in the hope that we may one day present them to God perfect in the faith and obedience of Christ Jesus. For which great 29 object I spare no exertions, but strive with all the might which has been given to me by him from whom all power is derived.

I wish you, accordingly, to understand how much 2 violent persecution I have sustained in the cause of the Gentiles, not in your cause only and in that of the inhabitants of Laodicea, to whom I am personally known, but in that also of the remote nations of the earth, because I have preached the doctrine of the free mercies of Christ to the exclusion of

<sup>1</sup> See Ephesians iii. 5.



2 ritual holiness by the covenant of works ; in order  
that your hearts may be comforted under this as-  
surance of God's gracious dispensations, and that  
you may be knit together in Christian love, and  
brought to a perfect knowledge of the immense wis-  
dom of the divine arrangements, and of the great  
mystery of the eternal God ; namely, of the Father,  
3 and of the Lord Jesus Christ ; in whom are stored  
all the secret treasures of wisdom and of knowledge.  
4 And this I remind you of the more earnestly, be-  
cause I am anxious to put you on your guard against  
the unsound arguments of plausible teachers, who  
may wish to entice you away from this great prin-  
5 ciple of our faith. For though necessarily absent  
from you at this moment, my thoughts are con-  
tinually with you, rejoicing in a well-founded con-  
viction of the soundness of your opinions, and the  
steadfastness of your belief in the effectual redemp-  
6 tion communicated by Christ. As then you have  
received that faith in our one common Saviour, so  
7 be careful to walk perseveringly in it : taking root  
in it, and building upon that firm foundation on  
which you have been taught to rest your hope,  
and giving God thanks for that blessed dispensation  
8 of mercy. Beware then, lest any man lead you  
away captive by a false and deceitful philosophy  
founded upon mere human speculations, and a  
fanciful arrangement of the physical elements, but  
9 at total variance with the Gospel revelation : for in  
the person of Christ, be assured, is substantially  
comprehended the full and complete essence of the  
10 Godhead : and as the fulness of the Godhead is  
complete in him, who is placed in dignity far above  
all the celestial hierarchy, so is his fulness complete

in you. To the faith of that great and glorious <sup>11</sup>  
Being recollect that you have been consecrated,  
not by the rite of a mere carnal circumcision,  
but by the circumcision of the heart, the spiritual  
circumcision of the Christian covenant ; namely,  
the putting away of the sinful propensities of the  
flesh ; and being buried with Christ by baptism, that <sup>12</sup>  
you might rise again to a new and regenerated  
nature through your faith and reliance on that  
divine power which raised our Redeemer himself  
from the grave. Remember then that all of you <sup>13</sup>  
lay dead in your sins, in the unsubdued and un-  
circumcised impurity of your natural corruptions ;  
but that God has in his mercy given you the prin-  
ciple of a new and a better life through him, re-  
mitting to you all your sins ; and blotting out and <sup>14</sup>  
cancelling the written law of ritual holiness, in  
which you could read nothing but your own eternal  
condemnation, and finally nailing it to his expiatory  
cross. By these wondrous means has our blessed <sup>15</sup>  
Redeemer stripped all the spiritual powers who were  
leagued for your destruction of their means of an-  
noyance, and led them away in triumph. Let no <sup>16</sup>  
man then for the future tempt you to compromise  
or adulterate this simple and satisfactory doctrine,  
by teaching you to repose your faith in minute and  
unimportant observances, of meats, of drinks, of  
festivals, of new moons, or of sabbaths<sup>1</sup>, which <sup>17</sup>

<sup>1</sup> It seems probable, that by this injunction the apostle intends to deprecate the superstitious observance of the holidays or days of rest established in the Mosaic law, of which see an enumeration in Leviticus xxiii., rather than to discourage the sanctification of every seventh day, as practised by Christians ; for which latter usage, in addition to

were indeed provisionally established by the Almighty as types of the spiritual holiness which was to be revealed in the latter ages, but which were finally accomplished, and consequently superseded, 18 by the perfect holiness of Christ. Let no man, I repeat, beguile you by this or any other similar doctrine; such as that, for example, of the baseness of all material beings, and of the reverence due to all things partaking of a spiritual nature<sup>1</sup>, a doc-

its enormous political importance and its salutary effect upon our religious feelings, we have our Saviour's own authority in several passages of the Gospels.

<sup>1</sup> The heresy of the Docetæ or Gnostics, which the Apostle here alludes to, and which owed its first origin to some mistaken theories respecting the nature of the physical universe, may be traced back to a very remote period of pagan antiquity. The very obvious superiority which, to the most superficial observer, the phenomena of mind appear to possess over those of matter had, so early as the time of the commencement of the Magian sect, suggested to the oriental philosophers the well-known theory of two self-existent, independent, intellectual principles; the one the Creator of the spiritual world and the source of good; the other the Artificer of the material creation and the author of evil. The system of religious belief founded upon these principles seems, in its later modification, to have borne a strong resemblance to that fanciful doctrine of the Platonists, which inculcated the necessity of subtilizing and defecating the human soul by acts of mortification in this life, in order to enable it to ascend after death, as it were by a kind of specific levity, purged from the gross contagion of matter, to the abode of the ethereal essences, there to be reunited to the Godhead, from which it had originally emanated. It is obvious that this doctrine (although, from its seeming coincidence with some of the then admitted phenomena of the universe, perhaps the

trine first suggested by the proud and meddling presumption of the falsely wise, who would dogma-

least irrational of all those systems of paganism which accompanied the infancy of science) is defective in the most essential requisite of a sound religious belief; namely, a tendency to promote the practice of rational morality: the purity which it enjoins being rather that fantastic holiness which consists in the abstinence from what may appear gross with reference to our bodily senses, and in the attenuation of our animal nature, than in the performance of those nobler duties which the laws of an enlightened conscience prescribe, and Christianity approves.

The opinions of the Gnostics, therefore, when attempted to be engrafted upon, and identified with, the sublime and beneficent morality of the Gospel, although plausible, as St. Paul has observed of them, in their first aspect, from their accordance with a very seductive prejudice, were in reality a fatal and pernicious innovation upon the simple purity of its tenets. In the first place, by teaching men to seek after effectual righteousness in the schools of merely animal mortification, they not only inculcated a degrading superstition, but fell also into the same mistaken view of the means of reconciliation with God, so derogatory to the all-sufficient expiatory merits of Christ, which St. Paul has reprobated with such just severity in the case of the Judaizing Christians. Secondly, another inference to which they naturally led was that to which the apostle alludes in the passage before us, respecting the adoration due to the several degrees of angelic beings, who, being supposed by this theory to be emanations from the divine Being himself, were consequently asserted to be legitimate objects of worship. The great Christian doctrine of the resurrection of the body was also at direct variance with these principles; and, lastly, from the supposed impurity which was considered as essentially attached to all material substances whatever, they involved the necessary consequence of the denial of that fundamental truth of the Gospel

tize upon the nature of those high things which human eye has never been allowed to contemplate;

revelation, the incarnation of our blessed Saviour. The pure and spiritual Godhead, it was argued, could never be attached to gross material elements, without incurring moral pollution; and as this latter supposition was of course deemed blasphemous, a strange theory was invented to meet this difficulty; namely, that a mere incorporeal phantom, not our divine Redeemer himself, had been allowed by Providence to appear for a certain season upon the earth, to perform the external functions of a human being, and finally to submit to a seeming crucifixion. To this gratuitous and wild assumption various allusions are made in different parts of the apostolical writings; more particularly in the commencement of the first and second Epistles of St. John.

In this tissue of heretical and unchristian opinions, all of them necessary deductions from one plausible but mistaken theory, we have an awful illustration of the dangerous errors into which we may be led by a single false speculation of human reason, the moment that we desert, in the pursuit of our own suggestions, the safe line marked out to us by the revealed word of Scripture. But the abuses resulting from the mistaken views of Gnosticism did not terminate here: on the contrary, they were found eventually to be as destructive of even that practical purity of morals which they professed to inculcate, as they were incompatible with the general theory of the Christian covenant. It would appear at first sight a strangely paradoxical fact, did we not know from experience how many ramifications of seemingly contradictory errors may spring from one common root, that this very spiritualizing system had, with a numerous class of that school, even so early as the apostolical age, a tendency to encourage the grossest sensuality and libertinism to a truly fearful extent. That such however was the fact is established by the Epistles of Peter, John, and Jude, and by the concurrent testimony

and who would turn your adoration to inferior and 19 created beings, such as the angels, from him who is

of most of the early Christian writers. This singular circumstance we may however perhaps account for by recollecting the parallel error which has laid the foundation of Antinomianism in more recent times. In the instance of both these heresies, the effort to elevate by every possible argument the *spiritual* portion of our nature, by the depression and degradation of the *animal*, seems to have led to the monstrous conclusion, that the abuse of so worthless and unimportant a part of our constitution as the bodily senses, must be a matter of perfect indifference to the soul itself, whose totally distinct and far superior functions could never derive any real contamination from the conduct of its ill-assorted and mortal companion. As the human heart is continually lying in wait for every the most trivial pretext for the indulgence of its corrupt appetites, we cannot accordingly be surprised that this theory, hollow and unsubstantial as it is, should have had sufficient plausibility to conciliate that numerous portion of mankind who would gladly embrace religion, yet want strength of mind to part with their sensual enjoyments, and who therefore strive to render compatible one with the other what God has eternally disjoined, namely, spiritual holiness and practical immorality.

Such was the character of one of the earliest and most pernicious heresies which has disfigured Christianity, and which continued to linger in the eastern Churches considerably after the apostolical times. The last form under which it appeared was that of the sect of the Manicheans, which so deeply polluted the pure stream of divine truth in the latter part of the third, and during the greater part of the fourth centuries, numbering at one season among its votaries the powerful mind of Augustine himself. If we are to believe the charges brought by the Church of Rome against the Albigenses, (and in this respect its assertion appears worthy of credit,) the opinions of that unfortunate

the head of all things, and whose body we the several members of his Church are; members knit together by him in symmetrical arrangement, and mutual subservience one to the other, and growing up under him to the full maturity of spiritual holiness. If then you be really dead with Christ to all the carnal elements of this world, why, as though still living in this world, do you continue to tamper with these deluding and human speculations, imagining that holiness consists in a fanciful imitation of spiritual essences, and in proscribing the common and legitimate exercise of our corporeal functions; with all the other wild conceptions of a fantastic philosophy on the subject of our perishable nature: a philosophy plausible in its first aspect to our human prejudices, but the natural consequence of which is rather the degradation of our animal constitution by its superstitious mortification, than its elevation and correction by a wise and holy discipline?

3 Being then risen with Christ to a new and holier life, let it be your great object to live according to this blessed change, and to turn your attention henceforward from these earthly speculations to that heaven where Christ sits at the right hand of God. Set your affections accordingly not upon terrestrial, but upon celestial things: for you are dead to this world, and your better life is at present

people also were, at a much more recent period, infected with the same taint: a circumstance which ought not to diminish our indignation at the atrocities exercised against them under that plea, but which must necessarily lower the admiration with which, upon other grounds, we are naturally disposed to regard them.

in store for you with Christ in God's keeping; when therefore Christ shall appear at his second 4 coming, then also shall you appear with him in glory. Meanwhile consider your mortal members 5 as dead, together with all their corrupt desires; abstaining from fornication, uncleanness, sins against nature, evil and inordinate appetites, and avarice which is a species of idolatry; for all which offences 6 the wrath of God comes upon the children of disobedience; in which enormities yourselves once 7 lived, during your unconverted and carnal course. If however these propensities are now dead within 8 you, as I trust they are, then, in the next place<sup>1</sup>, put away those which still cling to our nature, even after its grosser inclinations are subdued; I mean, perversity of temper, violent anger, ill will, evil speaking, with all light and indelicate conversation;

<sup>1</sup> The apostle here appears to make a distinction between those sins, the indulgence in which, from their deep enormity, is perfectly irreconcilable under all circumstances with a sincere profession of Christianity, and those which, as resulting rather from the infirmities natural to the human temper than from deliberate ill intention, or unrestrained habit, may occasionally continue to cling to the character even after some progress is made in the work of conversion. It should be recollected, however, that these last-mentioned failings, though of a somewhat less deep dye than the others, are still incompatible with that high degree of purity which our religion enjoins; they may be to a certain degree venial so long as they are the growth of ignorance, or of feelings not yet perfectly subdued by religious discipline; but he cannot be said to be a real Christian, in the full acceptance of the term, who continues wilfully to offend in any one of them, however trivial they may appear, when contrasted with graver enormities.



9 use also no deceit one with the other, recollecting  
that you have renounced all the evil practices of  
10 your unregenerated nature, and have put on the  
new man; that renovated character which is formed  
in the knowledge of divine wisdom, after the image  
of God himself. Under which character all the  
former distinctions which separated nation from  
nation, and man from man, are for ever and effec-  
11 tually done away; so that it is no longer a question  
which is the Gentile or which is the Jew; which  
the circumcised or which the uncircumcised; which  
the Barbarian, which the Scythian; which the slave,  
which the free man; but one single designation,  
that of "Christian," alike comprehends and defines  
12 you all. Put on therefore, as God's own holy and  
beloved children, habits of compassion, kindness,  
13 meekness, gentleness, slowness to anger; bearing  
with one another, and forgiving each man his  
neighbour's offences and provocations, as Christ  
has in his mercy forgiven yours towards himself.  
14 And above all things put on Christian love and  
charity, which is the great band of union by which  
all the other Christian virtues are held together.  
15 And let the peace of God reign in your hearts, that  
you may serve him with one mind, as you are per-  
sonally collected together in one body: and offer  
with one accord your joint praises and thanksgivings  
16 to him. Let the holy word of Christ dwell within  
you, bringing forth fruit abundantly; that you may  
be filled with divine wisdom, teaching and admon-  
ishing one another with psalms, and hymns, and  
spiritual songs, singing to the Lord in your hearts  
17 with thankfulness. And whatsoever you do, in  
word or deed, do it in the name and for the glory

of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to our God and Father through him.

Wives, submit yourselves to your respective husbands, and in so doing show your obedience to Christ.

Husbands, love your wives, and use no harshness towards them.

Children, obey your parents in all things; for such conduct is pleasing to the Lord.

Fathers, do not act tyrannically towards your children, lest they become careless of your affection from discouragement.

Servants, obey your masters upon earth, not merely whilst their eye is upon you, and from interested motives, but from a sincere wish to perform the duties of your station, and from the fear of God: and whatever you do, do it from the heart, that it may be seen of God, and not of men: recollecting that it is from God that you will one day receive your reward; for you are his and Christ's servants. But he, on the other hand, who acts dishonestly towards his earthly master, shall receive hereafter the punishment of his dishonesty. For God is not partial, or a respecter of persons.

Masters, give to your servants their due in fairness and justice: remembering that you have yourselves a Master, namely, Jesus Christ.

All of you, my brethren, continue perseveringly in prayer, using it on all suitable occasions, with thanksgiving to God for his many mercies.

Pray also for me, my brethren, that God may give me a fluent and persuasive speech, that I may be able to preach effectually the doctrines of that Gospel for which I am now suffering imprisonment, and that I may speak as I ought to speak.

- 5 Walk prudently with regard to the pagan authorities of this world, not bringing into unnecessary<sup>1</sup> risk that time which God has allotted you upon earth for the working out your salvation.
- 6 Let your conversation be at all times such as becomes Christians, seasoned with the salt of holiness, that you may know how to answer every man properly.
- 7 My beloved brother, and faithful assistant, and fellow-servant in the ministry of the Gospel, Tychicus, will explain to you my present circumstances: 8 whom I have sent to you for the purpose, and that he may inquire also after your affairs, and afford 9 you consolation on my account. I have also sent Onesimus, a faithful and beloved brother, and a native of your own city, to bear him company. From them you will learn every thing which has occurred to me here.
- 10 Aristarchus my fellow-prisoner salutes you; and Marcus, sister's son to Barnabas, respecting whom you have received my injunction, that should he 11 come to you you should receive him kindly. Jesus also, who is surnamed Justus, salutes you. All these are of the Jewish nation, and the only persons from that quarter who have assisted me in the ministry of the Gospel, and been a comfort to me 12 in my sufferings. Epaphras, the servant of Christ, whom you sent to me, and who continues to pray

<sup>1</sup> It is worthy of observation how diametrically opposite this sensible injunction is to that fanatical spirit which aims at momentary excitement by wilfully incurring unnecessary persecution, and which prefers the applause and admiration of men to the unostentatious but substantial advancement of the cause of truth.

incessantly for you that you may stand perfect and complete in all the will of God, also salutes you by me. I can bear witness for him that he is very 13 zealous for you, and for all our brethren in Laodicea and in Hierapolis. Our beloved brother Luke the 14 physician, and Demas also salute you. Salute from 15 me the brethren in Laodicea, and Nymphas, and the congregation of believers in his house. And 16 when this Epistle has been read among you, let it also be read in the Church of Laodicea; and do you in your turn read in your Church that which you have received from Laodicea. And enjoin 17 Archippus, that he take heed to the ministry which he has received from the Lord, to do his duty in it. I send my own salutation written with my own 18 hand. Remember my fetters which I endure for the sake of the Gospel. Grace be with you. Amen.

---

DR. PALEY has observed, that, as the Epistle to the Ephesians and this to the Colossians were written nearly at the same time, having been forwarded to the parties addressed by the hands of the same bearer, and for nearly the same object, a more than usual coincidence, not only of sentiment, but of style and arrangement, might be expected to exist between them, marking not only the mind of the same author, but also of the same author under nearly the same identical circumstances. And such he has shown to be actually the case. The resemblance is by no means that of a mere transcript, but it is still such as would naturally exist where the writer, having his mind strongly impressed with one main idea, unconsciously and unintentionally repeats himself in his correspondence with

two different parties. The same acute observation, which is so strongly confirmatory of the authenticity of these compositions, may also in some degree be applied to the Epistle to the Philippians, written, like the one before us, during the apostle's imprisonment at Rome, and which accordingly in his mode of alluding to that circumstance, marks the same identity of authorship with it, and consequently with that addressed to the Ephesians. The general precepts contained in this Epistle differ little from those advanced by St. Paul on former occasions; but they are as usual characterized by that earnestness, gentleness, and sincerity of manner, together with that fervent piety of sentiment, which in all the writings of that great apostle convey to us so vivid a conception of the splendid moral and intellectual qualities which combined to form his character; and which have rendered all his productions not less beautiful and impressive, than they are, as specimens of acute reasoning, cogent and instructive.

THE  
FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL  
TO THE  
THESSALONIANS.

---

THE date usually assigned to the following Epistle is the year of Christ 52. From the circumstance of its professing to be the address of Paul, Silvanus, and Timothy, to the Thessalonian Church, it is supposed to have been written at Corinth at the time when those three persons were together resident in that city, as stated in Acts xviii. 5.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

PAUL and Silvanus<sup>1</sup> and Timothy to the Church 1  
of Thessalonica, which is in the faith of God the

<sup>1</sup> It may appear a trifling remark to observe, that the person designated in the Epistles by the name of Silvanus, is invariably spoken of in the book of the Acts under the abbreviated appellation of Silas. The circumstance, however, is worth noting, as it affords another instance in confirmation of Dr. Paley's celebrated argument in proof of the authenticity of those two portions of the New Testament, derived from the seeming discrepancies and real coincidences which exist between them. Had those works been the production of one and the same author, there can be no doubt but that he would have spoken of this person under one uniform appellation. Silas, it is well known, is the abbreviation of Silvanus, as Lucas is that of Lucanus.

Father and of the Lord Jesus Christ—grace and peace be to you from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

The object of the apostle in the following address to the Church of Thessalonica appears to have been to console them under the severe persecutions which both he and they were at that time sustaining from the Jewish authorities. This Epistle, although suggested by local and temporary circumstances, is well adapted for the consolation and instruction of Christians in all ages, and under all possible conditions of life. Every sentence is marked by the usual amenity and kindness of the writer's affectionate disposition: whilst in his allusion to that great source of religious comfort, the certainty of a future state of existence, and in his inculcation of the consequent duties of holiness and good works, he rises to a high tone of earnest and energetic eloquence not often exceeded in any other portions of the sacred writings.

2 We return continual thanks to God for you,  
3 making mention of you in our prayers, from the  
unceasing recollection which we have of your work  
of faith, and labour of Christian love, with your  
persevering hope and confidence in our Lord Jesus  
4 Christ, in the sight of God and our Father; know-  
ing, as we do, my brethren beloved of God, that he  
has indeed elected you to be a Church holy unto  
5 himself; inasmuch as the Gospel which we preached  
to you has been effectual, not in word only, but has  
also been confirmed by God's own sanction, namely,  
the miracles which he has worked among you by  
our means; and by the gifts of the Holy Spirit  
which he has conferred upon you, with the abundant  
produce in your hearts of the fruits of faith and  
holiness; whilst you also, on your part, have  
known no less certainly of us, with what per-  
severing zeal and sincerity we have laboured for  
6 your benefit in the work of our ministry. You

have accordingly become imitators of us, and of our blessed Master, receiving the word of truth, though at the price of much affliction and persecution, with that joyful alacrity which is the blessed fruit of the Holy Spirit within you : so that you 7 have become examples to all the believers both in Macedon and Achaia. For the tidings of the Gospel 8 have gone forth from among you, not only through Macedon and Achaia, but even in remote regions your conversion to God and the fervency of your faith have been generally reported ; common 9 rumour, without any agency of ours, reporting in all quarters the rapid success of our endeavours in your district : and with what readiness you turned away, in consequence of our preaching, from your former idolatry, and betook yourselves to the worship of the true and eternal God : waiting with 10 confidence for the second coming of his Son from heaven ; of that Son, the blessed Jesus, whom he has already raised from the dead, and who we humbly hope will be our place of refuge from the wrath to come.

Yourselves, brethren, will well remember the sig- 2 nal success which attended our first arrival among you : how, after having suffered many insults and 2 persecutions at Philippi, we notwithstanding proceeded undismayed, and in full confidence of God's protection, to announce to you, amidst the clamours of unbelievers, the glad tidings of the blessed Gospel. Our exhortation to you accordingly was de- 3 livered in full sincerity and candour, not accommodating itself to the tortuous and impure feeling of human passions, but displaying a deep conviction 4 of the sacred trust which had been committed



5 into our hands by our divine Master, and without  
any subserviency to mortal interests or prejudices,  
challenging the rigorous scrutiny of his all-searching  
6 eye. For that gracious God is our witness that we  
never for a moment made his mission an instru-  
ment for the gratification of our ambition or our  
avarice, nor presumed upon it either amongst  
yourselves, or others, for the promotion of our  
temporal interests, although, as being Christ's own  
ministers, we might, had we been so disposed, have  
reasonably made it a plea for the exercise of some  
jurisdiction, or the exaction of the maintenance of  
7 apostles. Such however was not our line of con-  
duct. On the contrary, as a nurse cherishes her  
8 children, and is not fostered by them, so, devoting  
ourselves to your benefit, we preferred, not only to  
communicate to you the holy Gospel of our Re-  
deemer, but also gratuitously to expend our strength  
and means in your service, as a proof of the sin-  
9 cerity of our attachment. And, accordingly, you  
cannot but remember the manual labour to which  
we submitted for that object; working day and  
night for the procuring of our own livelihood, whilst  
we were at the same time employed in preaching to  
you, without expense or burden, the word of divine  
10 truth. You cannot also but remember the purity,  
and correctness, and innocence of our life and con-  
11 versation, amongst our converts to the faith;—how  
we earnestly exhorted and entreated you, with the  
12 anxious affection of parents for their children, all  
and severally to conduct yourselves worthily of the  
God who has called you to his worship, and to  
whose glorious kingdom we all of us hope to be one  
day admitted.

With these gratifying recollections, we cannot <sup>13</sup> but offer our unremitting thanks to God for the success with which he has crowned our exertions, in that you received the word which we preached, not as the words of human wisdom, but as, what it undoubtedly is, the word of that divine Being, whose blessed Spirit works effectually within you for your support under your present trials. For <sup>14</sup> with regard to what you have <sup>1</sup> suffered on account of your belief in the Gospel, your lot has been precisely that of the Christian converts amongst my own countrymen: your fellow-citizens having persecuted you for the sake of your opinions, in the same manner as the believing Jews have undergone persecution from the ruling authorities at Jerusalem; from those men who have been from first to last consistent in their uniform hostility to the truth; who crucified the blessed Jesus himself, <sup>15</sup> and put his prophets to death; and who now vent their fury upon us; men, enemies to God, and to the whole human race, their great object at this <sup>16</sup> very moment being to prevent our preaching God's gracious dispensations to the <sup>2</sup> Gentile world, and consequently to hinder the glad tidings of salvation from reaching to other nations:—thus filling up the measure of their sins, and bringing down upon their own heads the summary vengeance of the Almighty which awaits them.

Having been necessarily absent from you for some <sup>17</sup>

<sup>1</sup> See the account of the violence of the Jews at Thessalonica against the Christian converts, as given in the seventeenth chapter of the Acts of the Apostles.

<sup>2</sup> See Colossians ii. 1—5.

time, (in body only, but never for a moment in my thoughts,) I was extremely anxious to enjoy another  
18 opportunity of coming among you: accordingly I  
(Paul) made more than one attempt to do so, but  
the difficulties which Satan was able to stir up  
against me prevented my succeeding in my object.  
19 For what greater hope, or joy, or subject for self-  
congratulation have I at this moment, than the  
anticipation that I shall be allowed to present you  
one day as my children in the faith to our blessed  
20 Redeemer at his second coming? You are indeed  
3 my glory and my joy: and being such, as I found  
myself unable to continue longer without some  
communication with you, and yet was prevented  
from visiting you in person, I thought it best to  
2 remain alone at Athens, and to send our brother  
Timothy, the minister of God, and my fellow la-  
bourer in the service of the Gospel of Christ, to  
strengthen you by his exhortations, and to comfort  
3 and establish you in your faith; lest any of you  
should despond at the intelligence of the persecu-  
tions I undergo. For it is necessary that you should  
be prepared to expect these afflictions, which in this  
life form part of the lot of a Christian apostle.  
4 (You may remember, that when I was last with  
you, I anticipated and foretold to you the precise  
5 troubles which awaited myself.) Anxious therefore  
on your account, I took the first possible oppor-  
tunity of sending a message to you, and of inquiring  
in what degree your confidence in God's promises  
remains unshaken in this moment of trial: lest  
perchance the tempter should have availed him-  
self of the occasion for shaking your faith, and de-  
6 stroying the fruits of my spiritual labours. Judge

accordingly of the gratification I experienced, when I understood from Timothy upon his return, that your holy confidence and mutual love and charity remained precisely what they were, and that your anxiety to see me was not less earnest than mine to visit you. Great indeed was my consolation in the 7 midst of my afflictions, in consequence of this happy intelligence of your persevering faith and trust in God; for be assured that my own griefs can press 8 but lightly upon me, so long as I feel satisfied that your confidence in Christ remains unshaken. I 9 cannot therefore too fervently nor too frequently thank my God on your account, for the great cause for rejoicing in the success of my endeavours, which your persevering good conduct has afforded me; and accordingly I now, both by night and by day, 10 more earnestly than ever desire to see you once more, and to add by my instructions the last finish, should such be still wanting, to the completion of your faith and religious knowledge. May God our 11 Father, and our Lord Jesus Christ, enable me to undertake this journey; and may our Redeemer 12 cause you to increase and abound in that fervent affection towards one another, and towards all mankind, with which I am disposed towards yourselves; that he may finally establish you unblameable in 13 holiness before our God and Father, among the rest of his saints, at the glorious second coming of him the Lord Jesus Christ.

And now, my brethren, let me finally exhort 4 you, in the name of the Lord Jesus, that, as you have received from me directions for a holy life, such as is pleasing to God, so you will earnestly labour to your utmost to make yourselves, day

after day, more and more perfect in that necessary  
2 work. You cannot but remember what instructions  
to that effect I formerly gave you in our Lord's  
behalf.

3 In the first place, I stated it as God's special  
command that you keep yourselves pure in mind  
4 and body, abstaining from fornication; so that each  
individual among you should learn to preserve the  
body which God gave him in holiness and suit-  
5 able respect, not making it, like the unconverted  
heathen nations, a mere minister to degrading  
appetites.

6 Let no man, in the next place, overreach or  
defraud his brother in any thing: for, as I have on  
former occasions solemnly testified to you, God is  
7 an avenger of all such misdeeds: for he has not  
called us to a life of unholiness, but to innocence;  
8 that man therefore who sins against these social  
duties, sins not only against man, but against God  
himself, who has planted his Holy Spirit within us  
to instruct and strengthen us.

9 On the subject of brotherly love, and mutual acts  
of kindness, indeed, I feel that it is superfluous to  
address to you any new exhortations; for God has  
already given you those affectionate feelings in no  
small proportion, as your past conduct has abun-  
dantly shown, not with regard to your more imme-  
10 diate connexions only, but by your many acts  
of beneficence<sup>1</sup> to our brethren through the whole

<sup>1</sup> There will appear something very amiable in this admission by the apostle of the liberality and beneficence displayed by the Thessalonians, when we recollect that he himself, as we learn from chap. ii. ver. 9 of this Epistle,

realm of Macedon ; all that I will say therefore on this point is,—cherish and improve this disposition to your utmost ability.

Frequent not noisy and disputatious assemblages <sup>11</sup> of men, but keep yourselves aloof, attending to your own concerns, and working at your several occupations, as I have already enjoined you : that your <sup>12</sup> heathen neighbours may be led to remark, and to imitate, the decency and propriety of your lives ; and also that you may not be guilty of injustice by making yourselves dependent upon others for the necessities of life.

Lastly, my brethren, with regard to our departed <sup>13</sup> friends and relatives who have been called away from the miseries of this life, do not despond on their account, nor, like the heathen who have not yet learned to cherish the glorious hope of a future resurrection, imagine that they are lost to you for ever. For if we know and are well assured that our <sup>14</sup> blessed Saviour died, and rose again from the grave, so we may feel in like manner fully confident that Christ will at his second coming bring back with him all his servants who have died in his faith. For <sup>15</sup> this declaration which I now make to you I received from our Lord himself, namely, that we<sup>1</sup>, who may

had supported himself by his own manual labour, whilst resident in that quarter, in order that he might preach the Gospel to them without occasioning to them any burden or expense.

<sup>1</sup> This passage affords an illustration of the misapprehension of the real purport of some parts of Scripture, which may be the consequence of a too literal acceptance of a single expression of the writer, instead of arriving at his meaning by the general analogy of his argument. Had the

be still living at that day of Christ's coming, will have no advantage whatever over those who are at  
16 this moment in their graves. For our Lord himself will descend from heaven with a shout of triumph, with the cry of the archangel, and the sound of God's trumpet; and those who have already died in  
17 Christ shall be the first summoned; and afterwards we, or whoever may be the survivors, will be caught up together with them into the clouds, to meet our Lord in the air; and so shall thenceforward reside  
18 with the Lord for ever. Wherefore comfort one  
5 another with this assurance. But when that awful day will be, it is not for me to attempt to hazard

second Epistle to the Thessalonians not come down to us, it cannot be doubted but that the inference which we should have derived from his mode of expressing himself in this place would have been, that St. Paul expected himself to continue in this world until the final day of judgment, or at all events that he conceived that the then existing generation of men would not pass away before the arrival of that awful period. And such in fact was the impression which this passage appears to have made upon the Thessalonians themselves. Of course the impugner of revelation would not in that case have let slip this opportunity of pointing out the apostle's mistake, and of assailing the presumed infallibility of the sacred writings. But the following Epistle entirely does away this misapprehension. There St. Paul expressly declares that it never was his intention to represent the day of judgment as near at hand; on the contrary, he asserts with a peculiar clearness of language, and with a spirit which subsequent history has decidedly shown to be that of prophecy, that the end was not to be yet, but that vast changes were destined to take place, and many generations to pass away before the fearful day of our Lord's second coming.

a conjecture. Yourselves know what were our 2 Saviour's own words on that subject, namely, "that the coming of the day of the Lord will be as that of a thief in the night," for when men shall be busily 3 occupied in the midst of their own temporal speculations, and unsuspecting of the fearful hour which awaits them, then in a moment shall destruction overtake them, sudden as the pains of labour seize upon a woman when her time is complete, and there shall be no way for them to escape. But you, my 4 brethren, live not in darkness, so that you need dread the approach of him, who will thus come "like the thief in the night." You all are the 5 children of light and of the day. We live not, like the votaries of this world, in the night and in darkness; let us not then go carelessly to sleep as they 6 do, but let us watch and be sober; for they who 7 indulge in sleep do so in the night, and they who revel in drunkenness and riot do so in the night; but let us, who live in the light of day, under 8 the glorious sunshine of the Gospel, let us be vigilant and sober, as in the day; putting on the breastplate of faith and love, and bearing upon our heads as a helmet, the hope of salvation. For God has 9 not appointed us to abide the effects of his wrath on that awful day, but to receive salvation through our Lord Jesus Christ, who died for us, that, whether 10 we wake or sleep, we may finally live together with him. Wherefore still continue to comfort and cheer 11 one another, and edify each man his neighbour, with this assurance, as I am satisfied that you have done in time past.

I entreat you moreover, my brethren, to submit 12 yourselves dutifully to the teachers who labour



among you, whom the Lord hath set over you for  
13 your instruction, and to repay their exertions with  
that affection which they deserve.

14 Be at peace also amongst yourselves. Admonish  
the factious and disorderly. Encourage the feeble-  
minded. Support the weak. Be patient and even  
15 tempered to all men. Return not evil for evil, but  
do good on every opportunity both to one another,  
16 and to strangers. Be cheerful-minded on all occa-  
17 sions. Be in the continual habit of prayer, giving  
18 God thanks for all his dispensations, be they what  
they may : for such is the will of God declared to us  
19 by Jesus Christ. Quench not the holy suggestions  
20 of the Spirit. Despise not the opportunities for  
improvement, afforded by the instruction commu-  
21 nicated in your religious assemblies. Give a fair  
and impartial examination to every thing, and,  
having done so, hold to and cherish that which you  
22 are satisfied is good. Abstain from any equivocal  
23 act, which may possibly be evil. And may the  
great God of peace sanctify you in all points ; that  
you may be preserved pure and blameless both in  
soul and body till the second coming of our Lord  
24 Jesus Christ. Be assured that he who has called  
you to the mercies of his covenant will not be un-  
true to his promise, nor disappoint you of your  
hope.

25 My brethren, remember us in your prayers. Sa-  
26 lute all the brethren with a holy kiss. I solemnly  
27 enjoin you in the name of the Lord, that you take  
care that this Epistle be read to all the holy  
brethren.

28 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.

THE  
SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL  
TO THE  
THESSALONIANS.

---

THIS Epistle, having been written shortly after the preceding, must consequently have its date assigned about the latter end of the year of our Lord 52.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

PAUL, and Silvanus, and Timothy, to the Church 1  
of Thessalonica, established in the faith of God our  
Father, and of our Lord Jesus Christ—grace and 2  
peace be unto you from God our Father, and from  
the Lord Jesus Christ.

The Thessalonian Church having been led, by a misapprehension of the apostle's meaning in his allusion to the final day of judgment in his former Epistle, to expect our Lord's second coming as an event near at hand, St. Paul appears to have written this second Epistle for the purpose of correcting that mistake, and assuring them that many important changes in the history of mankind were destined to be wrought before the arrival of that period. This discussion leads him into a truly remarkable anticipation of some of the future events which were to occur in the latter ages of the Christian Church, which strikingly demonstrate the prophetic spirit of which he was possessed. The Epistle then concludes with an injunction to habits of industry, and the preservation of Church discipline.

3 We are bound to thank God continually for you,  
 brethren, as is fit, for the daily increase of your  
 faith, and the exuberant abundance of your love one  
 4 to another, which have given us just occasion to  
 boast of you in the several Christian Churches, as  
 bearing with exemplary patience and faith the many  
 afflictions and persecutions to which you are subject.  
 5 Which present afflictions we cannot but consider as  
 manifest pledges of God's ultimate righteousness  
 and justice, and that he thinks you worthy of that  
 divine inheritance for which you now suffer so much ;  
 6 for, as the violence and cruelty of your persecutors  
 must be expected to reap from his final just retribu-  
 tion that due retaliation of suffering which they now  
 7 inflict upon you ; so by a parity of reasoning we are  
 justified in presuming, that our common afflictions  
 which now assail us, are but preparatory to our re-  
 ward of eternal happiness, when the Lord Jesus  
 shall return in glory from heaven with his mighty  
 8 angels, as a flaming fire, to execute vengeance on  
 those who know not God, and are disobedient to the  
 9 Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ ; and who shall  
 suffer for their unbelief the penalty of eternal de-  
 struction, being far removed from his presence<sup>1</sup>,

<sup>1</sup> It seems to be implied by this as well as by several other passages of the New Testament, that a considerable portion of the misery awaiting the condemned souls in a future state will consist in their eternal exclusion from the divine presence. Thus in our Lord's parable of the wedding garment, (Matthew xxii. 13.) we find the rejected guest ordered to be bound hand and feet, and to be cast into "outer darkness," τὸ σκότος τὸ ἔξωτερον, that is, to be removed from the guest-chamber, and the presence of the Lord of the feast, into a place of melancholy seclusion. If this negative infliction

and from the radiance of his glory; when he shall 10  
come to be glorified by his blessed saints, and to  
receive honour and worship from those who have  
trusted in him (amongst whom you will be admitted  
to a place as having professed his faith) on that

will add so much of bitterness to the positive punishments of those unhappy beings, we must of necessity assent also to the opposite inference, that the admission of the blessed souls to the immediate presence of the Deity will be one grand constituent of the happiness reserved for just men made perfect. It would undoubtedly be unwise, if not unsafe, to speculate much, with our present very limited faculties, upon this mysterious subject: yet even with our darkened mortal capacities, we can at this moment see enough to be perfectly certain, that the privilege here alluded to must be one calculated to afford to us the most inconceivable degree of felicity. Of all our pleasures in this world, that resulting from the contemplation of the stupendous phenomena of nature is by far the most exciting and the most intellectual. But what is all that the human eye can at present embrace, or all that the human mind can conceive, when compared with the actual immensity of the material universe? And again, what is the mere material universe, when placed in comparison with that moral spiritual creation, which we have every reason to believe to be as really existent as any of the tangible properties of matter?—And yet again, after all, what is even that highest and sublimest portion of created beings, when considered with reference to their Almighty Creator? Our mortal imagination, it is true, will not lend itself to the pursuit of this train of thought, but it is sufficiently palpable to our reasoning faculties to satisfy us how much of literal truth of delineation is conveyed in that scriptural account of the happiness of a future state, which describes it as that which “eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither hath it entered into the heart of man to conceive.”

11 tremendous day. Wherefore we offer up our prayers continually for you that God would count you worthy of that glorious summons, and fulfil in you all the purposes of his grace and love, and complete within you by his powerful assistance the workings  
12 of your faith. That the name of the Lord Jesus Christ may be glorified in you, and you in him, through the mercy of our God, and of the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 With regard however to the time of the second coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and that day when the whole human race will be gathered before his  
2 judgment-seat, I beg of you, my brethren, not to be easily excited or alarmed either by any presumed revelation to that effect, or by any light report, or by any misapprehension of what I said in my former Epistle, as though that awful period were at this  
3 moment nigh at hand. Let no man deceive you on this point ; as that day will not arrive until the great apostacy from the pure faith shall have first taken place, and until that man of sin foretold by prophecy shall have been manifested : that son  
4 of perdition, of whom it is declared that he shall make war against, and elevate himself above, every one that is called God, (Daniel xi. 36.) and every thing holy, and shall intrude himself into God's place in God's own temple, claiming to himself the  
5 veneration due to God only. Do you not remember that when I was with you on a former occasion, I  
6 explained to you how these things should be ? You must recollect how I then told you what are the causes now in operation which prevent for the present the manifestation of that general corruption  
7 which will be made palpable in its due season. For

the seeds of iniquity are already at work<sup>1</sup>, but that restraint which the present order of things imposes

<sup>1</sup> Nothing can be more literally accurate, as every person at all conversant with ecclesiastical history must readily admit, than the whole of this remarkable prophecy respecting the then commencing corruptions of the Christian Church. In looking back upon that enormous mass of error and of human inventions on which the papal power erected its audacious tyranny, we are too apt to consider the whole of it rather as the growth of one short period, and the result of a wilful system of deliberate imposture, than as the slow produce, as it really was, of various concurrent causes spread over a very considerable portion of time. Of those unscriptural abuses which form so large a part of the creed of the Romish Church, no inconsiderable quantity had been suggested by the natural tendency of mankind to corrupt the pure truths of revelation by the admixture of human inventions, at a comparatively early period of Christianity. The ambitious spirit of popery, it is true, subsequently availed itself of them for the extension of its own usurped power, but their first origin may be traced much more frequently to human superstition and ignorance, than to wilful and calculating profligacy. "The seeds of iniquity," says St. Paul in the passage before us, "are already at work:" and so undoubtedly they were; for the morbid activity of false ingenuity from the very first infancy of the Church began to work its way like a canker into the soundness of its doctrines. But, as the apostle proceeds to observe, "the restraint which the then existing order of things imposed upon them," that is to say, the subjugation of the Christian converts to the pagan authorities, "prevented their effectually springing up." The subsequent accession of temporal prosperity however at once removed the impediments which had previously opposed the progress of the man of sin. From the time of Constantine downwards the decay of true Christianity was fearfully rapid, and before the expiration of the fourth

upon them must be first removed before they can  
8 effectually spring up. But the time will come  
when those checks will be withdrawn, and then  
shall arise that lawless power whom the Lord shall  
one day blow away with the blast of his irresistible  
breath, and shall quell with the overpowering blaze  
9 of his divine presence: that blasphemous and im-  
pious power, whose coming shall be attended with  
the working of Satan in power, and signs, and  
10 wonders, to give sanction to a lie, and in unright-  
eous deceit for the seduction of the many who will  
perish, because they have not loved that pure and  
11 unadulterated truth which leads to salvation. And  
therefore, because of this their worldly mind, it will  
be that God will suffer the power of delusion to  
overtake them, so that they shall rest their faith  
12 upon vain fictions; in order that judgment may  
come upon all who believe not the truth, but who  
have pleasure in unrighteousness.

13 How much then ought we, my brethren beloved  
of the Lord, to return thanks to God incessantly on  
your account, that he has admitted you, from the  
very first, to salvation through the sanctification of  
his Holy Spirit, and through your reliance upon  
14 his truth, to which he has called you by the means  
of our ministry, that you might obtain the glory of  
15 the inheritance of our Lord Jesus Christ! Stand

century the veneration of relics, the sacrifice of the mass  
for the dead, the Arian and a vast variety of other heresies,  
with a multitude of accompanying false and absurd legends,  
had combined to form that accumulation of abuses, so large  
a portion of which papal enterprise contrived subsequently  
to consolidate into the materials of the most oppressive  
usurpation recorded in the annals of mankind.

then firm in this faith, and be strong in your persuasion of the certainty of that revelation which you have received from us, whether by word of mouth, or by letter: and may our Lord Jesus Christ himself, and our God and Father who has loved us, and given us his eternal consolation, and a well-founded hope in his grace and mercy, comfort your hearts, and confirm you in all good doctrine and practice.

Finally, my brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord which is entrusted to our ministry may spread, and be glorified by the conversion of other nations, as it has been by yours: and that we may be preserved from the violence of unreasonable and wicked men. For all men have not faith in our preaching. Be assured, however, that God will be true to his covenant, and will strengthen you, who believe in him, and guard you from the attempts of your spiritual enemy. We also have ourselves full assurance in you, and in the Lord your protector, that you will faithfully continue to attend to our exhortations as in time past. May then that Lord direct your hearts to the love of God, and to the waiting with patience for Christ's second coming.

We enjoin you also, my brethren, in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, to keep yourselves aloof from every brother whose life shall be disorderly, and inconsistent with the precepts which you have received from us. For you cannot be ignorant, from the recollection of our own conduct whilst we were with you, what kind of habits we require in our followers: you remember that we conformed ourselves strictly to our own precepts: that we encumbered no man with our gratuitous mainte-



- nance, but laboured with our own hands by night and day for the earning of our own livelihood, that we might not make ourselves chargeable to others; 9 not indeed that we might not have justly advanced that claim, had we been so disposed; but we preferred to make our own disinterested conduct an illustration of our own maxim which we often 10 forced among you, namely, that "if a man will not 11 work, neither should he eat." For we have been informed, that there are at present certain persons in your society whose habits are disorderly, and who do not work themselves, but interfere with, 12 and are an incumbrance to, others. To such therefore we give this positive command in the name and authority of our Lord Jesus Christ, that for the future, living more quietly and industriously, they strive to earn their own bread by their own 13 labour. And may all of you, my brethren, in like manner never be weary in your task of well doing.
- 14 Should any one refuse obedience to the injunctions contained in this letter, note that man, and shut him out for the present from your society, to 15 bring him to a proper feeling. I do not mean, however, that you should consider him altogether as an alien, but that you should admonish him kindly as a brother.
- 16 May the Lord of peace give his blessed peace to you at all times, and in all ways. The Lord be with you all.
- 17 The salutation of me, Paul, is subjoined in my own handwriting. Pay attention to the character, as it is the mark of the genuineness of my Epistles.
- 18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

THE  
FIRST EPISTLE OF PAUL  
TO  
TIMOTHY.

---

THE date of the following Epistle is assigned to various periods. That most commonly received supposes it to have been written about the year of our Lord 64.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

PAUL an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the appointment of God our Saviour, and of Jesus Christ the hope of our redemption, to Timothy my own son and convert in the faith—grace, mercy, and peace be from God our Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ.

In this Epistle St. Paul conveys to Timothy, whom he had deputed to superintend the Church at Ephesus, his admonitions respecting ecclesiastical discipline, with directions for the proper selection of the spiritual officers who were to preside over the various departments of the ministry in that community. The whole composition is an admirable specimen of the enlightened good sense and amiable feeling of the writer, and affords also valuable information on the subject of the peculiar form of government adopted by the primitive Church.

It is my wish, in conformity with the instructions which I gave you when I set out for Macedon, that

you should remain at Ephesus, in order that you may have an opportunity of exhorting certain of our brethren to avoid variety and discrepancies of  
4 doctrine, and to withdraw their minds from the study of those traditional speculations and endless inquiries into genealogies<sup>1</sup> and fables, which are rather to be considered in the light of laborious trifling, than as affording any real help towards our edification, or  
5 the establishment of our faith. And accordingly I would have you in all such exhortations uniformly urge upon them, as their great aim and object, the pursuit of that Christian charity and good will towards God and man which is the result of a pure heart, a good conscience, and a sincere faith ;  
6 which best qualification of a Christian teacher some persons losing sight of, have turned the force of their minds rather to minute discussions than to  
7 practical edification : and continue to urge the

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Macknight and the greater number of commentators upon this passage are of opinion, that the " genealogies " here mentioned were those preserved by the Jewish families as proofs of their descent from the original founder of their race. The explanation however given by Hammond appears to me much more satisfactory ; namely, that the apostle is here alluding to the mystical speculations of the Gnostics respecting the successive emanations from the divine essence, and the *generation* of the various *Æons*, or angelic beings, which formed the leading feature of the theology of that sect. According to the former supposition the remonstrance of the apostle is directed only against a harmless, however childish prejudice ; but according to the latter, he is rescuing the pure truths of revelation from that admixture of human philosophy, which, as uniform experience has shown, is the most dangerous, because the most insidious, auxiliary that true religion can call in to her aid.

obligation of the Mosaic law, without possessing any accurate or definite idea what the object of that law was, or of the tendency of their own arguments. I am far from wishing to depreciate the value of the law when considered with reference to the real end for which it was promulgated; but this I would explicitly say of it, "that it was never intended by its author as a rule of positive righteousness, for which it is perfectly incompetent, but solely as a provisional preventive check against moral delinquency; and accordingly that its aim was not the improvement of the well-disposed, but the correction of the bad; of the lawless and the dissolute; of the irreligious and the sinful, the impious and the profane; the parricide, the murderer, the fornicator, the offender against nature, the man-stealer, the liar, the false and perjured witness, and of every other violator of the laws of God and good morals." Inculcate then, I repeat, the glorious Gospel of the blessed God, the task of proclaiming which has been entrusted to my ministry as an apostle. And I earnestly thank our Lord Jesus Christ, who has given me strength for the performance of this great work, and counted me a faithful servant in the office with which I have been entrusted by Him: not charging me with my former offences of blasphemy, and persecution, and violence against his blessed revelation, but showing mercy towards me, because he knew that I sinned in ignorance and through unbelief; and accordingly, the plentiful fruits of the mercy which I received from him, have by his blessing been on my part an overflowing of faith and holy love towards him for these his inestimable gifts. This is indeed a true

saying, and worthy of the most heartfelt acceptance, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners, of whom I feel that I am the chief. But for this reason I received mercy at his hands, that in me, as a foremost and striking example, might be shown the immensity of his forbearance, for the future encouragement of all such as hereafter shall turn away from their sins, and repose themselves upon that mercy for the attainment of everlasting life.

17 Now, to the one almighty, eternal, incorruptible, invisible, all-wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. Amen.

18 The delivery of the above exhortation I have entrusted to you, my son Timothy, relying upon the prophetic anticipation entertained by the Church of your future services in the ministry, and feeling satisfied that you will not disappoint that expectation, but will fight the good fight as a soldier of Christ; 19 holding fast your faith in him, and together with your faith an approving conscience, the result of a good life: the necessity of which latter thing some persons<sup>1</sup> overlooking have in consequence made ship-

<sup>1</sup> In his former Epistles, the admonitions of St. Paul have been chiefly directed against the mistake so natural to timid and superstitious minds, of aiming at righteousness through the medium of trifling ritual observances and bodily mortification. His indignation is now called forth by another, and far more revolting heresy; that which, misstating the object and effects of our Lord's meritorious atonement, would make that blessed expiatory sacrifice a licence for the unrestrained indulgence of the passions, and a deliberate continuance in sin. Between these opposite extremes of error, into one or other of which religious theorists have in

wreck of the former ; such as are Hymenæus and 20 Alexander, whom I have struck out of the community of the Church, that they may learn to cease to blaspheme Christ by supposing that he can be the patron of immorality. I enjoin, therefore, in 2 conformity with the above instructions which I have given you, in the first place, that prayers, supplications, intercessions, and thanksgivings be offered up in your religious assemblies for all men, whatever be their condition ; of course not omitting kings, 2 and all other persons possessing authority ; that under their protection we may be enabled to lead a quiet and peaceable life in holiness and purity. I repeat, pray for *all men*, be they who they may, for this is good and acceptable in the sight of God 3 our Saviour, who would have all men whatever to 4 be saved, and to come to the knowledge of his truth ; for we know that there is one God, and one Mediator 5 between God and the whole human race, namely, Christ ; who for that purpose clothed himself with 6 the human nature, and gave himself a ransom for all mankind, as he has now declared in his own good time ; of which gracious covenant of redemption I 7 have been appointed his apostle and minister (I speak the truth in perfect sincerity) to teach to the Gentile

all ages been prone to fall, the written word of revelation points out the only true and secure path. In fact, almost every page of ecclesiastical history is little more than the record of the oscillations of the human mind between these two points, to which the timidity of the feeble-minded on the one hand, or the gross conceptions of the fanatical on the other, have invariably deviated the moment that they abandoned that infallible guide, in pursuit of the false lights supplied by human speculation, and interested sophistry.

nations the doctrines of faith and truth. Enjoin  
8 then that prayers be offered up for our various fellow  
creatures by all the brethren in every fitting place  
and occasion, holding up pure hands to heaven, and  
laying aside all animosities, with all jealous and partial  
distinctions.

9 In the next place, let the women attire themselves  
in decent apparel, with modesty and reserve, not  
with braided hair, or gold, or pearls, or expensive  
10 habits, but with that far more becoming ornament for  
Christian women, the attire of good works.

11 Let them moreover receive their competent and  
necessary instruction in silence and with due de-  
12 ference ; for I permit not a woman to become a  
teacher, or to usurp authority over a man ; on the  
13 contrary, enjoin them to be diffident and silent ; for  
Adam was formed by the Almighty before Eve ;  
14 and not Adam but Eve was the person beguiled by  
the serpent, and the cause of man's transgression.  
15 Let us however recollect, that it was promised that  
the seed of the woman, and not of the man, should  
bruise the serpent's head, and that therefore through  
*her* progeny it is that both the female and the male  
sex shall eventually be saved, if they live in faith,  
and Christian love, and holiness, and sobriety.

3 And now let me earnestly remind you, as one to  
whom I have entrusted the momentous charge of  
appointing ministers to the Church, that the office  
of a bishop is one of high and solemn moment, and,  
when properly filled, of the utmost benefit to those  
2 whom he is selected to govern. Let then every  
person chosen by you to that office be blameless in  
his life, the husband of one wife, sober, sedate,  
judicious, hospitable, and competent to instruct

others: not a frequenter of riotous banquets, not a brawler, but meek, peaceful, and free from the stain of avarice, a wise director of his own household, and a cautious trainer up of his own children in the habits of order and propriety, (for if he want skill to manage his own children, you may safely presume that he will fail in the more difficult charge of governing God's Church,) one of tried and established character in morals and doctrine, for, if but a novice, he may from want of steady consistency bring scandal upon the Church. In fine, let him be one whom the very heathens would pronounce to be blameless, that no disgrace or ill name may attach to his ministry.

On the same principle, be careful to choose your deacons from men of grave character, not double tongued, not addicted to intemperance, not rapacious after gain; but, on the contrary, uniting soundness of faith, with purity of morals. When you chance to meet with persons apparently such as I am now describing, in the first place subject them to an equitable probation, and, should they be found upon such trial to answer to the character received of them, then let them be duly admitted into the office of deacons. You will also take care that the deaconesses be of grave characters, not given to slander, but sober, and faithful in their trust. Let the deacons be the husband of one wife, and men who have been found to have been good and judicious, managers of their children and household. For they who shall have performed this office suitably, may

<sup>1</sup> For the first institution of the office of Deacon, see Acts vi.



justly be considered as having earned an honourable station, and worthy to be entrusted with the more arduous duties of a minister of the faith of Christ Jesus.

14 I have written these things to you, hoping indeed  
15 to be able to come to you shortly; but anxious, should any thing occur to delay me, that you should at all events possess all the necessary instructions for the due management of God's household, I mean the Christian Church, which is the great pillar and sup-  
16 port of the true faith: and awful indeed is the mystery of that holiness which is entrusted to its keeping; namely, that <sup>1</sup> GOD HIMSELF APPEARED ON

<sup>1</sup> The abrupt introduction and detached character of this passage, verse 16, give it all the appearance of a compressed formula of doctrine, which we can suppose to have been intended by St. Paul for the use of that infant Church, over which Timothy was appointed to preside. According to this supposition, if we admit the commonly received and more probable reading Θεός, in preference to the ὁς contended for by the Socinians, it will form an epitome of belief consisting of the following articles: first, the divinity and incarnation of Christ: secondly, the separate personality and implied divinity of the Holy Spirit: thirdly, the universality of the offer of redemption to the human race: fourthly, the necessity of faith: fifthly, the re-ascension of our Saviour into glory, and the consequent implied resurrection of mankind. That he intended this as a model of that kind of confession of belief of things vitally *necessary* which he deemed it expedient that every Christian teacher should require from his disciples appears also probable, from the fact of his contrasting it with that cumbrous and superstitious detail which his gift of prophecy enabled him to foresee that the Church of Rome in after ages would annex to this simple and cogent summary. How completely that anticipation has been subsequently realized every one will

EARTH IN THE HUMAN FORM; THAT HIS IDENTITY WAS ACKNOWLEDGED AND RATIFIED BY THE VISIBLE OPERATIONS OF THE HOLY SPIRIT; THAT HE WAS SEEN BY THE ANGELS<sup>1</sup>; THAT HE WAS PROCLAIMED AS THE COMMON SAVIOUR OF ALL NATIONS; THAT HE WAS BELIEVED ON BY THE WORLD WHICH WITNESSED HIS COMING; AND FINALLY THAT HE RE-ASCENDED INTO ETERNAL GLORY.

True indeed it is, as I know through the com-4  
munication of the Holy Spirit, that the Church will not always retain in its original purity this simple and sublime doctrine, but that in later times men shall arise who shall turn away from the true faith,

be satisfactorily convinced who takes the trouble of casting his eye over the Tridentine creed of Pope Pius IV. The variety of minute speculations with which successive heresies in the course of ages have infested the Church, and perplexed the plain doctrines of primitive Christianity, may indeed in our day have rendered more elaborate and detailed forms of confession than that here given by the apostle useful, if not absolutely necessary. But at all events, it is important for us to recollect, that in the innocence of those early times, a believer's faith was considered as sufficiently expressed in his admission of those few but elementary and momentous truths.

<sup>1</sup> It would appear more to accord with the general context of this passage, if we understand the word *ἄγγελος* in this place to refer to our Saviour's mortal associates upon earth, rather than to the angelic beings more usually designated by that appellation. For this occasional application of the word "angel," see note upon 1 Corinthians xi. 10. In that case, the sense of the text would be, "He was borne witness to by the Holy Spirit:—He was seen and communioned with in the human form by his chosen apostles:—He was proclaimed by them," &c.

giving heed to seducing revelations, and doctrines  
2 of devils<sup>1</sup>, through the subtle machinations of false  
teachers, of men of a seared and hardened con-  
3 science, who will forbid matrimony, and make fan-  
ciful and superstitious distinctions between meats,  
commanding their hearers to abstain from many  
which God has created, that they might be received  
and used with gratitude by the believers who wor-  
4 ship him in truth. For every creature of God is  
good, and nothing, if received with a grateful dispo-  
5 sition, is to be rejected as forbidden; having been  
sanctified by the command of God, and by prayer.  
6 Be careful then to inculcate these principles, and  
you will do your part well as a servant of Jesus  
Christ, brought up in the knowledge of the true  
faith, and of that wholesome doctrine in which you  
7 have been so carefully grounded. But avoid pro-  
fane and superstitious fancies, and fictions, making  
it your great aim to arrive at true and spiritual  
8 righteousness. For the holiness which is sought  
after by the maceration of the body is of little avail,  
but spiritual righteousness is blessed both here and  
hereafter, having the temperate indulgence of God's  
good gifts in this world, and the promise of a  
9 happy immortality in that which is to come. This

<sup>1</sup> It is not an improbable conjecture of many commen-  
tators, that by the expression διδασκαλῖαι δαιμονίων, here  
rendered in conformity with our established version, "doc-  
trines of devils," the apostle intended to forewarn man-  
kind against the adoption of the superstitious worship and  
invocation of the souls of departed saints, which, emanat-  
ing originally from the schools of heathen philosophy, sub-  
sequently became an acknowledged tenet of the Romish  
Church. For the Platonic doctrine of the "Demones,"  
see *Augustin de Civitate Dei*, lib. viii. cap. 14, et seq.

is a truth, the importance of which you cannot too earnestly impress upon your hearers : and it is 10 accordingly for inculcating this great fact of our Christian liberty, and of the superior value of spiritual over carnal righteousness, and because I have preached the doctrine, that God is no less the God of the Gentiles than of the Jews, and more particularly the protector of those who repose their hopes on his merits, that I have suffered so many persecutions and insults from the Jewish authorities. Be it your care to inculcate and enforce this 11 same doctrine among all your converts.

Give no man a handle to undervalue you on 12 account of your youth ; but strive to render yourself an example and model of what a true believer should be by the soundness of your precepts, by the purity of your life, by your charity towards all men, by the fervour of your piety, by the steadfastness of your faith, by the candour of your mind. Meanwhile, till I come to you, occupy yourself in 13 private study, in public exhortation, and in communicating instruction ; nor let those spiritual gifts 14 lie useless, which were conferred upon you, in conformity to God's declared will, by the imposition of the hands of the presbytery. Be earnest then in 15 these holy exercises ; and lose no opportunity of acquiring requisite knowledge, that all men may see and confess your proficiency. Be zealous to 16 lead a pure and holy life, and to arrive at the possession of the true and wholesome doctrine, and, having arrived, to persevere in the practice and inculcation of it : for so doing, you will save your own soul, and the souls of your hearers.

Give no unnecessary offence or scandal by harshly 5 rebuking the elders of the Church, but admonish

them, when necessary, with the forbearance of a son addressing his father; and in like manner exhort the young with the affectionate earnestness of a  
2 brother persuading a brother. By the same rule, address the elder women as mothers, the younger, as your own sisters, with all purity of thought and manner.

3 Treat with respect the widows who derive their maintenance from the contributions of the Church, taking care to admit such only to those appointments, as may from their age and circumstances be  
4 best suited to the duties of the situation. I mean such as shall have no children or relatives for whom to provide, or to whom to look. For with regard to those who have families of their own to support, let such be content to perform the peculiar domestic duties resulting from that circumstance, looking after the welfare of their own offspring, and assisting their parents in their infirmity; as in so doing, they will be well performing their duty to God.  
5 But the real widows whom I would recommend to you for the service of the Church, such, I mean, as have no temporal occupations to distract or call them away from the more direct duties of religion, cannot do better than devote themselves to the service of God, by offering up to him their prayers  
6 and supplications by night and by day; whilst those on the contrary who may be in more affluent circumstances, devoting themselves to the pleasures of this life, will often be spiritually dead with reference  
7 to that which is to come. Be careful then to mention this my injunction to the brethren, that they make their choice accordingly of persons duly qualified: remembering that where relatives exist who  
8 are dependent upon ourselves for their support, we

can have no excuse for withdrawing ourselves from the performance of an imperative domestic duty, under the plea that we are devoting ourselves to the peculiar service of God. For the desertion of that station in which God has placed us, with all its accompanying obligations, is not only inconsistent with the spirit of Christianity, but is even below the usual affection displayed towards their near connexions by the very heathens themselves. Let then the widow whom you may elect into the service of the Church be at all events not under sixty<sup>1</sup> years

<sup>1</sup> One cannot but be strongly impressed whilst perusing this passage with the powerful good sense, as well as good feeling of St. Paul pourtrayed in it. It is not the self-exclusion of devout persons from the turmoil of worldly concerns for the purposes of habitual piety which he deprecates, for such habits may be in their proper time and place as highly rational and as consistent with true religion, as they are for the most part well intentioned. But his insight into human nature had taught him, that resolutions of this description formed under the momentary operation of some strong devotional excitement, are often ill adapted to the bodily and intellectual temperament of the persons forming them: and that there can be neither true piety nor true wisdom in entangling a reluctant conscience in the responsibility of services, the essential value of which necessarily consists in the willing spirit, and the cheerfulness with which they are performed. Had the Church of Rome, when she gave her confirmatory sanction to the indissoluble obligation of monastic vows, but seriously weighed the prudential caution of the apostle in the passage before us, how vast a mass of misery, the consequence of ineffectual regret, and of an alarmed conscience reproaching itself with its instinctive but involuntary recollections of a world it had abjured, would she have removed from many a now blighted victim of ill-judging piety, or gloomy superstition!

10 of age; having had only one husband; and who shall come to you specially recommended by her good works, such as having brought up her children well; having been hospitable to strangers; having washed the feet of our brethren; having assisted the distressed, and having laudably performed the other  
11 commendable duties of life. All women accordingly under the age now mentioned consider as disqualified; lest after having devoted themselves more especially to the service of Christ, they be induced to change their minds, and to engage in a  
12 second marriage; and thus be tempted into the sin of violating engagements which they may have entered into from want of a thorough knowledge of  
13 their own inclinations: or even, should they not betake themselves a second time to matrimony, lest, at all events, they should want a due steadiness of character, wandering from house to house for the sake of indulging a trifling disposition, and joining  
14 in light and frivolous conversation. Instead then of perverting a charitable and religious institution, I would rather recommend that the younger widows marry a second time, and have children whom they may bring up properly, than, by undertaking duties for which they are inadequate, give a handle to the  
15 ill-disposed to revile our establishment. For already some, by the conduct which I have now described, have given just occasion to scandal.

16 In cases where any private individuals, male or female, have from charitable motives undertaken the support of a widow, or widows, let them continue to do so without burthening the finances of the Church, in order that it may be better able to

provide for such as shall be really destitute and deserving.

Let those elders who perform the work of the 17 ministry in an exemplary manner, particularly those who are zealous in preaching and instructing others, receive a larger provision, in proportion to their deserts: according to the precepts of Moses, (Deu-18 teronomy xxv. 4.) "Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn," as also the words of our blessed Saviour himself, (Matthew x. 10. Luke x. 7.) "the labourer is worthy of his hire."

<sup>1</sup> Receive no accusation against an elder, unless 19 it be substantiated by two or three witnesses; but 20 where an accusation shall be proved to be well-founded, let your reprimand of the offending party be as public as possible, in order that others may be deterred from offending in a like manner.

I charge you in the name of God, and of our 21 Lord Jesus Christ, and of those apostles whom he has appointed to rule over his Church, to observe all these directions with perfect impartiality, without prejudice or undue bias.

Confer imposition of hands upon no man without 22 due caution, lest by inadvertence you make yourself responsible for another person's misconduct.

Keep watch over your own conduct, and preserve purity of life and conversation.

<sup>1</sup> This passage, which asserts the authority of Timothy to establish a judicial investigation into the conduct of any accused Elders (Presbyters) of the Church, with the subsequent clause, ver. 22, respecting the conferring of orders, appears perfectly decisive with regard to the existence of the prelatical office in the primitive ages of Christianity.



- 23 Do not, as I understand you have done, continue to confine yourself to water only at your meals, but drink a little wine for your stomach's sake, and on account of your frequent bodily infirmities.
- 24 In judging of your candidates for the ministry, you will have no difficulty in deciding upon the unfitness and unworthiness of some applicants; but cases will occur, in which you will be liable to be  
 25 deceived, unless you exercise much caution: on the other hand, the sufficiency of some will be obvious to you at first sight, whilst that of others will require some pains to draw it out, before it can be duly appreciated <sup>1</sup>.
- 6 Let every believing brother who is a slave, pay all becoming honour and respect to the master who has a legal claim to his services, that the name of God and of the Gospel be not calumniated as in-  
 2 compatible with the usages of society: and in cases where the master is himself a Christian, let not the slave on that account relax his attention to his master's interests, on the plea that all Christians <sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The caution exercised by the primitive Church in inquiring strictly into the morals of the candidates for the ministry, is evident from the following passage in Lamprius's Life of Alexander Severus. "Ubi aliquos voluisset vel rectores provinciis dare, vel præpositos facere, vel procuratores, id est rationales ordinare, nomina eorum proponebat, hortans populum, ut, si quis quid haberet criminis, probaret manifestis rebus; si non probâsset, subiret pœnam capitis: dicebatque, grave esse, cum id Christiani et Judæi facerent in prædicandis sacerdotibus qui ordinandi sunt, non fieri in provinciarum rectoribus, quibus et fortunæ hominum committerentur et capita." *Ælii Lampridii Alexander Severus*, cap. 45.

<sup>2</sup> The admonition here inculcated by the apostle is strik-

are brethren to one another, and equal in the sight of God; but let him rather do his duty the more earnestly on that very account, making the tie of mutual love and kindness only another motive to stimulate his industry. Impress this precept to the utmost of your power upon those whom you are called to instruct.

If any convert be given to innovate upon the 3 simplicity of the Gospel, and will not submit his understanding to the wholesome and unsophisticated doctrine taught by our blessed Saviour, be 4 assured that man is led away by carnal arrogance and conceit from the search of true knowledge, and is making the word of life a mere instrument for idle speculations and controversies, and thus sowing the seed of jealousies, dissensions, railings, uncharitable surmises, and of all those sophistical fallacies 5 by which worldly men attempt to harden their hearts against the chidings of conscience, and to make the holy cause of religion compatible with their own selfish interests. Of such persons beware. Compatible with our real interests even in this life 6 religion undoubtedly is; it is not however by making us rich, but in giving us that contented disposition which is equivalent with riches. For we 7 brought nothing into this world, and it is certain that we can carry nothing out; wherefore, provided 8 we have food and covering, let that suffice. In 9 aiming beyond this, and in seeking to be rich, men

ingly characteristic of his deep insight into human nature. How often since his day has the spiritual equality of Christians been advanced by the enthusiastic and fanatical as a plea for insubordination, and an argument for the abolition of the civil distinctions of society!

fall of their own accord into temptation and a snare, blinding their understandings, and fostering those evil passions which eventually plunge all who give  
10 way to them into the abyss of perdition. For avarice is the root of all evil; rendering the hearts of those who are its slaves callous to all the feelings of faith and piety, and embittering their whole exist-  
11 ence with anxiety and sorrow. Fly, chosen servant of God, I beseech you, fly from these wretched and base passions; and let your great and earnest endeavour be the attainment of righteousness, piety,  
12 faith, charity, patience, meekness: fight the good fight of faith: lay hold of, and cling to, that hope of eternal life to which God has called you, and the blessed doctrine of which you have gloriously  
13 asserted in the presence of so many witnesses. Do this I solemnly adjure you in the name, and as you shall one day stand in the sight of God, the Giver of life; continue to bear your fearless testimony to the truth, as your great Master Christ Jesus himself has done before you, who so unhesitatingly  
14 answered to the interrogations of Pilate: that our gracious Redeemer may find you faithful to the last, without stain or reproach, at his glorious second  
15 coming, when in his own good time he shall reappear as the blessed and only Mighty One, the  
16 King of kings, and Lord of lords, the great self-existent and eternal Being, who makes his abode in that inaccessible blaze of light and glory, which man has not seen, nor can see. To Him be honour and eternal dominion. Amen.

17 Remind those who are rich in this world's treasure, that they place not their confidence and hopes on those uncertain possessions; but on the mercies

of the living God, who gives us all things abundantly for our innocent enjoyment: and exhort 18 them to be zealous after good works, making themselves rich in the fruits of a good life, ready to distribute to others, and compassionate to the necessitous; that so they may lay up for themselves a 19 good treasure for the world to come, and may attain to everlasting life.

O Timothy, keep the doctrine which is entrusted 20 to your ministry in simplicity and purity, avoiding profane and trifling innovations, and the vain superadditions of carnal philosophy, which some of our 21 brethren having adopted, have corrupted the word of God, and fallen away from the faith. Grace be with you. Amen.

THE  
SECOND EPISTLE OF PAUL  
TO  
TIMOTHY.

---

THE following Epistle, the last of those attributed to St. Paul, is supposed to have been written a short time previous to his martyrdom, in the year of our Lord 65.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

1 PAUL an apostle of Jesus Christ, by the will of God,  
according to the promise of eternal life in Christ  
2 Jesus, to my beloved child Timothy—grace, mercy,  
and peace be from God the Father, and from our  
Lord Jesus Christ.

We have here the valedictory and affecting exhortations of the dying Paul, ready, as he expresses it, to be offered up for the service of his Redeemer, to his favourite disciple Timothy, on the subject of the duties of a Christian minister. The Epistle presents a beautiful and striking picture of the same unshrinking energy of character, the same simplicity of feelings, and the same sincerity of belief, which marks the former writings of the apostle, wound up by the prospect of approaching dissolution to a degree of joyful confidence in the mercies of his Creator, which more than realize our most sanguine conceptions of that beatitude which might be expected to attend the closing career of an expiring saint. The whole composition is however as completely devoid of every symptom of enthusiasm and of morbid excitement, as it is abundant in topics of edification, from which every class of human beings may derive substantial benefit.

I thank my God, the God of my forefathers, 3  
whom I serve with a pure conscience, making incessant mention of you in my prayers by night and by day, (for I cannot forget the tears which you 4 shed when with me on a former occasion, nor restrain the anxious longing which I feel to see you once more,) when I call to mind your sincere faith 5 in the Gospel; a faith which shone conspicuously in your grandmother Lois, and in your mother Eunice, and which, I am confident, exists in no less degree in yourself. Wherefore I the more earnestly intreat you to stir up and keep alive that spiritual gift of God which dwells within you, through the imposition of my hands; for that precious gift was not communicated that it might lie dormant through timidity, but that it might operate by miracles, and works of Christian charity, and well-regulated zeal. Be not then ashamed to bear 8 witness to the name of our Redeemer, nor to acknowledge me who am now a prisoner on account of his Gospel; but bear cheerfully your share in the afflictions which await those who are called to the ministry, looking up to the protection and support of that God who calls us to salvation by his holy 9 summons, not on account of our own merits, but from his own gracious purpose and mercy, which was prepared for us, through Christ Jesus, before the commencement of time; and which has been 10 revealed in our days by the coming of our Saviour, Jesus Christ, who has stripped death of its power, and brought life and immortality to light through his Gospel: of which I have been appointed by him 11 a teacher, and an apostle, and an instructor of the Gentiles: and for the sake of which I now suffer 12

persecution. I am not however ashamed or dismayed on that account : for I know in whom I have trusted, and I am well assured that he is able to guard the treasure which I have deposited in his keeping until the great day of his second coming.

13 Hold fast then, I beseech you, that form of sound and wholesome doctrine which you derived from my instructions, with that firmness of conviction and earnestness of zeal which become a follower of  
14 Christ ; guarding that sacred deposit by the aid of that Holy Spirit which God has been pleased to communicate to us.

15 You have of course heard that our Asiatic converts, including Phygellus and Hermogenes, have turned away from me.

16 May the Lord have mercy on the family of Onesiphorus ; for he often refreshed me, and was not ashamed of me, although a prisoner in fetters ;  
17 but upon his arrival in Rome made an eager search  
18 after me, and came to me. May the Lord grant that he may find mercy from our Saviour in the day of his second coming. You had before heard of his many kindnesses towards me when I was in Ephesus.

2 Be then, my son, strong in the grace which has  
2 been given to you in Christ Jesus, being careful to commit as a sacred deposit to faithful and sincere men those great truths which were communicated to you through my instructions, and which have been attested and authenticated by so many witnesses, in order that they may in their turn transmit them to  
3 others for the information of future ages. Conduct yourself as a good soldier of Christ, and shrink not  
4 from the hardships of his service ; recollecting that

it is the part of a good soldier to bid adieu to the entanglements of civil and domestic concerns, and to attend exclusively to that obedience which he owes to his superior officer. Recollect also that 5 in the public games, no champion can win the prize unless he conform to all the prescribed conditions of the day; and that in agriculture no husbandman 6 can hope to gather in the harvest, unless he have first undergone the labour and expense of tillage. Let these and similar reflections sink deep in your 7 thoughts; and may our Lord give you a right apprehension of all things. Forget not for a single 8 moment the first great article and foundation of that faith which I so earnestly preach; namely, that Jesus Christ, verily and actually clothed with our human nature, and a descendant from the lineage of David, has been raised again from the dead: a faith for the 9 teaching of which I am at this moment lying, like a common malefactor, a prisoner in fetters. But what of that? my limbs may be chained, and my body imprisoned; but the word of God notwithstanding spreads, yea, and will spread. Therefore I submit 10 with patience to these temporary afflictions for the sake of God's people, that they also may obtain salvation through Jesus Christ, and an inheritance of eternal glory. Be assured, this is no vain and delu- 11 sive expectation. If we are now content to die with him, we shall all of us assuredly one day live also with him: if we now submit patiently to affliction 12 for his sake, we shall also hereafter reign triumphantly with him; but then let us not on the other hand forget how solemnly we have been warned by him, that "if we deny him, he will also deny us when he shall return in his glory." (Matt. x. 33.)



- 13 We may in our perversity turn a deaf ear to him, and disbelieve his report of himself: but it will not be therefore one tittle the less true: he at least cannot deny himself, nor be false to his own positive declarations.
- 14 Let this then be the sum and substance of your exhortations; nor omit to charge your hearers, in the name of our blessed Saviour, to avoid captious disputations on these mysterious subjects, the effect of which will too probably be the destruction of  
15 both their faith and their charity. Be on your guard also with respect to the purity of your own doctrine, not showing yourself ashamed of God's holy Gospel, but delivering the word of truth plain  
16 and unadulterated; without any admixture of human glosses and interpretations, which will serve only as a door for the admission of antichristian  
17 principles, and eat, like a canker, into the very vital doctrines of our faith. Witness for instance  
18 the case of Hymenæus and Philetus, who have set up their own speculations in opposition to the truth, and have asserted, to the misleading of some, that  
19 the resurrection is already past. But the fundamental hopes of the true believer are not to be thus easily overthrown; on the contrary, they stand firm in the security of God's promises, bearing for their legend and inscription the words spoken by Moses on the occasion of the rebellion of Korah, "The Lord knoweth them that are his;" and again, "<sup>1</sup> Let

<sup>1</sup> This allusion to the judgments inflicted upon Korah and his associates, shows with what severity of reprehension when necessary St. Paul was disposed to consider every heretical innovation upon the sound doctrines of the Gos-

every one who nameth the name of Christ depart from among these wicked men," (Numbers xvi. 5. 26.) But we know that in every great house, not every vessel is of gold or silver, but some are of baser materials, such as wood and earthenware; the former for honourable, the latter for meaner uses. Let a man then keep himself pure from these corrupt doctrines, and he shall be in the Lord's house as one of the honourable vessels, *clean*, and fit for his master's use, and for every good and seemly purpose.

Let me also put you upon your guard against the indiscretion and impetuosity natural to youth, in the administration of your very momentous office. Strive therefore the more earnestly on that account to attain the great Christian virtues of holiness, faith, charity, and forbearance, and to display them on all occasions in your intercourse with the pure and sincere followers of Christ; discouraging always every tendency to vain and unprofitable inquiries into matters which have not been revealed, the only result of which must be conflicting opinions, and embittered passions. It is not by such discordant instruments that the servant of Christ can hope to do his Master's work. On the contrary, he can only labour profitably by showing himself gentle to all men, willing to impart instruction; not easily provoked, but rather expostulating meekly with the wayward opinions of the arrogant and

pel. Notwithstanding the peculiar and almost unparalleled benignity of his character, the sacred cause of scriptural truth is never for a moment compromised by him for the sake of a mistaken liberality or of unwarranted conciliation.

self-conceited, in the hope that God may bring  
26 them to a better mind, that they may awake from  
the intoxicating delusions with which Satan has  
bewildered their judgments, that they might be-  
3 come his slaves. Nor will this caution on your  
part be superfluous; for be assured that, from the  
causes now alluded to, corruptions will in the course  
of ages most abundantly creep into God's Church;  
2 when Christian simplicity and charity will be lost  
amid the collision of worldly feelings, and men shall  
become selfish, covetous, arrogant, contemptuous,  
3 calumniators, disobedient to parents, ungrateful,  
irreligious, incapable of the kindly and social affec-  
tions, faithless, stirrers of strife, slaves to their  
4 passions, harsh, dead to the perception of what is  
good, betrayers, headstrong, insolent, lovers of plea-  
5 sure rather than lovers of God, professing the ex-  
ternal forms of piety, but uninfluenced by its in-  
6 ternal sentiment. All such persons do your utmost  
to discourage, for such there are already in opera-  
tion, men who creep from house to house, mislead-  
ing weak women who cling to their sins, and are  
slaves to their own unsubdued passions, and who  
7 make religion rather a subject for the indulgence  
of a meddling curiosity, than an instrument of  
8 spiritual righteousness. As it is related of Jannes<sup>1</sup>  
and Jambres, Pharaoh's juggling magicians, that  
they withstood Moses, so do these men set up their  
own sophisticated feelings and hardened imagina-

<sup>1</sup> The names of Jannes and Jambres not being recorded in the narrative of the book of Genesis, St. Paul must be here alluding to some Jewish tradition which has not come down to our time.

tions against the cause of truth. But they shall 9 not finally succeed in their endeavours: but, as the two impostors just now mentioned stood convicted in the presence of their master, so shall the delusion of these false teachers be eventually exposed in the face of all men.

For the present, however, be prepared for per-10 secution. You have witnessed the latter circumstances of my life in all its details; my perseverance in preaching, my disciplined habits, my fixed resolution, my implicit faith, my equable temper, my affection for all men, my patience; and you 11 know how all these have been put to the test by persecutions and afflictions; what I suffered at Antioch, what at Iconium, what at Lystra: how my course has been one of suffering for the cause of truth, and how my God has carried me unscathed through it all. And be assured, that all men, who 12 are zealous to live holily and conformably to the religion of Christ, must make their account to suffer persecution as I have done; or rather let me say, more than I have done; for the wickedness and 13 seductions of mankind have not yet reached their limit, but men as time advances shall grow worse and worse, deceiving and deceived. Again then, 14 let me intreat you, be firm, nor abandon one particle of that holy doctrine which you have embraced, and with the ministry of which you have been entrusted, recollecting the authentic source from which you first received it: and that it has been your good 15 fortune to have imbibed from your very infancy the knowledge of those holy Scriptures which, if rightly understood, are able to make you wise unto salvation, and to bring you to the faith of Christ. For 16

all those Scriptures which the Jews acknowledge were imparted by God's own inspiration, that from them we might derive wholesome instruction, sound argument, a knowledge of God's ways, and that  
17 preparatory discipline which terminates in effectual righteousness, that the servant of God may be perfect in fulness of instruction, and fitted for a career of complete happiness.

4 I solemnly call upon you then, in the name of God, and of our Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the living and the dead at his second coming in the  
2 plenitude of his power and glory, preach, impress, enforce, in season or out of season, the glad tidings of salvation; refute the false reasoner; rebuke the evil liver; call and encourage all men, bearing with their waywardness, and administering whole-  
3 some instruction. For it will not be always that they will hear you. The time will come when they will no longer endure the simplicity of the Gospel, but, according to their own passions and caprices, will heap teacher upon teacher, speculation upon speculation<sup>1</sup>, having their ears itching after novelty,

<sup>1</sup> This passage conveys a truly important admonition to Christian teachers of every period, and more especially to those of our own times. When we recollect through what a mass of heterogeneous speculation, through what intricacies of false learning, the product of eighteen centuries of too frequently misapplied ingenuity, the modern theologian has to explore his way back to the simple truths and feelings of primitive Christianity;—how many lures of controversial display, of feverish intellectual excitement, of momentary interest, co-operate to turn his attention rather to the incidental questions, or the metaphysical enigmas of religion, than to the great and vital dogmas of

and turning away from the plain truth to hunt after 4  
the excitements of fiction. Be then cool, temperate, 5

man's natural helplessness, of Christ's efficacious atonement, and of sanctification by the Holy Spirit, we cannot but acknowledge that few of the apostolical injunctions require to be more frequently sounded in the ears of those persons to whose superintendence the souls of others are entrusted, than the one before us. Far be it indeed from any well-wisher to pure Christianity to deprecate the application of controversial divinity in its proper season, and under a justifying emergency. St. Paul himself is, in many portions of his writings, an instance with what inflexible energy of mind the most subdued and gentle character may, and ought to, harden itself for the exercise of polemical discussion, when to decline the combat would be to abandon to our adversary the holy cause of eternal truth. Still, however, we should never lose sight of the fact, that real Christianity is rather a moral feeling than a science; that controversial discussion is only an offensive, however occasionally necessary, weapon in the armoury of religion, and not religion itself; and that, as in our bodies disorders are often aggravated by the irritation produced by the remedies intended for their cure, so the angry feelings thus excited will often do more to confirm rival differences of opinion, than any arguments which we can advance will be able to effect for their extinction. Controversy, like warfare between nations, is indeed the final appeal to which we must necessarily have recourse, when other preventive and more pacific measures fail; but the necessity of the former no less than of the latter may not unfrequently be averted, without the slightest compromise of the justice of our cause, by that conciliatory spirit, the natural tendency of which is to incline our adversary to reconsider his arguments, not so much for the purpose of pointing them afresh, as from a suspicion that they may have been overstated, and from a misgiving lest, whilst he intended nothing more than to advocate his just rights, he should be found to

and cautious; not turned away by provocation from the right course, but, doing faithfully the work of an evangelist, perform with anxious attention all  
6 the various duties of your ministry. For my assistance in this holy cause, I feel that you can no longer look. My vial is now nearly exhausted of its contents, and the time of my liberation is at  
7 hand. I have fought a good fight; I have won the race which was set before me; I have maintained my faith unshaken to the last; and now my reward  
8 awaits me. Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness which the Lord my righteous Judge shall give me on the great day of his coming; and not to me only, but to all those who look forward to that his glorious re-appearance with hope and affection <sup>1</sup>.

have been himself the original aggressor. In a note appended to Philippians iii. 15, a wise practical maxim of St. Paul on this subject has been already alluded to, which substantially differs little from that which has suggested these observations, and which no person sincerely labouring in the duties of the ministry can lay too near to his heart; namely, that an incessant and earnest inculcation of the fundamental truths of revelation will operate far more powerfully as an incidental check to the growth of false opinions on remoter points, than the direct refutation of them. Nor, on the other hand, is the danger slight, lest, by the indulgence of a disputatious spirit upon questions of inferior, not to say trivial, interest, we should to a certain degree invert the scale of their relative importance, and check the due recurrence of our thoughts to those primary and momentous truths which constitute the very essence of Christianity.

<sup>1</sup> Compare this beautiful passage with the no less affecting and valedictory address of St. Paul to the elders of the

Come to me with all speed : for Demas has left <sup>9</sup> me, having attached himself to this present life, and <sup>10</sup> is gone to Thessalonica, Crescens to Galatia, Titus to Dalmatia. Only Luke is with me. Bring Mark <sup>11</sup> with you, for he is an able assistant to me in the ministry. Tychicus I have sent to Ephesus. <sup>12</sup> Bring with you, when you come, the cloak which <sup>13</sup> I left at Troas with Carpus, and also the books, but particularly the parchments<sup>1</sup>. Alexander the <sup>14</sup> coppersmith did me much mischief: the Lord repay him according to his works: be you also on <sup>15</sup> your guard against him, for he has been a violent opposer of our preaching.

None of our brethren had the fortitude to attend <sup>16</sup> me at my first defence before the emperor, but all forsook me. I pray that God may not lay it to their charge. The Lord however was my aid and <sup>17</sup> support, on that trying occasion, in order that my public and unshrinking declaration of the tidings of salvation might be widely heard, and that the heathens might have an opportunity of turning to the faith. And though I spoke with boldness, his mercy delivered me out of the lion's mouth; and I feel <sup>18</sup> assured that he will continue to protect me so that nothing evil shall finally gain advantage over me, but

Church at Ephesus, as given in Acts xx. 18, et seq. The strict identity of feeling and manner in both these extracts is strikingly confirmatory of the authenticity of the portions of the New Testament in which they are found.

<sup>1</sup> It has been suggested as a not improbable conjecture, that the cloak and parchments, respecting which the apostle gives this commission to Timothy, were the Roman toga, and the certificates of his citizenship, which might be of service to him in his approaching trial before the emperor.



that he will receive me into his glorious kingdom.  
To him be glory for ever and ever. Amen.

- 19 Salute Prisca and Aquila, and the household of  
20 Onesiphorus. Erastus remained behind at Corinth.  
21 Trophimus I left sick at Miletus. Join me if possible before the winter. Eubulus, and Pudens, and Linus, and Claudia, and all the brethren salute you.  
22 The Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Grace be with you. Amen.

THE  
EPISTLE OF PAUL  
TO  
TITUS.

---

THE Epistle to Titus is supposed to have been written about the same time with the first to Timothy: that is to say, about the year of our Lord 64, after the close of Paul's first imprisonment at Rome. No account being given in the book of the Acts of that apostle's visit to Crete alluded to in this Epistle, that journey must necessarily be supposed to have taken place after the period at which that narrative ends, namely, after his arrival in Rome for the first time, in which city it is well known that he continued to reside for the space of two years before he was again set at liberty.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

PAUL the servant of God, and an apostle of Jesus 1  
Christ for the propagation of the faith of God's  
chosen people, and of the knowledge of truth and 2  
holiness, in the hope of that everlasting life which 3  
our God, who cannot lie, promised before the com-  
mencement of time; and who has in his due season  
declared his word by the mouth of his preachers, to  
which ministry I have been appointed by the com-  
mand of God our Saviour, to Titus my own son 4

and convert in our common faith—grace, mercy, and peace be from God our Father, and from our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

The object of this Epistle is nearly the same with that of the first addressed to Timothy; namely, to convey the apostle's instructions to his friend and disciple Titus, whom he had left behind him in Crete, respecting the selection of proper persons for the Christian ministry, and the due regulation of Church discipline. It also refers to the so often denounced error of the Judaizing Christians, whose doctrines appear to have gained a footing in that island.

5 My object in leaving you in Crete, was in order that every thing which had been left unsettled by me there might be finally arranged, and that you might ordain elders in every city according to the  
6 directions which I gave you: choosing for that office men of unblemished character, each of them the husband of only one wife, having their children brought up in the faith of Christ, and in orderly  
7 and correct discipline. For it is quite necessary that a person filling the station of a bishop<sup>1</sup> should

<sup>1</sup> The word "Bishop" in this, as in the parallel passage in 1 Timothy iii. 1, appears to have been used by St. Paul as synonymous with that of "elder" or "presbyter," and from this circumstance the presbyterian Churches have attempted to derive an argument in favour of that peculiar form of government established in their communities. This however is not a mere controversy about names. The real point at issue between our Church and those formed upon the presbyterian model is, whether any real distinction of rank and office did actually exist among the ministers of the Christian congregations established by the apostles themselves. Now this question appears to be satisfactorily answered by the fact, that both Timothy and Titus are expressly declared to have had power to ordain

be of blameless morals, as being the steward of God's mysteries, not self-willed, not irritable, not given to intemperance, not violent, not avaricious, but on the contrary hospitable, delighting in the society of the well-disposed, judicious, just, devout, temperate, holding firmly the true word of revelation, that by it he may be able both to edify his hearers by sound instruction, and to refute his impugnors by forcible argument. For many false teachers and corrupters of the Gospel doctrine have crept into the Cretan Church, particularly of that class who would enforce the necessity of circumcision as conducive to salvation, whose arguments it is highly expedient to silence; for they have succeeded in perverting the faith of whole families, engrafting human speculations upon the word of God, as a source of worldly profit to themselves. But such has ever been the character of the Cretans as a

bishops or presbyters to the ministry according to their own discretion, and also to sit in judgment upon such as should have been accused of any misdemeanor in the exercise of their office. Milton in his "Reasons against Prelacy" has attempted to destroy the force of this argument by asserting, that the power possessed by Timothy and Titus was nothing more than the delegated authority of the apostle Paul acting through them as his deputies, and consequently that it could afford no precedent for the establishment of a similar jurisdiction after the expiration of the apostolical age. This assertion however proves too much, as, if admitted, it would be good, not against prelacy only, but against every other branch of church discipline established by the apostles, and which, under the sanction of their authority, has formed part of the permanent usage of the Christian world in later times.

nation, whom one of their own poets has accurately described in the well-known verse,

‘The false, rapacious, sluggard sons of Crete.’

13 And such they continue to be at this moment.

Wherefore admonish them in severe terms, that they may learn to submit to the truth as they find 14 it revealed in God’s word, and not garbled and adulterated by the admixture of Levitical traditions 15 or of deceitful human glosses. To the pure in heart all things are pure; but to the perverted and selfish mind, on the contrary, the best and holiest things, even conscience and reason themselves, be- 16 come an abomination. And thus with the blessed name of God on their lips they virtually deny him in their works, giving themselves up to licentiousness, and disobedience, and every species of corruption.

2 In a country where so many errors and abuses require correction, be it your anxious endeavour to preach to the best of your power the wholesome corrective of sound religion and morals, dwelling upon and enforcing the following topics.

2 That the elder men be sober in their demeanour, decorous, steady, firm in their faith, abundant in Christian love and kindness, and patient under afflictions.

3 That the elder women be in their conduct such as becomes the holy religion they profess, not tale-bearers, nor addicted to intemperance, but being an example to others for their good life and conversation: that from them the younger women may learn 4 to love their husbands and children, to be discreet,

chaste, domestic, affectionate, and obedient to their husbands, that the Gospel which they profess to believe may not be evil spoken of.

Exhort the young men also to practise moral restraint; and, that they may be induced to do so, make yourself an example and model of good works, and let your instructions be conceived in a spirit of purity, gravity, and sincerity, and your expressions so tempered by judgment and caution, that your adversaries may neither in the matter or manner find a handle for censure or ridicule.

Enjoin servants to be obedient to their respective masters, conducting themselves with deference, and avoiding rudeness and contumacy of manner; not pilfering or defrauding, but showing themselves faithful and honest in all things; that the doctrine of God our Saviour may derive credit from their irreproachable behaviour.

For the saving mercy of God has in these latter days shone forth upon all men, teaching us to renounce ungodliness and all worldly appetites, and to live soberly, and honestly, and piously in this our present life, waiting for that blessed consummation of our hope, the glorious second coming of our great God and Saviour Jesus Christ: who gave himself to death for our sakes, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify to himself a peculiar people studious of good works. These things speak and exhort: rebuking, where needful, with the authority of a minister of Christ. Let no man despise you or your words.

Remind them also of the deference which they owe to persons in authority and power, that they may be ready to show their obedience to them in

every thing consistent with the laws of conscience.  
2 To avoid declamation and quarrels, and to be meek  
and gentle in all their dealings with all mankind.  
3 For we ourselves, before we had learned the know-  
ledge of Christ, were like them headstrong, disobe-  
dient, loose livers, the slaves of appetite and plea-  
sure, living in hatred and malice, bearing jealousy  
4 and animosity against one another. But when it  
pleased God our Saviour to display his goodness  
and love for mankind, he communicated his salva-  
5 tion to us not on account of any righteous deeds  
which we had done, but from his own pure and  
undeserved mercy, by the washing of regeneration,  
and the renewal of our heart by the assistance of  
6 the Holy Spirit, which he poured abundantly upon  
7 us, through Jesus Christ our Saviour, that being  
justified and acquitted by his mercy, we might in-  
8 herit the hope of everlasting life. This then is a true  
and important maxim which you cannot too earnestly  
enforce, that a good moral life ought to be the  
anxious endeavour of all persons professing a belief  
in God. Such precepts are honourable to the religion  
which enjoins them, and salutary to mankind whose  
9 welfare they directly promote: but not so are the  
idle and captious arguments, and <sup>1</sup> genealogical spe-  
culations, and futile distinctions between Jew and  
Gentile, which serve but to irritate the passions and  
to promote strife and ill will. Such accordingly avoid  
10 as vain and unprofitable. If in spite of your better  
instructions, any member of the Church continue to  
foment heresy by such indulgence in human specula-  
tions, after a second formal admonition exclude such

<sup>1</sup> See 1 Timothy i. 4.

an one from the society of the Church ; as in that 11 case he can only be considered in the light of a person of a corrupt mind who deliberately sins against his better knowledge.

When I send Artemas or Tychicus to you, make 12 what haste you can to meet me at Nicopolis, for there I have determined to pass the winter. Supply 13 Zenas the lawyer and Apollos with every thing necessary for their journey, that they feel no privation. And let all our brethren learn to practise some 14 honourable calling for the supply of their wants, that they may not be a burthen upon others. All who are here with me salute you. Salute from me all my 15 Christian well-wishers.

The grace of God be with you all. Amen.

---

IT has been observed, that, whilst St. Paul has in his Epistle to Timothy particularly cautioned that disciple against any injudicious display of impetuosity and eagerness of temper in the exercise of his office, he has not urged the same prudential admonition to Titus whilst delegating to him a similar authority ; from whence it has been inferred, that the latter was probably a person of a milder temper, and consequently less likely to offend on the side of that peculiar species of indiscretion. In accordance with this supposition, we may observe, that the second Epistle to Timothy affords us a painful ground for conjecturing, that however numerous in other respects may have been the excellences of Titus's character, firmness and moral courage were not the most prominent of them. "Come to me with all speed," says the apostle in that moment of his temporal affliction, "for Demas has left me, having attached himself to this present life, and is gone to Thessalonica, Crescens to Galatia, *Titus* to Dalmatia." This juxta-position of his



name with that of Demas undoubtedly appears to involve him in some degree in the censure attaching to the tergiversation of the former<sup>1</sup>. Of both we may however venture to hope, that their fault was rather the consequence of momentary infirmity than of deliberate ingratitude, and that, like the repentant disciples of their divine Master, they subsequently expiated their short-lived desertion by the sincerity of their contrition, and by their increased zeal in the execution of the duties of their ministry.

<sup>1</sup> This inference seems to be confirmed by what follows a few verses below the passage here referred to, "At my first defence before the emperor *all* forsook me." (2 Timothy iv. 16.)

THE  
EPISTLE OF PAUL  
TO  
PHILEMON.

---

THE following Epistle appears to have been written towards the conclusion of St. Paul's first imprisonment at Rome, and must therefore have its date assigned late in the year of our Lord 62, or early in 63.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

PAUL, a prisoner in the cause of Jesus Christ, and 1 Timothy our brother, to our beloved and fellow-labourer Philemon, and to our beloved Apphia, and 2 to Archippus our fellow-soldier, and to the congregation of believers in your house—grace be to you 3 and peace from God our Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ.

The object of the apostle in addressing this Letter to Philemon is of a private and domestic nature. Onesimus, a slave of the latter person, having fled from his master's service, and taken refuge in Rome, had by some accident become acquainted with St. Paul, at that time

a prisoner in that city, and had by him been converted to Christianity. Being now desirous of returning to his master, but being at the same time apprehensive of the punishment which might await him as the consequence of his past misconduct, he applied to that apostle to mediate for him for the purpose of obtaining his pardon. The following Epistle was accordingly written in conformity with this request, and affords a beautiful specimen of the urbanity of St. Paul's manners as an accomplished member of society, no less than of the natural liberality and benevolence of his feelings.

- 4 I sincerely thank God in my continual remem-  
5 brance of you in my prayers, for all that I have  
heard of your love and faith toward our Lord Jesus  
Christ, as manifested in your kindness to his holy  
6 servants; earnestly trusting that your participation  
in our common belief may become effectual by  
leading you to exercise before all men those many  
good dispositions which you feel towards Christ  
7 Jesus, and the members of his Church. For we  
have all of us great cause for self-congratulation and  
comfort in witnessing your Christian kindness, and  
your many acts of beneficence, my beloved brother,  
8 to our necessitous converts; and under that con-  
viction, though I might, as bearing Christ's com-  
9 mission, address you in the way of command, I have  
preferred to make my appeal to your gratuitous  
good will and generosity under a no higher cha-  
racter than that of the aged individual Paul, now  
a prisoner in chains for the sake of the blessed  
Gospel.
- 10 Let me then entreat you to show compassion to  
Onesimus, one whom during my captivity I have  
11 succeeded in converting to our faith, whom, unpro-  
fitable as his service has been to you thus far, you  
will, I trust, now that he is brought to a better  
mind, and to a knowledge of the true God, find a

good and an altered character<sup>1</sup>. I have therefore 12  
ventured to send him back to you. Receive him then  
kindly, I beseech you, and consider yourself in so  
doing to be showing substantial kindness to myself.  
I should indeed have been glad to have retained him 13  
with me in Rome for some longer time, in order  
that he might during my imprisonment afford me  
those services which I am sure you would gladly  
supply in your own person were you here: I did 14  
not however venture to do so without your consent,  
especially as I wished such a favour to originate  
from yourself, and not to be extorted from you by  
any act of mine. May I also venture to suggest 15  
with regard to his late flight from you, "may not  
that event have been permitted by Providence, in  
order that, by the means of conversion which it has  
so fortunately afforded him, you might, by sustain-  
ing a short privation of his temporal services, at-  
tach him to yourself for all eternity, not as a slave, 16  
but as something better, a beloved brother, dear to  
me, but much more to you from your long know-  
ledge of him, and now also from his participating  
with you in the covenant of Christ?"

In the name then of our intimacy of affection, I 17  
entreat you to receive him with as much kindness  
as that with which you would receive myself: and, 18  
if you have suffered any loss or injury by him, to

<sup>1</sup> According to the tradition of the early Church, the Onesimus, whose cause St. Paul thus feelingly advocates, became subsequently Bishop of Ephesus, or, as is elsewhere stated, of Berea in Macedonia. He is said to have suffered martyrdom during the persecution of the Emperor Domitian, or, according to others, of Trajan.

- 19 consider me as your debtor to that amount. In order that you may be warranted in requiring the compensation from myself, be it what it may, I write this clause specially with my own hand, as a full acknowledgment of the debt: though perhaps I might remind you that you owe me much more than any thing which I may be indebted to you on this account, as it was from me that you derived  
20 your own conversion to the Gospel. Yes, my brother, grant me this favour in Christ's name. Afford  
21 me this comfort for the Lord's sake. I have written this request with a full conviction of your ready kindness, and that you would willingly bestow upon me a greater favour than that which I now solicit.  
22 Let me also avail myself of the present opportunity to beg of you to provide me with a lodging, for I trust that your prayers for my release have been heard, and that I shall shortly be allowed to visit you.
- 23 Epaphras, my fellow-prisoner for the cause of  
24 Christ, with Mark, Aristarchus, Demas, and Luke, my fellow-labourers in the ministry salute you.
- 25 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with your spirit. Amen.
- 

IN the Epistle to Philemon we have a striking proof how perfectly compatible are the noblest principles of practical Christianity with that elegance and amenity of character which form the great charm of polished society. Few of the epistolary remains of classical antiquity surpass it in beauty of composition or in grace of expression, yet the spirit which it breathes is that of the simplicity of a saint combined with the dignity of an apostle. It is however not a little remarkable, that the subject of the letter

involves a very delicate topic for the discussion of a Christian teacher, namely, the right of one human being to the compulsory services of another. In 1 Corinthians vii. 21, St. Paul has already incidentally expressed his own private disapprobation of an usage so inconsistent with the principles of natural justice and of Christian liberty ; and yet, both in that passage and in 1 Timothy vi. 2, he appears to consider it rather as an abuse which the then established order of society had rendered necessary, than as an abomination requiring at all events and at any price to be inexorably rooted up. It has already been observed in a former note, that Christianity rather trusted to the slow but sure amelioration resulting from the gradual adoption of better and holier principles of morals for the correction of what was amiss in ancient manners, than proposed any new and violent remedies, the operation of which could only have led to political convulsions and domestic misery. We can perfectly understand how, in the apostolic age, many a sincere believer in the Gospel may have found himself implicated in the responsibility attaching to the possession of a numerous household of domestic slaves, under circumstances which might render it impossible for him as a citizen, or even as a just and good man, to effect their complete manumission. In that case it became the necessary duty of an apostle, anxious rather for the promotion of substantial good, than for showy and plausible systems of reform, to tolerate what neither himself nor the party addressed had the power to prevent ; remembering however always to inculcate meanwhile such merciful principles upon the persons possessed of this dangerous and easily abused authority, as, whilst the external form of the evil was allowed to continue, might effectually remove from it all liability to practical injustice or cruelty. From the feeling manner, accordingly, in which this perplexing topic is discussed in the Epistle before us, one truly important lesson is, at all events, to be derived ; namely, with what liberality of charitable candour a Christian may hold his communings with society in his passage through a world, many of whose usages he disapproves, yet where no

necessary reason exists for attributing improper motives to the particular individuals whose conduct may accidentally differ from his own. In expostulating with deliberate and calculating vice, the protest of a Christian minister cannot perhaps be too explicitly declared ; but a vast multitude of cases may, and do, undoubtedly exist, in which a candid and pious temper will suggest much to palliate what our first impulse might incline us to disapprove, where a sterner, though intrinsically less pure, system of philosophy would find only the materials for angry declamation and uncompromising censure.

THE  
EPISTLE OF PAUL  
TO THE  
HEBREWS.

---

THE date of this Epistle is marked by the valedictory address, chap. xiii. 24, and must therefore be referred to the latter end of A.D. 62, or the beginning of 63, when St. Paul's first imprisonment at Rome was nearly terminated.

---

The object of the Epistle to the Hebrews is to prove to the Christian converts of that nation, and incidentally also to all who acknowledge the divine inspiration of the books of the Old Testament, the reality of the mission, and the divine nature of our blessed Saviour, from arguments derived exclusively from the peculiar lights afforded by those writings. The tendency of the apostle's reasoning is therefore to show, that no Jew who really believes in the authority of his own sacred books could, if he reason consistently, and be content to adopt all the inferences necessarily deducible from those premises, ultimately refuse his assent to the truth of the Christian dispensation, or fail of perceiving that in the person of our Redeemer all the types and prophecies of the Jewish writings had effectually, found their final completion. In order to perceive the extreme closeness and beauty of the argument thus managed, it is necessary therefore that the reader should keep in his mind that St. Paul addresses himself to *Jews only* ; to persons acknowledging no literature, no authoritative code of doctrine or formula of belief whatever, excepting the ancient books of the Law and the Prophets ; and accordingly that



proofs of our Saviour's mission derived from other sources, however satisfactory they might be to others, would have been to them at least out of place. The following dissertation is in short what the logicians call an "argumentum ad hominem," in which the point at issue is established by an appeal to those very peculiar opinions and principles which the parties to be convinced have, above all others, the most imperative obligation to admit.

1 GOD, who at various times and in various man-  
 2 ners spoke in days of old to our fathers by the  
 3 prophets, has in these latter days spoken to us by  
 4 his Son, whom he has made heir of all things,  
 5 (and by whom he made the world,) who, (being an  
 6 effulgence of his divine glory, and an impress of  
 7 his person, and upholding all things by the word of  
 8 his power,) having made by himself an expiation for  
 9 our sins, sat down at the right hand of the Majesty  
 10 on high; as much surpassing the angels in the es-  
 11 sential dignity of his nature, as the name which he  
 12 has inherited is pre-eminent above theirs.

13 For to which of the angels has God said at any  
 14 time, "Thou art my *Son*, this day have I begotten  
 15 thee?" (Psalm ii. 7.) and again, "I will be to him  
 16 a Father, and he shall be to me a *Son*." (2 Sam.  
 17 vii. 14.) And again, when prophetically alluding to  
 18 the second glorious coming of that Son into the  
 19 world, "Let all the angels of God worship him."  
 20 (Psalm xcvii. 7.) Of the angels themselves he  
 21 merely says, "Who maketh his angels spirits, and his  
 22 ministers a flame of fire;" (Psalm civ. 4.) but to the  
 23 Son he says, "Thy throne, O God<sup>1</sup>, is for ever and

<sup>1</sup> It appears to be scarcely within the power of language to assert the divine nature of our blessed Saviour in more express terms than in those of the two passages of the book of Psalms here quoted by the apostle.

ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom. Thou hast loved holiness and hated iniquity; wherefore God, thine own God, hath 9 anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows." (Psalm xlv. 6.) And again, "Thou, Lord, 10 in the beginning laidest the foundations of the earth, and the heavens are the work of thine hands. They shall perish, but thou remainest for ever: 11 they all shall grow old as does a garment, and as a 12 mantle thou shalt fold them up, and they shall be changed; but thou continuest the same, and thy years shall not fail." (Psalm cii. 25.) To which 13 again of the angels has he said at any time, "Sit thou on my right hand, until I shall have made thine enemies thy footstool?" (Psalm cx. 1.) on the 14 contrary, are they not mere ministering spirits, appointed to attend upon such of the human<sup>1</sup> race as shall inherit salvation?

If then such be the awful dignity of the Son of 2 God, the more earnestly in like proportion ought we to pay attention to his holy commands, lest we should fall away in our obedience from them. For if the 2 covenant which God made with the Israelites through the intervention of<sup>2</sup> angels was so solemnly sanctioned by himself, that every incidental transgression of its precepts and every occasional act of disobedience received its just retribution from God, how 3 shall we hope to escape the divine justice if we despise the covenant of salvation offered to our acceptance by the glorious Son of God himself?

<sup>1</sup> This passage seems to sanction the doctrine of guardian angels.

<sup>2</sup> See Galatians iii. 19.

a covenant which having been first promulgated to mankind by our Lord's own mouth, has been confirmed to ourselves by the testimony of his own  
4 disciples who heard him; and ratified by God's direct interposition, in the display of signs, and wonders, and various miracles, and by the communication of the gifts of the Holy Spirit from time to time according to his divine pleasure?  
5 For it is not to the mere ministering angels that he has committed the jurisdiction of the world to come, of which that blessed covenant promises us  
6 the fruition, as is evident from the following inspired passage. "What is man that thou art mindful of him, or the Son of man that thou regardest  
7 him? Thou hast made him a small degree lower than the angels; and yet thou hast crowned him  
8 with glory and honour. Thou hast placed *all things* under his feet." (Psalm viii. 4.<sup>1</sup>) Now if he has

<sup>1</sup> The primary and more obvious meaning of the passage in the eighth Psalm here referred to, appears to assert nothing more than the supremacy of man's present nature over the inferior races of animals which inhabit our globe. "Thou hast put all things under his feet: all sheep and oxen; yea, and all the beasts of the field." The application of it in a prophetic sense to the supreme dominion of our Redeemer over all created beings in heaven and earth, is certainly not one which would naturally suggest itself to us, or which we should venture to adopt as probable, had we not the warrant of inspired Scripture for so doing. I have made this observation on the present occasion, for the purpose of pointing out an evidence which this quotation affords of the authenticity of the Epistle to the Hebrews as written by St. Paul; a fact which, as every biblical scholar is aware, has been occasionally controverted. It seems scarcely probable that it could have occurred to *two*

placed *all things* under him, it is evident that there is nothing whatever, however great and dignified, which is not put under him. But *as yet we do not see all things placed under him*, and consequently that latter part of the prophecy as yet awaits its consummation; but the former part of it we ourselves have already seen consummated. We *have* seen Jesus Christ made a little inferior to 9 the angels, by taking upon himself the human nature, and we *have* also seen him, after his passage through the grave, crowned with glory and honour: that, by God's mercy towards us, he might taste of death for the redemption of all mankind. For it 10 accorded with the character of that mighty Being who called us and all things into existence, and for whom we and they exist, whilst preparing the way for us his sons to ascend into glory, to make also the great Leader of our salvation perfect through human sufferings; for he the sanctifier, 11 and we the sanctified, are all the children of the one Almighty God; for which reason he is not

*different* writers to cite the same text for the self-same purpose, with an interpretation annexed to it so widely different from that which would present itself to common readers; yet in 1 Cor. xv. 25, and also in Eph. i. 22, it is expressly referred to by St. Paul as confirmatory of the universal sovereignty of Christ. That this secondary application of the passage is a correct one we are of course bound to admit; but, as I have just now observed, it suggests an argument which is much more likely to occur more than once to the same individual whilst discussing the same subject, than to have been advanced with perfect identity of allusion by some other person, writing under the influence of his own intellectual associations, and peculiar modes of thought.

12 ashamed to call us his brothers; as we read, (Psalm  
xxii. 22.) "I will declare thy name to *my brethren*;  
in the midst of the Church will I sing praise unto  
13 thee." And again, (Isaiah viii. 17, 18.) "I will  
wait upon the Lord that hideth his face from the  
house of Jacob, and I will look for him, I and the  
14 children whom the Lord hath given me." As then  
those children whom he came to redeem were of  
human flesh and blood, he himself condescended,  
for their sake, to assume the same nature with  
them, in order that by submitting to death he might  
destroy the power of the lord of death, namely, the  
15 devil; and might release from the apprehensions  
connected with the thoughts of death all who till  
that time had been subject to those slavish terrors.  
16 Let us observe, also, that he did not assume, as he  
might have done, the nature of *angels*, for the pur-  
pose of procuring our salvation, but that of *a human*  
17 *son of Abraham*. From whence we infer that he  
deemed it expedient to be made like unto us his  
brethren in all points, that he might become a mer-  
ciful and faithful High Priest to offer expiation for  
18 our sins to God; and accordingly, inasmuch as he  
has borne the same infirmities and temptations with  
ourselves, we are confident that he knows how to  
feel for and to assist us his brethren in these our  
present trials.

3 Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of this hea-  
venly calling, consider this mighty apostle and high  
2 priest of our faith, even Jesus, who has in his person  
been thus faithful to him who appointed him to  
that office, as it was also on a former occasion pro-  
nounced of Moses, (Numbers xii. 7.) "that *he* was  
3 found faithful in God's house." And yet the faith-

fulness of Christ as far exceeds that of Moses, as the builder <sup>1</sup> of a house exceeds in dignity the house which he builds: for as every house must have had <sup>4</sup> a builder, so God is the great builder of all things which exist. Again, the faithfulness of Moses in <sup>5</sup> the house of God consisted in his performing the part of a servant to prepare the way for the coming of a better covenant: but Christ came, not as a <sup>6</sup> servant *in*, but as the heir presiding *over*, the house: which house, we the members of his Church are, if we will hold fast unto the end that joyful confidence and hope which we derive from his promises.

Wherefore, as the Holy Ghost declares, (Psalm 7 xcv. 7.) “*To-day* if you will hear his voice, harden <sup>8</sup> not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderness, when your fathers <sup>9</sup> tempted me, proved me, and saw my works forty years. Wherefore I was grieved with that genera- <sup>10</sup> tion and said, They always err in their heart, they have not known my ways: wherefore I swore in <sup>11</sup> my wrath, They shall not enter into my rest.” Take <sup>12</sup> heed therefore, brethren, lest there should be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, leading you to turn away from the call of the living God: but exhort <sup>13</sup> one another daily, whilst it is called *to-day*, lest the heart of any of you should become finally hardened by the deceitfulness of sin: for we are members of <sup>14</sup> the body of Christ, if we perseveringly maintain our confidence in him unshaken from the beginning to the very end. Recollect then that the words of <sup>15</sup> Scripture are, “*To-day* if you will hear his voice,

<sup>1</sup> We have here another direct assertion of the divinity of our blessed Saviour.

harden not your hearts, as in the provocation." For  
16 some, we know, when they *had* heard his voice, provoked him: (not indeed that all did so who came  
17 out of Egypt under the guidance of Moses :) with which of them then was he grieved forty years? was it not with the disobedient, who afterwards  
18 perished in the wilderness? And to whom again did he swear that they should not enter into his rest? was it not to them who disbelieved his word?  
19 Why then were they unable to enter in? Assuredly because of their unbelief.

4 Let us then take warning by this example of our disobedient forefathers, and cherish a salutary fear lest any of ourselves also should, through want of faith and obedience, fail, as they did, of entering into that rest which he has been graciously pleased  
2 to promise to us. For we have indeed received our promise, as they received theirs; yet the promulgation of the Jewish covenant with all its promised blessings did not avail them, not being accompanied with faith on their part to make the promise of  
3 effect. Therefore, by a parity of reasoning, all we who will believe in his faithfulness, *and such only as will believe*, shall enter into his blessed rest. "I swore in my wrath, said he, that *they* shall not enter into my rest."

Now the question is, "What is that rest from which he has declared that the disobedient are excluded?" For God's works were finished, we are told, from the time of the completion of the creation  
4 of the world; and accordingly God declared (Gen. ii. 3.) of the seventh day, that "on that day he  
5 rested from his works." And yet we find him *subsequently* declaring of our forefathers, that "they

should not *in time to come* enter into his rest ;” from whence it is evident, that some, to whom the 6 covenant was preached, should enter in, and that others should be excluded in consequence of their disobedience. Then again *the time* in which this 7 declaration was made requires observation. It was made, we know, at so late a period as that of the prophet David. “*To-day*,” says the Psalmist, “if you will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.” And yet undoubtedly, if the entrance of our fore- 8 fathers into the promised land under the guidance of Joshua <sup>1</sup> had been the completion of the promise that they should enter into God’s rest, it were perfectly inconsistent that David, at a period so much subsequent in time to that of Joshua, should speak of that day in which he lived as *the* day for showing their obedience, and of God’s rest as a thing yet existing only *in expectation*. It is evident therefore 9 from the foregoing passages that the promised rest of the people of God *is yet to be accomplished* ; for 10 then only can a man be said to enter into his rest, when he ceases from his labours ; as it is said of God, that he rested after the creation of the universe was completed. What then is the necessary inference ? 11 that if the promised rest to God’s people is still a thing *in futurity*, we should continue to use our

<sup>1</sup> It is unfortunate that the composers of our authorized translation should have made use of the name “Jesus” in this passage as the appellation of the leader of the Jews into the promised land, instead of the more usual and familiar word “Joshua.” It is true that the names are identical in Greek, but to an unlearned English reader the consequence is, that the meaning of the apostle in this place is unintelligible, and liable to misconstruction.



utmost endeavour to attain to it, lest, after the example of our forefathers, we also forfeit the benefit of the divine promise through our disobedience. For the blessed covenant of the Gospel is endued with an active and searching influence; it is not a thing which can be lightly deemed of, but is sharper than a two-edged sword, penetrating into the very centre of the soul, and of its most secret thoughts; exploring the whole interior of man's nature, and detecting every feeling and apprehension of the heart. There is no portion of the creation which the eye of our great Master does not penetrate, and all we, like animals severed, opened, and disjointed, lie before him, with our inmost structure exposed to his inevitable scrutiny.

14 Having then the blessed Jesus himself, the very Son of God, now returned to his eternal glory, as our great High Priest to officiate for us, and to introduce us into the possession of these covenanted mercies, let us abide firmly by the profession of this  
15 faith: for our High Priest, all-powerful as he is, is not one who cannot sympathize with our infirmities; on the contrary, as I have already observed, he has submitted to undergo all the very trials which we ourselves are subject to, with this only difference, that in his passage through this world he escaped  
16 the taint of sin. With such a Mediator to make intercession for us, let us then approach boldly to the throne of grace, that we may receive mercy,  
5 and find grace in the time of need. Now the office of an high priest is, we know, that to which a person is appointed, whose duty it shall be to offer to God gifts and sacrificatory expiations for sin in  
2 the behalf of the congregation; and accordingly he

ought to be one possessed of those sympathies for others, and that knowledge of human nature, as to be able to understand and enter into the various natures of their infirmities and wants; inasmuch as 3 it appertains to his office to be the intercessor with God, not for his own sins only, but for those of all others with whose spiritual welfare he is entrusted. We know also that functions of this high character 4 cannot be vested in any individual by his own, or by any merely human authority, but that he must receive the efficiency of his appointment from God, as was the case with respect to the first Levitical high priest Aaron. And accordingly in like manner we 5 find that Christ did not appoint himself to the character of our spiritual High Priest, but received his authority for undertaking that office from Him who declared of him, "Thou art my Son: this day have I begotten thee." Which divine appointment of 6 him to that office we find again asserted in another Psalm, (Psalm cx. 4.) "The Lord sware, and will not repent: Thou art a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec." And accordingly we know 7 respecting him, that during the period of his abode upon earth, he offered up prayers and supplications <sup>1</sup> with strong crying and tears to him who was able to save him from death, and was rescued in consequence from its terrors: and, although bearing the 8 high rank of the Son of God himself, yet that he

<sup>1</sup> This is probably an allusion to our Saviour's agony in the garden on the eve of the crucifixion; and another of the many instances in which reference is made by St. Paul to the narrative contained in the Gospels as they have descended to us.

condescended for our sake to be obedient to the  
9 discipline of affliction, and thus, qualifying himself  
to appear before his Father as the High Priest to  
make intercession for the whole human race, has  
become the author and means of eternal salvation  
10 to all those who are obedient to him: being ac-  
knowledged by God himself to be “an High Priest  
according to the order of Melchisedec.”

11 With regard to the meaning of this expression,  
and why Christ is designated as a High Priest *after*  
*the order of Melchisedec*, much might be said to  
show the justice of the comparison, from what is  
related in Scripture of that last-mentioned person-  
age; but such mysterious speculations would be  
hard for you to understand. For you have shown  
yourselves slow in your apprehension of religious  
12 knowledge, and, although you might ere this have  
been qualified to instruct others, have yet to learn  
the very rudiments of the oracles of God, and re-  
quire even now rather the milk of infants than the  
13 strong food of adults. But it is not for children not  
yet weaned from the milk of infancy to comprehend  
14 the deeper mysteries of wisdom: by the more ad-  
vanced and mature only can the stronger meat be  
used with advantage, when their awakened percep-  
tions and judgment shall have enabled them by long  
exercise to distinguish between good and evil; be-  
6 tween what is wholesome, and what pernicious. Let  
me then lead you on from the mere elementary pro-  
positions on which our holy religion is founded, and  
which every beginner in Christianity is necessarily  
presumed to have apprehended, to the investigation  
of some of those deeper conclusions, to which it is  
now full time that you should begin to turn your

attention. It can be no longer necessary for me to demonstrate to you that the mere ritual expiations of the law of works can never lead to effectual righteousness, nor to require your assent afresh to the great primary truth of Christ's covenant, namely, that we can be saved by a reposing confidence in his redemption only. Nor need I dwell on the necessity 2 of baptism to you who have already submitted to receive it; nor on the commission given by our Redeemer to us his apostles, to communicate the gifts of the Holy Spirit by the imposition of our hands; nor on our confident assurance of the certainty of a future resurrection from the grave, and of a judgment to come. It shall therefore be my endeavour, with 3 God's blessing, to conduct you onwards from these elementary principles to some of the more remote truths of our holy religion, not stopping to examine you in those which I have just now enumerated, and which no one can for a moment hesitate in accepting without abjuring the very name of Christian, and falling back into the most hopeless and incurable hardness of unbelief. For no case of un- 4 belief can perhaps be imagined to be more desperate than that of a person, who, having once advanced thus far; who having already felt from his own internal consciousness the inefficacy of ritual works, and the consequent necessity of a divine atonement for sin; who having submitted from conscientious conviction to the purifying rite of baptism; who having prayed for and received the blessed gifts of the Holy Spirit; and who having looked forward in 5 hope to a glorious resurrection from the dead, and to the final retribution of the future judgment, shall 6 have afterwards hardened his heart afresh, and

thrown himself back into that spiritual obduracy and darkness from which he had emerged. In the mind of such a person repentance itself has no soil in which to take root; he has deliberately crucified again that Saviour in whom he had professed to believe, and contemptuously rejected that holiness  
7 of which he had tasted. It is the fertile and not the barren soil which God loves to cultivate, and in which to plant his seed; that which drinks in the rain, and clothes itself with a wholesome vegeta-  
8 tion; but the stony and parched soil, which brings forth only thorns and briars, is worse than unpro-  
9 fitable, and fit only to be burnt as stubble. Imagine not, my beloved friends, that I am now intending to describe your case: on the contrary, though I may blame the slowness of your progress, I am perfectly satisfied of the soundness of your faith in the fundamental principles of the doctrine of salva-  
10 tion now alluded to; nor is God so unmindful of those who are anxious to perform his will, as to disregard labours of Christian love such as yours, which have been, and are, so unremittingly displayed by you in your various acts of benevolence  
11 towards his disciples and servants. All therefore which I am desirous of is, to lead you on still further; to make your present zeal consistent to the end, and to render your future progress in religious knowledge conformable to the real soundness of its  
12 commencement; that you may not be slothful, but may be successful imitators of those who through faith and persevering obedience have finally inhe-  
13 rited the promises of God's covenant. Such was the case of our great forefather Abraham, to whom God, having given a promise, because he could

swear by no greater being, sware by himself, saying 14  
 "Surely in blessing I will bless thee, and in multi-  
 plying I will multiply thee;" (Genesis xxii. 17.)  
 and he, waiting patiently for the fulfilment of the 15  
 promise, finally obtained it. Men, we know, on 16  
 solemn occasions swear by something greater than  
 themselves, as the most impressive guarantee they  
 can give to assure others of their sincerity; and in 17  
 like manner, God on that occasion, in order to  
 show mankind the certainty of his immoveable pur-  
 pose to bring them to salvation, confirmed the pro-  
 mise made to Abraham by an oath; that, in these 18  
 two undoubted pledges which it was quite impossible  
 that God should violate, we might have a sure con-  
 solation in which to take refuge, and a hope of 19  
 ultimate redemption to which we might confidently  
 cling, as to the soul's firm and sure anchor fixed  
 within the mysterious veil of the temple, that is to  
 say, the unknown world, into which Jesus our fore- 20  
 runner has already entered, there for ever to officiate  
 for us as an High Priest after the order of Mel-  
 chisedec.

The following coincidences between what is re- 7  
 lated of Melchisedec in the book of Genesis and  
 the peculiar character of our Saviour's spiritual  
 priesthood will show, that the former personage has  
 been not inappositely declared by the Psalmist in the  
 passage just quoted to be a type and symbolical fore-  
 runner of the latter. This Melchisedec was, we are  
 told, the king of Salem, and priest of the most high  
 God, who met Abraham upon his return from the  
 slaughter of the kings, and blessed him; to whom 2  
 Abraham gave a tenth part of all the spoils. (Genesis  
 xiv. 18.) Now in the first place I would observe,

that the name "Melchisedec" signifies when interpreted "king of righteousness;" then again he was also "king of Salem," which latter word signifies "peace;" and consequently he bore another of our blessed Saviour's titles, namely, "the Prince of  
3 peace." In the book of Genesis also no mention whatever is made of his father, of his mother, of his genealogy, of the commencement of his life, nor of his death, and in these respects also he may therefore be considered as representing typically the divine nature, the self-existence, and the twofold  
4 eternity, past and future, of Christ our own immortal High Priest. In the next place we may observe what pre-eminent rank is attributed to this personage in the Old Testament, inasmuch as he is described as receiving a tenth part of the spoils from so illustrious a character as the patriarch  
5 Abraham himself. Now the descendants of Levi, to which tribe the Jewish priesthood is exclusively annexed, have the right of demanding tithes from the *whole* of the Jewish people, though they themselves being of the stock of Abraham cannot of course be supposed to be superior in dignity to that  
6 their renowned ancestor. But Melchisedec, a person of a totally distinct race, marked his own superior authority *by taking tithes of Abraham himself, and by pronouncing a blessing even upon that man to whom God himself had made the promise that he him-*  
7 *self should be a blessing.* Now it is self-evident, that he who is competent to pronounce a blessing upon another is the *superior* of the person whom he  
8 blesses. Again, according to the law of Moses the priests who receive the tithes are mortal men like those who pay them: but I have already shown

that Melchisedec as described in the book of Genesis typically represents a Being without beginning or end. We may also observe, that in a certain sense 9 Levi himself, whose descendants receive tithes from others, paid them to Melchisedec; for not being 10 yet in existence when Abraham paid tithes to Melchisedec, he may be said to have<sup>1</sup> himself paid them in the person of his ancestor Abraham. Let 11 me ask you also, “if perfect holiness can be attained under the Levitical priesthood, through which only Moses taught our forefathers to seek after it, why should David, when describing a priesthood of a superlatively pre-eminent character, have designated it as after the order of *Melchisedec* rather than as after the order of Aaron?” For we must recollect, 12 that in acknowledging a valid priesthood *out of the family of Levi*, to which latter family the law of Moses exclusively annexes it, David is expressly

<sup>1</sup> Should some parts of the apostle's reasoning with respect to this parallel drawn by him between the person of Melchisedec and that of our blessed Saviour appear to dwell upon seemingly trifling coincidences of facts, we should recollect that it was from that very circumstance admirably well adapted for the convincing of the parties to whom it was specially addressed. The commentaries of the Rabbinical writers upon their own sacred books were, as is well known, almost uniformly of this minute, and as to the eye of modern criticism it may appear, over ingenious character; not merely the general phraseology of any passage under review, but the collocation of the words, and even the number of syllables contained in them, being sometimes made the subject of elaborate discussion, and adduced by them in confirmation of the most fanciful conclusions.



pronouncing judgment *against* the validity of that  
13 law itself. And Melchisedec, of whom David thus  
speaks, had, we know, no common kindred or con-  
14 nexion with Levi or his tribe; in which respect  
also he resembles our Saviour, who derived his  
mortal lineage from the tribe of Judah, which by the  
Mosaic law is disqualified from aspiring to the  
15 priesthood. It is therefore abundantly evident, that  
by the expression of "a priest after the order of  
16 Melchisedec," not a human Levitical priest is de-  
17 signated, but one spiritual and eternal; God's ex-  
pression being, "Thou art a priest *for ever* after the  
18 order of Melchisedec." The former law is therefore  
evidently considered, according to the real sense of  
this passage, as superseded and cancelled on account  
19 of its insufficiency and incompleteness; and the  
introduction of another dispensation is prophetically  
anticipated by it as a means of effectually recon-  
20 ciling us to God. Observe also the solemnity with  
21 which the Psalmist introduces this assertion. The  
appointment of the priests under the Levitical law  
is accompanied with no ratification *by an oath*; but  
here we are told, "*the Lord sware* and will not  
repent: Thou art a priest for ever after the order of  
22 Melchisedec:" and the inference is obvious, that the  
priesthood of Christ is of a far superior order and  
dignity to any recognized by the Mosaic institutions.  
23 In the Levitical law again a succession of priests  
becomes necessary from the mortality of the persons  
24 holding the office; but Christ in consequence of  
25 his eternal nature is one priest for ever; and from  
that circumstance is able to assist without ceasing,  
and in the plenitude of the divine power, all his

suppliants who seek to approach God through his eternal intercession. And such an High Priest it is 26 that our fallen nature requires: one holy, perfect, pure, uncontaminated by sin, and in power pre-eminent above the very heavens: one who has no 27 occasion to offer up daily sacrifice for his own sins before he can presume to intercede for those of the people, for in offering himself up *once* he made a full and complete sacrifice for the sins of the whole world. The Levitical law gives us only priests 28 labouring under every mortal infirmity like ourselves; but the High Priest whom God appointed by an oath, with authority to supersede that provisional covenant, is *his only-begotten Son, all perfect and eternal*.

This then is the sum and substance of the fore- 8 going observations, that the High Priest of the Gospel-covenant is one who sits for ever on the right hand of the throne of the divine Majesty in the heavens, a minister for us in all spiritual holi- 2 ness, a priest of the true tabernacle, pitched not by human hands, but by those of God himself. But 3 the office of every high priest is to offer gifts and sacrifices, and if so, then assuredly our blessed Redeemer offers in our behalf such gifts and sacrifices as he knows to be the most effectual and acceptable. Then, in the next place, that his is an 4 *heavenly* and not an earthly priesthood is evident from the fact, that he was disqualified by the Mosaic institutions from holding the earthly office, from the circumstance of his not belonging to the family of Levi, to whose tribe that dignity is inseparably annexed. We may observe also that the Levitical 5

priesthood is confessedly a type and symbol<sup>1</sup> of the heavenly one, as is evident from the command given to Moses respecting the construction of the tabernacle, (Exod. xxv. 40.) “See that thou make all things *according to the pattern showed to thee* 6 *in the mount:*” which last mentioned heavenly office being exercised by our blessed Redeemer, we may confidently assert that he is the Mediator of a covenant as far surpassing in excellence the one established with our forefathers, as the spiritual promises contained in the Gospel exceed the temporal blessings, to which alone Moses has encouraged his 7 countrymen to aspire. For if the first covenant had been perfect, most certainly there would have 8 been no occasion for the second. But we find the Almighty himself declaring the insufficiency of the former; (Jeremiah xxxi. 31.) “Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a *new* covenant with the house of Israel, and with the 9 house of Judah; *not according to the covenant that I made with their forefathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt,* because they continued not in my covenant, and 10 I regarded them not, saith the Lord. For this is the covenant which I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws in their minds, and write them in their hearts, and I will be to them a God, and they shall

<sup>1</sup> Josephus expressly asserts, that the Levitical tabernacle with its furniture, and the dresses of the high priest, were designed by Moses as a representation of the universe. See his Antiquities of the Jews, lib. iii. cap. 7.

be to me a people. And they shall not teach every 11 man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest. For I will be mer- 12 ciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and iniquities will I remember no more." If then we 13 cannot but conclude from this passage that God intended the establishment of what he terms a *new* covenant, it is obvious that he also at the same time purposed the cancelling and abrogating of that which, as opposed to the former, we must denominate the *old*.

This former and less perfect covenant had how- 9 ever, by God's own appointment, its peculiar ordinances of divine worship, and its earthly holy of holies, a type, as I have observed, of the heavenly and invisible one. For the command given to 2 Moses was that he should construct in the first place what is called the holy outward tabernacle, in which were to be preserved the candlestick, and the tabernacle, and the shew bread; and within the 3 second vail the second tabernacle, which is called the holy of holies; in which were to be placed the 4 golden censer, and the ark of the covenant overlaid entirely with gold, containing the golden pot of manna, and Aaron's rod which budded, and the tables of the covenant: and over which were to be 5 spread the cherubim of glory overshadowing the mercy seat, of which awful emblems there is no occasion for me to speak largely at present. All 6 which being exactly arranged according to the divine appointment, the outer holy tabernacle is allotted to the ordinary priests for performing the daily

7 sacrifices ; but into the second, namely, the holy of  
 holies, the high priest *alone*<sup>1</sup> enters but one day  
 every year, not without shedding of blood, which he  
 offers for his own sins of ignorance and for those  
 8 of the people : the Holy Spirit signifying by this  
 emblematical ceremony, *that mankind were to be ex-*  
*cluded from God's inmost sanctuary, so long as the*  
 9 *first tabernacle should continue to exist.* All which  
 form of worship is entirely symbolical, and esta-  
 blished as a provisional intermediate arrangement ;  
 to enable men to offer gifts and sacrifices which  
 have no natural tendency to purify and expiate the  
 10 worshipper, consisting as they do in regulations  
 respecting meats and drinks, and ablutions, and  
 ceremonies which have reference to the body only,  
 but which meanwhile were sanctioned by divine  
 authority, until superseded by the establishment  
 11 of a covenant of spiritual holiness. But Christ  
 having in the fulness of time appeared upon earth

<sup>1</sup> As this Epistle contains a direct prophecy of the approaching destruction of Jerusalem, it is of course important, as a proof of the inspiration of the writer, that we should be satisfied that it was actually composed before the date of that event. It is unfortunate therefore that our established version has, through inadvertence, thrown a seeming doubt upon this fact, by using the *past* instead of the *present* tense in mentioning the solemn entry of the high priest into the holy of holies ; “but into the second *went* the high priest,” &c. Of course the necessary inference of the unlearned reader would be, that the temple of Jerusalem was no longer in existence at the time when this Epistle was written. Both the verbs in the original Greek are in the present tense : εἰσίσαισι οἱ ἱερεῖς οὐ χωρὶς αἵματος δ προσφέρει (ὁ ἀρχιερεύς).

as the High Priest of that righteousness which shall hereafter be perfected, and having passed onward through a greater and holier tabernacle than mere human hands could construct, (of course far exceeding that devoted to the purposes of the Levitical worship,) and not carrying with him the blood 12 of goats or of calves, but the precious sacrifice of his own blessed blood, has entered *once and for ever* into the heavenly holy of holies, having offered for us one great and sufficient expiation *which never will require repetition*. And if even the blood of 13 bulls and of goats, or the ashes of an heifer sprinkled over the unclean, were sanctified by God's appointment to serve for the purifying of the body, surely much more shall the sacred blood of Christ, who 14 through the instrumentality of the eternal Spirit presented himself a spotless sacrifice to God, purge your consciences from your former sins, and direct them, not to works of ritual holiness, but to the spiritual worship of the living God. And accord- 15 ingly he is the Mediator of a new covenant, in order that having submitted to death for the expiation of the offences which were committed under the old covenant, he might obtain the promise of their eternal inheritance for all who are summoned to take possession of it. Even in the case of human 16 covenants, the ratification we know to be usually accompanied by the death of a victim, and that 17 the obligation by which they bind the contracting parties is considered as commencing with the death of the animal sacrificed, and not earlier. In con- 18 formity with which usage the Mosaic covenant itself was confirmed by the shedding of blood, as we are informed in the book of Exodus, (Exodus xxiv.

19 6, 7, 8.) for when Moses had spoken every precept to all the people according to the law, "he took the blood of calves and of goats with water and scarlet wool and hyssop, and sprinkled both the  
20 book and all the people, saying, This is the blood of the covenant which God has dictated to you."  
21 He also sprinkled with blood both the tabernacle  
22 and all the vessels of the ministry. And according to the directions of the same law, all the purificatory ceremonies are performed with blood, and by the shedding of blood was the atonement made for all the people by the high priest. (Leviticus  
23 xvi. 24.) It was therefore expedient that the typical representations of heavenly things should be purified by those carnal emblems; but the true heavenly and spiritual things require a purification of a far  
24 superior and more excellent description. For it is not into the earthly holy of holies, the more perishable symbol of the heavenly one, that Christ our High Priest is entered, but *into the very sanctuary of heaven itself*, where he now officiates for us in  
25 the glorious presence of his eternal Father; not for the purpose of offering again the great and effectual sacrifice of himself, as the Jewish high priest is obliged year after year to renew his earthly ex-  
26 piatory sacrifice, (for in that case a similar necessity would have existed of a continuous repetition of that same blessed offering from the very foundation of the world<sup>1</sup> to the present time,) but, on the con-

<sup>1</sup> From this passage we necessarily infer that our Saviour's atonement for human sin had a *retrospective* as well as prospective operation, and consequently that the generations

trary, having once, and for ever, at his own good and appointed time, earned by the sacrifice of himself an expiation, both retrospective and prospective, of the sins of the whole world. And as it is allotted 27 to all men to die once, and once only, and afterwards to rise to judgment, so Christ, being once 28 offered up for the remission of the sins of many, shall a second time appear in glory, having for ever abolished sin, for the salvation of those who await his coming.

Considering then the law of Moses in its true 10 light, namely, as a typical representation of a future and better covenant, and not as a complete and final dispensation, we cannot but perceive, even in the continually recurring necessity of the same annual sacrifices, its total insufficiency to make its worshippers perfect or holy. For had those sacri- 2 fices been really efficacious, their constant repetition would have been evidently superfluous, as the consciences of the worshippers once purified by those means could never have had, under that supposition, any reviving responsibility of guilt. But the annual 3 renewal of the Levitical sacrifices is a direct admission, that those of the former years did *not* attain their object: and, in fact, we cannot but admit that 4 it is quite impossible that the blood of bulls or of goats should be able to take away sin. Accord- 5 ingly David describes the Messiah, upon his coming into the world, as exclaiming, "Sacrifice and offer-

which existed before his appearance upon earth will be benefited by it no less than those which shall have been born subsequent to that great event.



ing thou wouldest not, but my body thou hast  
6 made obedient to thy discipline; in burnt offerings  
7 and sin offerings thou hast no pleasure; then  
said I, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God, as  
the book of the Scriptures has foretold concerning  
8 me." (Psalm xl. 6.) Thus having in the former part  
of the passage asserted that "sacrifice, and offer-  
ing, and burnt offering, and sin offering, thou  
wouldest not, neither hadst pleasure therein, (which  
sacrifices are those prescribed by the Mosaic law,)  
9 he proceeds to say, "Lo, I come to do thy will, O  
God," thus substituting the obedience of our blessed  
Redeemer in the place of the cancelled obligations  
10 of ritual ordinances. By obedience to which holy  
will of God we are sanctified through the one single  
and sufficient sacrifice of the body of Jesus Christ.  
11 While therefore the Jewish priesthood continue day  
after day ministering at the altar, and offering again  
12 and again the same ineffectual sacrifice, our blessed  
Saviour, on the contrary, having made his one all-  
powerful expiation<sup>1</sup>, has sat down for ever at the  
13 right hand of God; henceforth waiting "till his  
14 enemies shall be made his footstool." And that  
one sacrifice of himself extends an inexhaustible  
and everlasting redemption to those who are sanc-  
tified by faith in him.

15 The inspired prophet Jeremiah also, in a passage

<sup>1</sup> It is quite inconceivable that, with this explicit declaration of the apostle before them respecting the complete sufficiency of the great atonement for sin *once* offered, the Romish Church should, in imitation of the Jewish ritual, have so pertinaciously chosen to consider the beautiful commemorative institution of the Eucharist in the light of an incessantly recurring expiatory sacrifice.

immediately subsequent to that already quoted from him, (Jeremiah xxx. 33.) speaks precisely to the same purport. "This is the covenant which I will 16 make with them after those days, saith the Lord : I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them ; and their sins and iniqui- 17 ties will I remember no more." But where sins are 18 entirely cancelled, any further expiatory sacrifice for sin is clearly superfluous.

Having then, my brethren, a just confidence that 19 we shall be permitted to enter within the heavenly tabernacle through the expiatory blood of Jesus, by 20 the new and living way which he has consecrated for us through the rending of the veil, that is, through the sacrifice of his flesh ; and having him for our 21 High Priest over the heavenly house of God ; let 22 us draw near with a true heart, in the full assurance of faith, having our hearts cleansed by his effectual expiation from a polluted conscience, and our bodies washed with the pure waters of baptism ; and let 23 us hold fast the profession of our hope in him without wavering, being assured that he is true and faithful to his promises ; and let us mutually en- 24 courage and excite one another to Christian affection, and the practice of good works : not omitting 25 from an undue fear of persecution the assembling of ourselves together, as the practice of some of our brethren is ; but exhorting and strengthening one another ; and this let us do the more earnestly, as you may see from the signs of the times, as foretold by our blessed Saviour, that the day of our Lord is approaching. For if, through fear or any appre- 26 hension of the authorities of this world, we apostatize from our faith, after having assented to the

blessed covenant of the Gospel, then, as I have already observed, there remains for us no longer  
27 any expiation for sin, but, in its place, an awful anticipation of God's impending judgment and vengeance, which as a blazing fire shall devour his  
28 impugners. Remember the severe punishment which is enjoined even against those who apostatize from the law of Moses, how it is required that such persons shall be put to death without mercy, if the fact be proved against them by the testimony of two  
29 or three witnesses. (Deuteronomy xvii. 6.) And shall not a far more terrible retribution await that man who has knowingly trodden under foot the Son of God, and who has blasphemed as an unholy thing that sacred blood of Christ's covenant in which he had professed to seek redemption, and  
30 has defied the Spirit of grace and mercy? We know what is the solemn language of Scripture respecting offences such as these. "Vengeance is mine: I will repay, saith the Lord." (Deuteronomy xxxii. 35.) And again, in the sentence which immediately follows, "The Lord shall judge  
31 his people." And assuredly a fearful thing it is  
32 to fall into the hands of the living God. Shrink not then, I beseech you, from the bold profession of your faith through fear of your present persecutors, but encourage yourselves by the recollection of the fortitude which you displayed at the time of your first conversion, when the animosity of your adversaries was in vain exerted to prevent your  
33 confession of the truth; when at one time you were made a public spectacle to bear insults and afflictions in your own persons; and at another so fearlessly stood forward to countenance and en-

courage others when suffering under the same injustice. For I cannot myself forget the kind and 34 generous manner with which you sympathized with me in my imprisonment, and submitted, not with patience only, but with cheerfulness, to the spoliation of your property, from the conviction that you had laid up for you in heaven far better and more lasting possessions. Cast not away, therefore, for 35 the sake of a little momentary suffering, this holy confidence which has so vast a reward in store: but remember that you are now called upon to 36 exhibit the patience and fortitude which become soldiers of Christ; that having performed God's will without murmuring, you may receive your final compensation at his hands. For be assured that 37 your probation will be short, and that even now God is preparing his coming to inflict vengeance upon your oppressors. Meanwhile remember the 38 words of the prophet, (Habakkuk ii. 4.) "*the just shall live by faith* ; but if any man draw back from it and fall away, my heart shall have no pleasure in him <sup>1</sup>." But we, my brethren, are not of those who 39 apostatize to their own destruction, but of those who remain firm in their faith to the saving of their souls.

Let me then now remind you what faith is <sup>2</sup>. It 11

<sup>1</sup> In this quotation from the prophet Habakkuk, the Apostle has given the meaning of the passage rather according to the version of the Septuagint, than as we find it in our authorized translation. He has, however, inverted the order of the clauses as they exist in the original text. Ἐὰν ὑποστείλῃται, οὐκ εὐδοκεῖ ἡ ψυχὴ μου ἐν αὐτῷ· ὁ δὲ δίκαιος ἐκ πίστεως μου ζήσεται.

<sup>2</sup> Nothing can be imagined more surprisingly beautiful

is not the visible and tangible fruition of things present, but that which gives a substantial value to things as yet in remote futurity; it is that faculty of the mind by which we lay hold of the objects of the invisible world, as though they were actually subject to the perceptions of the bodily  
2 senses. By it accordingly the great and good of former ages have manifested their firm reliance upon the divine will, and have thus become pleasing to  
3 God. Faith is in fact the basis of all sound religion. It is through faith that we assent to the great truth that God made the universe, and that material ob-  
4 jects could not have had a material first cause. By faith Abel offered to God a more satisfactory sacrifice than that of Cain, and was accordingly pronounced righteous, (the Almighty himself bearing witness of him to that effect by the acceptance of his gifts;) and even now by the example which he has afforded conveys a valuable lesson to mankind.  
5 By faith Enoch was removed from this world without experiencing death, disappearing from the earth because God had taken him to himself. For before that happy removal it is recorded of him that he  
6 pleased God: but without faith we know that it is impossible to please him, inasmuch as the belief in God's existence and in his eternal attributes of justice and mercy and wisdom is the first founda-  
7 tion of all devotion whatever. By faith Noah, when no visible signs as yet gave warning of the impending destruction of mankind, obeyed the divine commands, and made ready the ark for the

and edifying than the whole of the following eloquent discussion on the nature of religious faith.

preservation of his family ; and thus survived amid the wreck of an unbelieving world as an inheritor of that righteousness and salvation which comes by faith. By the same reliance upon the divine promises Abraham, being called to remove himself into a country which was to be the inheritance of his descendants, obeyed without hesitation, although an entire stranger to the country to which he was going. By faith he continued to dwell in the promised land, though without possessing one foot of it which he could call his own, dwelling merely in moveable tents, as after him did his sons Isaac and Jacob, the joint heirs with him of the promise ; confidently looking forward to a city built upon immoveable foundations, of which God himself should be the architect. By faith also his wife Sarah received power to bear a child when past the regular period of her life, trusting that He who made the promise would answer for its fulfilment. And the consequence was that from her aged husband has descended a race as the stars of heaven in multitude, and innumerable as the sand upon the sea shore. All these good men, let us recollect, passed through this life *with no better assurance than that of faith in the performance of God's promises, and without witnessing their completion ; but seeing them only afar off, and tranquilly reposing and rejoicing in the firmness of their conviction, though feeling themselves notwithstanding strangers and aliens upon the soil of this world.* For they confessed that they had no country which they could call their own, and that they looked for a more permanent home than that which they then occupied ; and yet, had an earthly home been their object, they might readily have found

16 one among their own relatives in Chaldea. But  
the fact was, that it was an *heavenly* home after  
which they aspired ; and God accordingly prepared  
them a city, and was not ashamed to acknowledge  
17 them as his own peculiar and beloved people. By  
faith Abraham remained unshaken in that most perplexing trial, the enjoined sacrifice of his only son,  
whom he readily consented to offer up, although  
that very son had been pronounced to be the heir  
18 to the divine promises ; God himself having declared of him that through Isaac he should become  
19 the father of many nations. For he felt assured  
that God was able to raise him up again even from  
the dead, and therefore he accordingly received him  
back from God's own hands even when he might  
20 have been considered as virtually lost. By faith in  
the peculiar promises made to his posterity, Isaac  
bestowed an appropriate blessing prospectively upon  
21 Jacob and upon Esau. By faith Jacob, when he was  
dying, prophesied respecting the two sons of Joseph,  
and worshipped God bending over the top of his  
22 staff. By faith Joseph foretold in his last moments  
the departure of the Israelites from Egypt, and  
gave directions for the conveyance of his own body  
23 from thence. By faith Moses was hidden during  
three months after his birth by his parents, because  
they saw that the child was beautiful, and were not  
24 afraid of disobeying the king's order. By faith  
Moses himself, when he grew up to manhood,  
refused to be considered any longer as the son of  
25 Pharaoh's daughter ; choosing rather to participate  
in the afflictions of God's people than to enjoy the  
26 immediate pleasures of a sinful life, and considering  
the reproaches cast upon his countrymen, because

they looked forward to Christ's coming, as more desirable than all the wealth of Egypt: for he knew that the reward of his belief, though *remote*, was *certain*. By faith he forsook Egypt without regarding Pharaoh's menaces, fixing his mind's eye upon the invisible God in whom he trusted. By faith he kept the first passover by sprinkling with blood the door posts of the Israelites according to the divine command, that the destroyer of the first-born of the Egyptians might not touch theirs. By faith the Israelites passed through the Red Sea as upon the dry land; which the Egyptians attempting to do were drowned. By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they had been encompassed during seven days. By faith Rahab the harlot escaped destruction at the capture of Jericho, because she had kindly received the spies sent by Joshua. But why should I produce more examples to the same purport? for the time would fail me were I to dwell upon those of Gideon, of Barak, of Samson, of Jephtha, of David, of Samuel, and of the other prophets; men who by the aid of faith subdued kingdoms, executed righteousness, obtained the promises, stopped the mouth of lions, passed unhurt through the fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, were rendered mighty in battle, overthrew the armies of their adversaries: restored dead children alive to their mothers; were cruelly beaten, yet accepted not deliverance, because they looked for a better life than the present; were insulted and scourged; chained and imprisoned; were stoned to death; were sawn asunder; were exposed to other fearful trials; were



slain by the sword; wandered about in sheepskins, and goat-skins; being destitute, afflicted, 38 maltreated; and living, like men of whom the world was not worthy, in deserts, in mountains, in dens 39 and holes of the earth. And yet let us recollect, that we may profit by the example, that these good men, whose faith in God's promises has made them so justly celebrated, *never lived to see those promises* 40 *realized*, the Almighty having reserved until our time the accomplishment of his better dispensation, that we might be partakers with them of its manifold blessings. Wherefore, encouraged by this multitude of glorious examples of holy fortitude and submission, let us, manfully shaking off every worldly incumbrance, and resisting all those manifold seductions which beset us in this present trial of our constancy, run with patience the race which 2 lies before us, looking for our encouragement to the leader and perfecter of our faith, the blessed Jesus himself, who for our sake exchanged the happiness of heaven for the agonies of the cross, regardless of the degradation, and who now sits for ever at the 3 right hand of the throne of God. Cherish I beseech you, my brethren, this divine example of our great Master, who voluntarily submitted to so much violent opposition from the waywardness of a sinful world, and derive fortitude and patience for yourselves in this your hour of trial from that affecting 4 recollection. Remember that you have not yet, as he did, resisted the temptations of the wicked even 5 unto blood: nor have you consoled yourselves, as you might have done, by the comfortable assurance of holy writ, which applies so well to your present afflictions. "My son," says Solomon, "despise not

thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him: for whom the Lord loveth 6 he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth." (Proverbs iii. 11, 12.) If then you 7 patiently submit to that wholesome discipline, comfort yourselves with the reflection that it is *a father who thus deals with you*, and that by this very chastisement he is now displaying his paternal affection; and that, were he to withhold this sea- 8 sonable and useful correction, it would mark in him rather the neglect of a stranger, than the well-judging kindness of a parent. All of us have felt 9 in our time the coercion of our earthly parents, and yet we did not love or revere them the less on that account: and shall we then refuse to submit patiently to the wise arrangements of the great Father of spirits, in whose hands are the gifts of life and immortality? *They* chastised us that we might be 10 induced to run our course well through this our present short and perishable existence; *his* corrections on the other hand are intended to prepare us to be partakers of his own imperishable holiness and perfection. It is true indeed that all chastise- 11 ment is hard to bear at the moment of its infliction; but then we should remember, that its final result is the tranquil enjoyment of spiritual improvement to such as have been duly trained in this salutary discipline.

Lift up then again, my brethren, your exhausted 12 and enfeebled hands, and rouse for a second and bolder effort your sinking knees, and remove every 13 unnecessary obstacle from the straight pathway of your duty, that you may run safely over it without strain or dislocation. Let your anxious desire be to 14

maintain peace and good will with all men, and to attain to that purity of heart, without which no man  
15 shall see the Lord. Be careful that none among you fall short in his own endeavours of the assisting grace of God which has been extended to him. Let no evil and bitter weeds of sinful appetites spring up among you to your mutual seduction.  
16 Let there be no fornicator in your society, no hardened and reckless person who, like Esau, will sell his birthright, his eternal inheritance, for a mere mess of pottage, for a little temporal ease and  
17 enjoyment. Remember the awful example of the person now mentioned. In a thoughtless moment he parted with his future hopes, and *afterwards*, when he would have claimed the blessing which he had so foolishly forfeited, he obtained it not. Repentance came too late, although he urged his de-  
18 mand with many tears. The summons to God's covenant which you have now received is one of a far more momentous character than that which was given to our forefathers under circumstances of such dreadful solemnity. You are not standing as they did under a tangible mountain, amid fire, and  
19 clouds, and darkness, and whirlwinds, and the blast of the trumpet, and that thrilling voice which they who heard intreated that it might not continue to  
20 address them: "Speak *thou*, said they unto Moses, and we will hear, but let not God speak with us lest we die." (Exodus xx. 19.) "If so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart," was the injunction on  
21 that solemn occasion, (Exodus xix. 13.) an occasion so fearful and impressive, that even Moses cried out, "I am exceedingly afraid, and tremble."

But you are placed on the verge of the heavenly 22  
mount Sion itself, the residence of the ever-living  
God, the celestial Jerusalem, whose inhabitants are  
myriads of angels, amid the thronged assemblage 23  
of God's first-born saints, whose names are written  
in the book of life; amid the souls of just men  
made perfect, and before the very throne of our  
Almighty Judge; and in the presence of the blessed 24  
Jesus, the Mediator of the new covenant; a cove-  
nant which has been confirmed by the sprinkling of  
far more precious blood than that which God ac-  
cepted in the sacrifice of Abel. Beware then, that 25  
you turn not away with indifference from Him who  
now addresses you, and calls you to his obedience;  
for if our forefathers escaped not the divine venge-  
ance when they turned a deaf ear to the words of  
a perishable law delivered to them by a mortal man <sup>1</sup>,  
Moses, much more assuredly shall we perish if we  
despise him who speaks to us from heaven itself.  
That almighty voice then shook the earth only; 26  
but now it shall fulfil the words of the prophet,  
(Hagga iii. 6.) "Yet once more, I shake not the  
earth only, *but also the very heavens.*" Mark in 27  
this passage the words "once more:" do they  
not imply that all temporary and provisional things  
will be then finally and for ever shaken off, and  
that that only will be allowed to remain which God  
has determined should be *eternally immovable*?

<sup>1</sup> The exact identity of the sentiments here expressed with those put into the mouth of St. Paul in Acts xiii. 38 et seq. affords another strong confirmatory testimony to that almost uniform tradition of the Christian Church, which attributes the Epistle to the Hebrews to that great apostle.

28 Wherefore let us, looking to a kingdom which shall survive that shock which will displace the very heavens themselves, cherish with awe and holy fear that divine grace, by the aid of which alone we can render acceptable service to our  
29 Almighty Father: for he is, in his wrath, as a consuming fire.

13 Cherish brotherly affection one to another.

2 Forget not to exercise hospitality; we are informed, you know, by Scripture, that in so doing some persons have entertained even angels un-  
awares.

3 Remember those who suffer imprisonment, for you have suffered in like manner. Remember all in affliction, for you, as men, are liable to the same.

4 Marriage and the unpolluted bed is honourable in all conditions of life, but God will bring to judgment both the fornicator and the adulterer.

5 Avoid covetousness, and be content with your present lot; for God himself has promised, "I will  
6 never leave nor forsake thee:" so that we may confidently exclaim with the Psalmist, "The Lord is my helper, I will not fear what man can do unto me." (Psalm cxviii. 6.)

7 Forget not your spiritual instructors, who first announced to you the doctrine of salvation; and, considering the tenor of their lives, imitate them in the firmness of your faith.

8 Remember that God cannot alter. Christ was the same yesterday which he is to-day, and will  
9 continue so for ever. Be not then carried about by various and strange doctrines, destructive of the simplicity of evangelical truth. Let your hope and

holy conviction derive their sustenance from your acceptance of the divine grace and mercy; not from carnal meats and sacrifices, from which those who resort to them can derive no profit. Ours is a 10 sacrifice from which they who serve in the Levitical tabernacle have no privilege to feed, as is evident from what is prescribed in the ritual with respect to the sin-offering, in which Christ's sacrifice is typically prefigured. For the bodies of those beasts, 11 whose blood is brought into the sanctuary by the high priest as a sin-offering, are required to be burnt without the camp. (Leviticus xvi. 27.) In 12 conformity with which prophetic type, Jesus also, that he might purify the people from their sins by his own blood, submitted to be sacrificed without the gate of Jerusalem. Let us therefore after his 13 example go forth with him without the camp, bearing our share in the contumely to which he submitted; for it is not here that we have our lasting 14 abode, but we seek for one with him in the abode of God himself. By him then, as by our eternal 15 High Priest, let us offer our continual sacrifice of praise and thanksgiving to God, the offering of grateful lips, acknowledging him as our Redeemer.

Omit not however deeds of social kindness and 16 of beneficence to those who are in want, for these are sacrifices really acceptable to God.

Obeys and show deference to your spiritual rulers, 17 for they keep watch for the welfare of your souls, for which they must one day be accountable: enable them then to render that account with joy and satisfaction, and not with regret that their labours have been ineffectual both to them and to yourselves.

- 18 Pray for me; for I can confidently say, that I  
have conscientiously and honestly striven to do my  
19 duty well and faithfully in all things: pray for me,  
and at this moment the more earnestly, that I  
may by God's blessing be again enabled to visit  
you.
- 20 May the God of peace, he who raised again from  
the dead the great Shepherd of that flock which he  
purchased by the precious blood of the new covenant,  
21 namely, the Lord Jesus Christ, may he make you  
perfect in every good work, that you may be enabled  
to do his will; producing in you all good and holy  
inclinations, such as may be accepted by him for the  
sake of Jesus Christ, to whom be glory for ever and  
ever. Amen.
- 22 My brethren, be not offended, I intreat you, with  
the few words of exhortation which I have thought  
23 it fit to write to you. I have to inform you that  
our brother Timothy is set at liberty, whom, should  
he come to me sufficiently early, I will bring with  
me when I visit you.
- 24 Salute all your spiritual pastors from me, and all  
our believing brethren. All our brethren of Italy  
salute you. Grace be with you all. Amen.
- 

THE question respecting the authenticity of the Epistle to the Hebrews, as is well known, has given rise to occasional discussion both in ancient and modern times. One opinion very early received into the Church was, that it contains the sentiments of St. Paul as dictated generally by that apostle to Clement of Rome, or to his companion Luke, and that it was moulded by one of those latter

persons into its present form ; a surmise not without some degree of plausibility, when we recollect that it was the constant habit of St. Paul to avail himself of the aid of an amanuensis for the transcription of his Epistles, and that the pressure of business in consequence of his imprisonment may possibly on this one occasion have induced him to avail himself in a still more extended degree of the co-operation of his friends. Be this as it may, the very large extracts made from this work by Clement of Rome in his first Epistle to the Corinthians, afford an unanswerable proof of the consideration in which it was held at that very early period, as being of canonical authority ; an opinion which can be accounted for only by the supposition that the contemporaries or immediate successors of St. Paul really considered it as the production of that great apostle. Another theory supposes it to have been written by the apostle in Hebrew, the mother-tongue of the persons to whom it is addressed, and to have been subsequently translated into Greek by St. Luke. It has however been well observed, that the internal evidence of the style is incompatible with this idea, many of those untranslatable peculiarities of expression occurring in it, which usually designate original composition, and which seldom can be adequately transfused into another language. Still, whatever may be the uncertainty attaching to this question, that the sentiments and doctrines contained in this Epistle are, at all events, those of Paul himself, no one, who will take the trouble of comparing it with the other writings undoubtedly his, can, I conceive, for a moment hesitate to admit. It bears, in fact, every mark of that peculiar cast of mind which so strongly characterizes all the works of that great apostle : the same energetic tone of remonstrance ; the same amiable spirit of pure practical morality ; the same conciliation of manner ; the same earnest and pathetic appeals to the gentler affections of those whom he addresses ; and, in the abstruser parts of his argument, the same tendency to dwell upon minute coincidences and fine-drawn deductions, which pervades his other controversial discussions. The great and primary truth which it is the object of this Epistle to enforce



is, "the divinity of our blessed Saviour;" with the obvious inference deducible from that doctrine, namely, "the complete sufficiency of his one great expiation for sin:" a truth which is indeed substantially implied throughout the whole of his other writings, and without which preliminary admission the greater part of the arguments contained in them would be, to say the least, inconclusive, if not absolutely unintelligible. But in the Epistle to the Hebrews, those awful topics are not merely incidentally alluded to, but are made the prominent and almost exclusive subjects of discussion, with a direct plainness of assertion which would appear to leave no possibility of evasion to their impugners short of a total denial of the authenticity of the work itself. And to this feeling accordingly it is that we cannot but refer the unwillingness displayed by some denominations of Christians to receive it into the sacred canon, and which has led them to avail themselves of some few and trifling peculiarities in the style of the composition, for the purpose of throwing doubts upon its authenticity, far beyond what those peculiarities would justify. The result of the controversy however has been precisely that which every Trinitarian Christian would wish: a vast and unanswerable weight of evidence, both external and internal, in confirmation of the authority of this Epistle, having been thus accumulated by the labours of learned men, which every reader of moderate industry may avail himself of by turning to the many writers who have discussed this question, and to whom I refer him for the details of an argument much too long to be adequately considered in this place.

---

AND now, whilst taking leave of this most truly important portion of the Scriptures of the New Testament, the Epistles of St. Paul, let me make a few passing observations upon the irresistible confirmation which these several writings afford of the truth and divine origin of our holy religion. That they are all of them really the

productions of the person whose name they bear will not, I conceive, be controverted at this moment by the most hardened controversialist in the school of scepticism. Were the uniform admission of antiquity to this effect to be considered of little weight, the single argument of Paley, so triumphantly established in his *Horæ Paulinæ*, is quite sufficient to confirm that fact by a degree of evidence which no one whose ears are not wilfully closed to conviction could possibly deem unsatisfactory. It is therefore no gratuitous assumption of the matter in discussion to consider this point as at length conceded by all parties. But if so, then I would ask any fair and impartial person, who knows enough of human nature to enable him to judge of the principles and motives upon which rational beings act, diligently to peruse the Epistles of St. Paul, and then to put to himself the question, “whether they could by any possibility have been composed by a person *not sincerely and solemnly convinced of the truth of the doctrines contained in them?*” I ask not at this moment whether he himself would acknowledge the principles there asserted to be true, but only whether the *writer* actually believed them to be such. Surely on this point (unless we are willing to discard all internal evidence whatever as fallacious) the manner in which these compositions are written,—the whole tenor of the language and sentiments contained in them,—the author’s earnest solicitude to convince,—the deep solemnity of feeling,—the subdued and temperate tone of reasoning maintained by him even on those mysterious and transcendental topics which would appear to justify, if not to call for, almost any possible degree of intellectual excitement, and which an impostor or a fanatic would not have failed to affect, even had it not been really felt,—the almost uniformly unassuming gentleness of admonition in the place of an ambitious and magisterial tone of authority,—the unobtrusive humility of the writer’s mind,—his constant anxiety rather to improve the understanding than to excite the passions,—his total abstinence from all those cheap and spurious aids of argument which less judicious theological disputants have in all ages been too prone to seek

in the physical weaknesses of their hearers, by expatiating upon those revolting topics connected with our mortality, from which man's nature instinctively shrinks, and upon those spiritual terrors which all the descendants of Adam must occasionally feel,—his uniform predisposition to dwell upon the idea of God's mercies rather than upon that of his more formidable attributes,—and last, though not least, the exquisite purity of the morality which he inculcates,—surely, I repeat, all these striking characteristics of the writings of this remarkable person denote one, who, whatever may be thought of the real truth of his doctrines, was himself, at all events, most immoveably convinced of their certainty and importance. If again we look to probable personal motives, to those views of temporal interest, I mean, which may naturally be suspected to operate with propagators of false or perverted systems of religion, still we are inevitably driven to the same conclusion, that, unless we really believe St. Paul to have been seriously impressed with the conviction of the truth of his own tenets, it is perfectly impossible to account for the self-denying, and, in a worldly point of view, the *humiliating* line of conduct which he so undeviatingly pursued. “If,” as has been justly observed by Lord Lyttelton, “it appears that St. Paul had nothing to gain by taking this part, let us consider, on the other hand, what he gave up, and what he had reason to fear. He gave up a fortune which he was then in a fair way of advancing. He gave up that reputation which he had acquired by the labours and studies of his whole life, and by a behaviour which had been *blameless, touching the righteousness which is in the law*. He gave up his friends, his relations, and family, from whom he estranged and banished himself for life. He gave up that *religion which he had profited in above many of his equals in his own nation*, and those *traditions of his fathers which he had been more exceedingly zealous of*. How hard this sacrifice was to a man of his warm temper, and above all men to a Jew, is worth consideration. That nation is known to have been more tenacious of their religious opinions than any other upon the face of the earth.

The strictest and proudest sect among them was that of the Pharisees, under whose discipline St. Paul was bred. The departing therefore so suddenly from their favourite tenets, renouncing their pride, and from their disciple becoming their adversary, was a most difficult effort for one to make so nursed up in the esteem of them, and whose early prejudices were so strongly confirmed by all the power of habit, all the authority of example, and all the allurements of honour and interest. These were the sacrifices he had to make in becoming a Christian: let us now see what inconveniences he had to fear:—the implacable vengeance of those he deserted; that sort of contempt which is hardest to bear, the contempt of those whose good opinion he had most eagerly sought; and all those other complicated evils which he describes in his second Epistle to the Corinthians, evils, the least of which were enough to have frightened any impostor, even from the most hopeful and profitable cheat. But where the advantage proposed bears no proportion to the danger incurred, or the mischiefs endured, he must be absolutely out of his senses who will either engage in an imposture, or, being engaged, persevere.”

If however we cannot but admit the *sincerity* of St. Paul's own conviction of the truth of those doctrines, to the propagation of which he thus sacrificed every human tie; and together with that sincerity if we admit also the *competency of his understanding to pronounce upon a simple matter of fact*, (and of that competency who that has ever considered the acuteness of reasoning displayed throughout his writings could venture to express a doubt?)—then of necessity we must assent also to the conclusion, that those doctrines were *undeniably true*.

Had Paul been really an impostor, he must inevitably have known himself to be such. The signal miracle to which he so frequently asserts that he owed his conversion; his thorough knowledge of the peculiar nature of the Christian covenant, which he solemnly declares that he derived from no human communication, but directly and immediately from preternatural revelation; and the miraculous powers to which, in various parts of his writings,

he repeatedly lays claim, are all perfectly irreconcilable with his own sincere belief in an actual and easily-detected delusion. Admit however his own statement respecting his own personal experience to be correct, and it is impossible for us to stop at this single admission ; grant this one point, and the whole system of the Christian dispensation, link by link, will follow in due and necessary succession : not merely that lax and latitudinarian system which culls and chooses from holy writ such principles as may best accord with its own favourite theories, but the whole of the Trinitarian doctrine, with those great and vital dogmas which give to Christianity its peculiar and exclusive character ; namely, those of the fallen state of man's nature ; the inadequacy of human works for justification ; the necessity of Christ's atonement, and of the strengthening and co-operating aid of the Holy Spirit. It has been occasionally asked, whether St. Paul has added the knowledge of any really new truths to those previously communicated by our blessed Saviour, or asserted in the book of the Acts ; and, if not, what then is the value of his writings ? Even if we decline answering the first of these questions in the affirmative, still it by no means follows that they are not of momentous consequence as means of Christian instruction. In them, at all events, the great principles casually glanced at in those former writings have been more fully developed, and their salutary tendency demonstrated, not in argument only, but in their best practical comment, the recorded feelings and principles of Christ's own favoured emissary. What in the former was the dark anticipation of then ill-understood prophecy, is in the latter the retrospective certainty of established history ; what is there precept only, or the theoretical exposition of truth, is here active holiness exhibited in every practical point of view best fitted to operate as an example, and to instruct us how Christians ought to act under every possible contingency of circumstances. To those persons therefore who consult the sacred writings for that vital object of real edification which they were intended to promote, the writings of this great apostle will ever be a favourite and important study. They

will accordingly read them, not for the too seductive purpose of entangling themselves in the inextricable metaphysics of theology, of elucidating some cherished theory, or of supporting some partial view of the Christian dispensation ; but for the sake of the fervency of feeling, the purity of principle, the consolatory firmness of faith, the clearness of apprehension, the conception at once comprehensive and definite of the scheme of our salvation, which they afford ; and because they will practically find it impossible to commune with the inspired teacher and champion of these stupendous doctrines without rising up from the study with every moral feeling refined, purified, and soothed, and their apprehension of the perfection of the divine attributes, and their reposing confidence in God's mercies, enlivened and strengthened.

THE  
EPISTLE GENERAL  
OF  
JAMES.

---

THE date usually assigned to the following Epistle is the year of our Lord 61. St. James is supposed to have suffered martyrdom from the violence of the Jewish authorities at Jerusalem in the subsequent year.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

1 JAMES, the servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes dispersed among the Gentiles, greeting.

The object of the General Epistle of St. James appears to have been less that of inculcating the primary truths of revelation, than that of enforcing the necessity of those fruits of true faith and holiness, the various Christian virtues, the existence of which in the human character presupposes the assent of the understanding to the proofs of our religion, and the affection of the heart for its precepts, as points already secured. It differs therefore from the general tenor of the writings of St. Paul in the single circumstance, that it contemplates the great requisites of the Christian character from an opposite point of view, arriving at the evidence of the existence of faith in each individual through the medium of works, instead of adopting the equally just and perfectly consistent inference of the latter apostle, who, having established the necessity of faith, arrives

through those premises at the no less certain conclusion, that where sincere belief exists, there good works will inevitably follow. The sentiments of those two inspired teachers, therefore, are in all respects the same; whilst their respective modes of conveying instruction differ, as might naturally be expected, according to the peculiar circumstances of each individual, and as the spiritual condition of the Churches over which they severally presided suggested the expediency of this or that mode of enforcing the practice of the various duties which constitute the full perfection of a Christian life.

Consider it, my brethren, a subject of self-con-2 gratulation when you fall into various trials, as you 3 cannot but know that these proofs of the soundness of your faith are productive of patient submission: let that submission therefore be implicit in all re-4 spects, that you may be complete in whatever is requisite for the perfection of the Christian character. And if any of you feels that he wants a 5 due apprehension of any part of spiritual knowledge, let him pray for the illumination of his understanding to God, who gives liberally and without grudging, and let him be assured that it shall be granted to him. Let him however ask in faith with 6 simplicity and sincerity; not tossed about like a troubled sea by unsteady and contradictory wishes, for prayers so desultorily conceived cannot hope to 7 receive their accomplishment from God. But it 8 is only where the heart has taken one single and decided bias, that such consistency of character can be reasonably expected.

Let every brother, who has been placed by Pro-9 vidence in a humble station in this life, exult in the sublimity of his future expectations.

Let every one who is rich in this world's trea-10 sures exult that he has the grace to appreciate them



according to their true value ; for they shall fade  
11 away as the flower of the field. The sun rises with  
its burning heat and parches the herbs, and their  
flowers droop, and their beauty withers : so shall  
the rich man wither in the midst of his worldly  
pursuits.

12 Happy is that man who passes unshaken through  
the midst of trial ; for having been proved a faith-  
ful servant, he shall receive the crown of life  
which the Lord has promised to those who love  
him.

13 Let no man, when he has fallen into temptation,  
say, "I am tempted by God;" for God, who is all  
perfect, is neither himself subject to temptation, nor  
14 tempts others. But man is then tempted when he  
is agitated and enticed by his own unruly appetites ;  
5 for appetite conceives and brings forth sin ; and sin  
16 growing strong and vigorous brings forth death. Be  
not deceived then, my brethren, by such delusive  
17 arguments. Man, on the other hand, creates not  
his own blessings, but he receives *them* immediately  
from God. Every good gift, every perfect accom-  
plishment, descends to us from heaven, from the  
Father of all lights, whose attributes are eternal and  
18 unchangeable<sup>1</sup>. By his own good pleasure, and for  
no merit of our own, he begot us as his sons by the  
holy word of truth, that we might be to him as it  
were the first fruits of his creatures.

19 Wherefore, my beloved brethren, let every man  
of you be swift to hear instruction ; considerate and  
cautious in his attempts to communicate it to

<sup>1</sup> This sentiment of St. James accords exactly with the doctrine so uniformly inculcated by St. Paul.

others; and slow to anger where his exhortations fail of immediate effect: for it is not violence or 20 impetuosity that can bring any one to that holiness of heart which is acceptable to God. Wherefore, 21 divesting yourselves in the first place of every moral blemish and pollution, apply to your own consciences with becoming meekness the ingrafted word of revelation, which is able to save your souls; making 22 yourselves doers of that word, and not hearers only; and be not contented with the mere externals of holiness. For a man who is a hearer of the word 23 only, and not a doer also, is like a person who contemplates for a single moment the features of his own countenance in a looking-glass, and, having gazed at himself, goes away without farther trou- 24 bling himself to recollect what his appearance was: but he who bends earnestly to look into the perfect 25 law of Christian liberty, and continues so to do, in order that he may properly and suitably arrange himself by it, that man not being a mere careless hearer, but zealous in performance, shall be blessed in the final success of his efforts.

If any man among you presumes that he is reli- 26 gious, but cannot restrain his tongue from calumniating or depreciating others, that man, be assured, deceives his own heart, and his religion is valueless. Pure and undefiled religion, such as is really accept- 27 able to God and the Father, is this: to take care of the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep ourselves unspotted by the contaminations of the world.

My brethren, let no unworthy distinctions between 2 man and man from worldly and selfish motives bring discredit upon your profession of belief in our blessed

2 Lord Jesus Christ. I ask you, should a person  
come into your assembly with a gold ring and in  
splendid apparel, and at the same time should a  
3 poor man enter with ragged clothing, and you were  
to say to the former, "Seat yourself here in a place  
of honour," and to the latter, "Stand there, or if you  
4 wish to sit, place yourself at my feet," would you  
not be making uncharitable and culpable distinctions  
unbecoming of the meek religion you profess?

5 Let me ask you, my beloved brethren, was it not  
the poor in worldly wealth whom God called to be  
made rich in faith, and pronounced to be heirs of  
that blessed kingdom which he has promised to all  
6 those who love him? and shall we despise those  
same persons because of their poverty? Who, let  
me ask again, are your oppressors at this very  
moment? Who are they who bring you daily  
before the tribunals of the magistrate? Are they  
7 not the rich? Is it not they who revile continually  
in your hearing the holy name of Christ, from whom  
8 we Christians take our designation? Observe then  
the great and golden maxim of our Saviour, "Thou  
shalt love thy neighbour as thyself," and you will  
9 do well: but remember always to make that rule  
*universal*, and not by undue distinctions and par-  
tialities to observe it in your conduct to one class,  
whilst you violate it in your treatment of another.  
By acting thus inconsistently, you turn that sacred  
maxim against yourselves, and stand self-convicted  
of a wilful breach of that very law which you pro-  
10 fess to regard. Recollect that he who pledges him-  
self to obey the whole of a law, and yet knowingly  
violates one of its injunctions, is a violator and  
11 despiser of the whole code. For the same divine

authority which commanded, "Thou shalt not commit adultery," commanded also, "Thou shalt do no murder:" if then you abstain from adultery but commit murder, you become no less guilty of disobedience to that supreme Legislator from whom the whole law derives its sanction. Speak then and 12 act on all occasions as becomes persons who are to be judged by that comprehensive spiritual law, the great object of which is to correct and amend the whole character, and which is not to be explained away by minute and subtile distinctions; and be 13 assured that there shall be judgment without mercy to him who shows no mercy; whilst on the other hand a man's merciful deeds shall soften to himself the rigour of that final judgment to which he might be otherwise liable from the divine retribution.

Remember ever that it is the *whole character* 14 which the Gospel undertakes to correct and amend, and that it is not therefore by a partial cultivation of one Christian virtue to the exclusion of another that we can be said to discharge the duty to which we are pledged. What for instance, my brethren, can be the value of faith itself, unless that faith ripen into works of effectual charity? Can faith alone save us? Suppose the case of a brother or 15 a sister left in nakedness and destitution, and one 16 of you should say to them, "Go in peace, warm yourselves, and refresh yourselves with abundant food," and yet at the same time afford them none of the means by which those wants might be satisfied; would the mere mention of food and clothing stand them in stead of the actual reality? Equally 17 dead and valueless with such unsubstantial charity,

18 be assured, is faith without works; on which barren quality should any person be disposed to build his exclusive hopes of salvation, I would argue with him thus: "You have faith, and I have works; show me then, if you can, your boasted faith without works, and I will engage to prove by my works  
19 the validity of my faith." You will say that you believe in one God: be it so: the acknowledgment is a good one, inasmuch as it is the basis of all religion; but recollect that it is not the *whole* of religion, and that the very devils who tremble with  
20 dread of his vengeance believe the same. Vain reasoner, search the Scriptures themselves, and there you will find that faith without works is dead  
21 and unprofitable. Was not our father Abraham justified by works when he offered his son Isaac  
22 upon the altar? See you not that his faith even on that occasion operated only conjointly with his  
23 works, and was made perfect by them? and accordingly the Scripture was fulfilled which says, "Abraham believed in God, and it was counted to him for righteousness:" and he was therefore called  
24 "the friend of God." Is it not evident then, even from the case of this remarkable display of faith, that man is justified by works co-operating with  
25 faith, and not by faith exclusively? In like manner, was not Rahab<sup>1</sup> the harlot justified by her works,

<sup>1</sup> It is observable that Rahab, who is described in Hebrews xi. 31, as having escaped from destruction through the means of her *faith*, is here asserted to have been justified by her *works*. The contradiction is, however, rather apparent than real. The author of this Epistle is not here combating the great primary position of "justification by faith," so uniformly maintained by St. Paul, but solely

when she hospitably received Joshua's spies, and assisted them in their escape by another road? Precisely then as the body without the soul is 26 inanimate matter, so faith without works is dead also.

Be not too many of you eager to correct and 3 admonish your neighbours, recollecting that whilst you minutely censure others, you are in reality pronouncing judgment against yourselves. For all 2 of us have our own peculiar failings, of which an intemperate and censorious tongue is not the least, which, when a man has learned effectually to restrain, he need not fear that he should want energy to bring his other unruly members under a proper discipline. Do not we put bits into the mouths of 3

guarding against its abuse. It is natural to suppose that that same fatal misapprehension, which has so frequently prevailed in modern times respecting faith as an *exclusive* condition of salvation, had already begun to manifest itself even at that early period, and that advantage had been taken of the words of the latter apostle by the licentious and profligate, to justify their perseverance in an evil course of life. St. James therefore refutes the fallacy by showing that true and complete faith necessarily involves the idea of good works as an inseparable accompaniment. Abraham not only believed in God's promise, but he also *actually prepared to sacrifice Isaac* : Rahab not only believed the judgments which were about to overtake her countrymen, but she also *received and sheltered the spies of Joshua as her guests*. It seems probable that St. Paul had this passage of St. James in his mind when he wrote the words (Hebrews xi. 31.) above alluded to, as it would otherwise be difficult to perceive in the character of Rahab a reason why her example should be thus expressly cited in two separate portions of the New Testament.

horses, in order to render them obedient, and do we not by these means direct the motions of the whole  
4 animal? Are not ships, large and unwieldy as they are, and tossed about by the violence of the winds, still directed from port to port at the will of the  
5 steersman by means of a small rudder? As the bit in the horse's mouth, and as the rudder in a vessel, so is the tongue of man in the human body: a small member indeed, but still powerful in its operations. Observe how vast a pile of combustibles a small  
6 spark of fire may consume. Not less destructive in its effects is an unruly tongue, which is a little world of mischief within itself: like it, it seizes hold of the whole body, burning up with evil passions every thing with which it comes in contact, and the fire with which it is kindled is from hell  
7 itself. Human ingenuity has succeeded in taming every species of savage beasts, birds, reptiles,  
8 and marine animals; but it is unable to tame the unruly licence of the venomous and slanderous tongue. Adapted for the best of purposes, we profane the blessed gift of speech to the worst.  
9 With it we offer up praises and prayers to our Almighty Father, and with it we spit forth imprecations against our fellow creatures made after his own  
10 divine image. And thus one and the same mouth is made an instrument indifferently for blessing or cursing. My brethren, ought such things to be?  
11 Does any fountain send forth from the same source  
12 both sweet waters and bitter? Can the fig tree bear olives, or a vine figs? Does salt and fresh water  
13 gush together from the same spring head? Is there then any wise and pre-eminently gifted person among you? let him show his superiority, as a Christian

should do, by the purity of his life and actions, and by that suavity of disposition which is the surest mark of true wisdom. But if disgraceful jealousies 14 and recriminations will prevail in your societies, let not, at least, such unchristian feelings assume to themselves the garb of superior excellence, nor give the lie to the humble and unassuming religion of the blessed Jesus. Believe me, that fancied supe- 15 riority of intellect which displays itself in depreciating the conduct of others is not the wisdom which descends from above, but is, on the contrary, earthly, carnal, and fiendlike. For where bitter 16 and angry feelings prevail, there violence and every species of mischief will be found in company. But 17 the wisdom which is from heaven is in the first place pure, then peaceable, then disposed to deference to the feelings and opinions of others, then conciliatory, then merciful and beneficent, and in all points unbiassed by unjust partialities, and free from guile and deceit: and he best sows in the 18 hearts of others the fruits of the religion of meekness, who is himself meek and compassionate in all his own habits.

How is it then that strifes and warfare prevail so 4 fearfully among you? Is it not that you have not yet learned the great Christian duty to coerce your rebellious and sensual appetites? You cherish all 2 the cravings and desires of an ungoverned imagination, and repine that you are not satisfied: you shed blood in the hope of attaining your object, yet fail of success: you struggle and contend for it one with another, but meet only with disappointment. And why are you disappointed? because you ask not for what you want in prayer to the Almighty.



- 3 You *do* ask and are again disappointed; and why?  
because you ask with unchristian feelings, and for  
4 unchristian and sensual objects. O adulterers and  
adulteresses! have you yet to learn that the friend-  
ship of this world is enmity with God, and that he  
who leagues himself with the pleasures of this  
wicked life is waging war against the Almighty?  
5 Think you that the Scriptures describe man's na-  
ture inaccurately when they say of it, "that the  
imagination of his heart is evil from his youth?"  
6 God's grace however is ever ready to assist those  
who seek humbly and earnestly for amendment, as  
we are assured by another passage of the inspired  
writings; "God resisteth the proud, and sheweth  
mercy, and giveth his grace to the humble." (Pro-  
7 verbs iii. 34.) Submit yourselves then to God's  
blessed protection, and under his support resist the  
8 devil, and he will flee from you. Draw near to God,  
and he will draw near to you. Cleanse your hands,  
ye sinners, and learn purity and simplicity of heart,  
9 ye double minded. Humble yourselves, repent,  
and weep for your transgressions: let your laugh  
of mirth be turned into sorrow, your revelry into  
10 sadness; prostrate yourselves in holy contrition be-  
fore your God, and he will raise you up.
- 11 Speak not censoriously, my brethren, one of an-  
other. He who takes upon himself to censure and  
judge his brother is putting himself in the place of  
the law, and in so doing is slandering that law of  
which he usurps the office, making himself rather  
an arbiter of what the law is, than a zealous per-  
12 former of the duties it enjoins. Remember that  
there is one Being, and only one, who gives law to  
us all; in whose hands are the issues of life and

death; how then shall we dare, by judging our fellow creatures, to assume to ourselves his high prerogative?

Poor frail mortal beings! who are you that venture to say, "to-day or to-morrow we will go to such or such a city, and there we will reside a twelvemonth, and there we will traffick and make great profit," knowing not what to-morrow shall be? for what is your tenure of that life on which you calculate? a smoke which unrolls itself and passes away. In all such anticipations then of an uncertain futurity, let your language be always, "If such be God's will, and our lives be spared, then will we do this or that." Be assured that such unhesitating confidence in his own calculations upon a mere contingent possibility is unseemly in so frail a creature as man; and remember also, that he who knows what is unseemly, yet perseveres in practising it, is guilty of positive sin.

And you, ye rich, howl and lament for the miseries that are coming upon you. Your wealth has fallen to decay, and your splendid garments are become moth-eaten: your gold and your silver have become tarnished, and their rust shall be a testimony against you, and shall eat into your flesh like fire. You have hoarded up treasures which shall rise in judgment against you in the latter days. Mark; the wages of your labourers, who have reaped your fields for you, the hard-earned wages which you have fraudulently<sup>1</sup> withheld from them

<sup>1</sup> What an awful contrast does this description of the pampered and selfish Jews, upon whose heads the storm of divine vengeance was preparing to burst, afford to that beautiful and humane injunction contained in their own law, and to which the apostle in this passage obviously

call for judgment against you: the cry of those who have gathered in your harvest has reached  
5 even to the ears of the Lord of hosts. You have lived luxuriously and lasciviously upon the earth: you have fattened yourselves as in a day of surfeit  
6 and feasting: you have sate in judgment upon, and put to death, the innocent man who made no resistance.

7 Be you meanwhile, on the other hand, my brethren, patient, and await the coming of your Lord. Imitate the husbandman, who confidently calculates upon gathering in their due season the mature fruits of the earth, but notwithstanding observes without impatience the slow but gradual development of their growth, the tardy succession of the seasons,  
8 and the coming on of the periodical rains. Be you in like manner patient in your present endurance, and confident in your anticipation of the day of God's judgments, <sup>1</sup>for that day is approaching.  
9 Let no fretful murmuring, meanwhile, escape your lips in your communings with one another, that you may be found blameless when your Judge arrives; and believe me, he is at this moment at the very  
10 door. Imitate the glorious examples of fortitude

alludes! "Thou shalt not oppress an hired servant that is poor and needy, whether he be of thy brethren, or of thy strangers that are in thy land within thy gates. *At his day thou shalt give him his hire; neither shall the sun go down upon it; for he is poor, and setteth his heart upon it: lest he cry unto the Lord, and it be sin unto thee.*" Deuteronomy xxiv. 14, 15.

<sup>1</sup> It is evident from this passage, as from several which occur in St. Paul's writings, that the approaching destruction of Jerusalem foretold by our Saviour was at this time confidently anticipated by the apostles.

and forbearance afforded by the prophets of old, who spoke to our forefathers in the name of the Lord. Blessed, we know, are all they who suffer patiently <sup>11</sup> for righteousness' sake. You have heard of the patience of Job, and of the final compensation which he received from God, who is a God full of mercy and compassion.

More particularly let the tranquil tenor of your <sup>12</sup> minds be displayed in the even tone of your daily conversation. Abstain from all oaths and violent protestations. Swear not, either by the heaven, or the earth, or any other object whatever: but let your affirmation be simply "yes," and your negation "no," that you may be in all respects blameless. (Matt. v. 34—37.)

Is any one of you in affliction? let him pray. Is <sup>13</sup> any one cheerful? let him sing hymns of praise to God. Is any one sick? let him send for the elders <sup>14</sup>

<sup>1</sup> On this passage, and on that contained in Mark vi. 13, the Church of Rome, as is well known, has founded its doctrine of the sacrament of extreme unction. Father Paul indeed, in his history of the Council of Trent, relates that the Divines in that assembly asserted that the sacrament in question derived its actual sanction from this injunction of St. James only, and that it was rather *hinted at* than really established on the occasion recorded by St. Mark in the place here referred to; inasmuch as, according to the theory of that Church, the apostles did not acquire the character of priests (an indispensable requisite for the due administration of that rite) until the time of our blessed Saviour's celebration of the last supper. This latter argument is an accurate specimen of that grave trifling, and those subtle distinctions, which in that portion of the Christian world have so fatally prevailed, often to the total exclusion of the far more weighty matters of the divine law, judgment, mercy, and faith.

of the Church, and let them pray over him, and  
15 anoint him with oil in the name of the Lord : and  
the prayer which is offered for him in the fulness  
of faith shall save the sick man, and the Lord shall  
restore him to health : and, should he have com-  
16 mitted any sins, they shall be forgiven him. Con-  
fess your sins therefore to one another, and pray for  
one another, that God may restore you to health :  
for be assured that the fervent prayer of a good  
17 man has great influence with him. Remember the  
instance of Elijah. He was a mere mortal man as  
we are, and yet, when he prayed that there should  
be no rain, God heard him ; so that no rain fell  
upon the earth during three years and six months ;  
18 and when he afterwards prayed for rain, it descended  
immediately from the heavens, and the earth brought  
forth her fruit. (1 Kings xviii. 42.)  
19 Finally, my brethren, remember that if any one  
of you should have wandered from the true faith,  
20 and any person convert and reclaim him, he who  
thus shall be instrumental in that good work of  
bringing back a sinner from the error of his ways,  
shall save a soul from perdition, and bring down  
God's mercy and forgiveness upon himself.

---

It is a remarkable illustration of the strong tendency which prevails in many sincere and well-disposed believers, to imagine difficulties in Scripture where they can scarcely be said to exist, that so much discussion has been thought necessary to reconcile the supposed discrepancies in the doctrines taught by St. Paul, and by St. James, the writer of the preceding Epistle. The only real difference to be found between them consists, as I have already observed

in a former note, in the single fact that they have looked upon the constituent moral perfections of a regenerate and converted character from contrary positions, the former dwelling more particularly upon that primary foundation of faith which will eventually grow up into an holy life ; and the latter urging the cultivation of that true eventual holiness which can exist only where the foundation of faith has already been substantially laid. That the virtues inculcated in the preceding Epistle by St. James are not merely those of morality, as taught in the works of the pagan ethical writers, will be evident to all persons who will peruse it with attention. Almost all the duties there recommended are such as necessarily pre-suppose a belief of the Christian scheme, and fervent sentiments of love and devotion towards its Author. " Let the poor," says he, " bear their present afflictions patiently and cheerfully, *because they know that they have an eternal reward stored up for them hereafter.*" Again, " Make not undue distinctions between man and man in your religious assemblies, preferring the rich, and depreciating the poor ; *for you know who has said, Blessed are ye poor : and that it was to the poor and humble that the Gospel was first addressed.*" The same observation will apply to the admonitions requiring the cultivation of mutual charity, candour, consistency of good conduct, and fortitude under persecution for conscience sake ; all which virtues, however analogous with the kindred habits portrayed by the heathen moralists, could exist in the degree, and under the peculiar modification, here recommended, in such breasts *only* as the sanctifying influence of God's Holy Spirit had previously visited and purified.

THE  
FIRST GENERAL EPISTLE  
OF  
PETER.

---

ST. PETER dates the following Epistle from Babylon, under which name the early Christian Fathers considered him as designating Rome ; an opinion which has been generally adopted by later writers. He is supposed to have written it in the last-mentioned city, about the year of our Lord 64, a short time previous to his martyrdom under Nero.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

1 PETER, an apostle of Jesus Christ, to the brethren dispersed through Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, the 2 province of Asia, and Bithynia, chosen, according to the foreknowledge of God, by the sanctifying influence of the Spirit, to the obedience of Christ, and redemption by the sprinkling of his blood,— grace and peace be multiplied to you.

The Jewish converts to Christianity were, at the time in which this Epistle was written, undergoing severe persecutions from the rulers of the various synagogues, not in Jerusalem only, but through the

whole of Lesser Asia. St. Peter accordingly addressed this exhortation to them for the purpose of strengthening their resolution, and confirming in them those feelings of faith, holiness, and patient submission to the divine will, which the urgent pressure of affliction might be suspected to have in some degree impaired. The arguments on which he chiefly insists are,

First, the unworldly character of the blessings promised to believers by the Christian covenant; and consequently that those who look for the joys of eternity must make their account to submit to afflictions in the present life.

Secondly, the necessity that all those, who professed to seek after spiritual righteousness, and who had consequently abjured many of the usages of their pagan neighbours, should vindicate the purity of their holy profession by the harmlessness of their lives, and the consistent integrity of their conduct, both public and private.

Thirdly, that as Christ himself suffered persecution from the waywardness of mankind, in like manner must all his followers expect to meet with the same from the malignity of human passions.

Fourthly, that the divine vengeance long since foretold by our blessed Saviour is now on the point of overtaking their persecutors; and that if even God's own servants experience their share of affliction, much more in the day of retribution will his wrath fall heavy upon those who have uniformly oppressed his Church, and made war against his faith.

Blessed be our God and the Father of our Lord 3  
Jesus Christ, who, through his great mercy, has  
begotten us again to a living hope, through the  
resurrection of Jesus Christ from the dead, of an 4  
incorruptible, undefiled, and imperishable inherit-  
ance, treasured up for us in the heavens, preserving 5  
us by his almighty power, that through our faith in  
him we may attain to that salvation which shall be  
revealed at the last day. In which blessed hope 6  
you look forward with joy to your final allotment,  
bearing in the mean time the short but necessary  
afflictions of this life, in order that your faith, being 7  
proved by a variety of trials, may come out far  
more precious than perishable gold from the re-  
finer's furnace, and being found pure may receive



the stamp of approbation, honour, and glory, at the  
8 second coming of our Lord, whom you love at this  
moment, though as yet you have had no personal  
knowledge of him; and confiding in whom, though  
your eyes have never yet beheld him, you even now  
9 exult in unspeakable and heavenly joy, receiving as  
the recompense of your faith the salvation of your  
10 souls. Of that promised salvation the prophets of  
old, who foresaw from afar the blessings which God  
had in store for our age, made diligent and anxious  
11 inquiry, darkly conjecturing what blessed period of  
time the Holy Spirit by which they were inspired  
seemed to designate, and what could be that mys-  
terious arrangement which was to receive its ac-  
complishment first in the sufferings, and afterwards  
12 in the glorification, of the promised Messiah. They  
knew indeed, that not for their day, but for ours,  
was reserved the full manifestation of that glorious  
dispensation, which has in these latter times been  
announced to you by the preaching of the heavenly  
inspired teachers whom you have heard; a dispen-  
sation so solemnly mysterious, that the very angels  
themselves have wished to search into it, and yet  
13 have not been able. Be it yours then to mark your  
sense of its ineffable value, by the earnestness and  
alacrity of your endeavours to live worthily of that  
your high vocation in sobriety and patience, perse-  
veringly looking forward in joyful expectation to the  
salvation which is prepared for you at the destined  
time of our gracious Redeemer's second coming.  
14 Live therefore, I beseech you, as obedient children,  
not according to the sinful appetites of your days  
15 of ignorance, but according to the pure and holy  
nature of Him who would have you and all his crea-

tures imitate his own purity and holiness; accord- 16  
ing to his own injunction delivered to our fore-  
fathers by the mouth of Moses: "Be ye holy, for  
I am holy." (Leviticus xix. 2.) And as you know 17  
that your Almighty Father is no partial acceptor of  
persons, but rewards each man in all respects ac-  
cording to his works<sup>1</sup>, be mindful to pass the time  
of your allotted sojournment upon earth with the  
anxious caution of persons who know that they  
must one day give a strict account of their minutest  
actions; recollecting that God did not redeem you 18  
from the sinfulness and sensuality which disgraced  
the ages of old by any common or perishable ran-  
som, but by the precious sacrifice of that pure 19  
and spotless Lamb, the Lord Jesus Christ; an ex-20  
piation which the divine mercy and foresight had  
prepared for the salvation of mankind before<sup>2</sup> the  
foundations of the earth were laid, but which has  
remained unrevealed until these latter ages, when it 21  
has pleased God to call you to rest your faith upon  
him who has raised your blessed Redeemer from the  
dead, and advanced him to eternal glory, as a pledge  
that your confidence and hope in his protection  
shall also find in due time their final compensation  
in the joys of heaven. As then being all of you 22  
common sharers in these inestimable benefits, and,  
through the aid of the divine Spirit, all alike be-  
lievers in this holy faith, let that community of  
hope display itself, during your earthly intercourse

<sup>1</sup> How is this assertion of St. Peter reconcileable with the doctrine of irrespective election, and of God's arbitrary decrees?

<sup>2</sup> See Ephesians iii. 9.

one with another, in the exercise of sincere brotherly love, proceeding from a pure and fervent  
23 heart; having your every feeling and inclination regenerated and springing up anew, not from the vitiated seed of your corrupt carnal nature, but from the divine seed of the word of the everliving  
24 and eternal God. For our carnal nature has been well described by the inspired language of the prophet, when he assures us, (Isaiah xl. 6.) that "all flesh is as grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass: the grass withereth, and the flower  
25 thereof falleth away; but," he also adds, "the word of the Lord endureth for ever." And that word, my brethren, is the word of the blessed Gospel which is preached to you.

2 Lay aside then, I entreat you, all malice, and deceit, and insincerity, and jealousies, and evil  
2 speaking in your mutual dealings, and become as new-born infants, eager to imbibe the pure milk of heavenly wisdom, that by it you may grow up to  
3 the full vigour of regenerated holiness. You have, I trust, already tasted enough of that precious milk  
4 to know how gracious the Lord is: come then to Him as to a living corner stone of God's temple, although, as was foretold by the prophet David, it has been despised and rejected by the carnal build-  
5 ers: and be yourselves also, as living stones, built into that sacred edifice: and present yourselves to him as a holy priesthood, offering up to him the sacrifice of spiritual duty and service, rendered acceptable to him by the merits of Jesus Christ.  
6 "Behold," says the prophet Isaiah, (Isaiah xxviii. 16.) "behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, a tried stone, a sure foundation; and he that believ-

eth in him shall not be confounded." To you therefore, my brethren, who believe in him, he shall be, according to the words of this prophecy, an honour and a defence: but to the builders who rejected him he shall be, not only, as was foretold of him, the chief corner stone, but a stone also to make them stumble, and a rock against which their feet shall strike; for they stumble through their unbelief against the holy word of God, as it was declared of them that they would do. But you are a chosen race, a kingly priesthood, a holy nation, a purchased people, called to declare the praises of Him who has summoned you from darkness into the fulness of his marvellous light; being, as the prophet of old declared of you, (Hosea ii. 23.) "formerly not a people, but now the people of God;" formerly unvisited by the divine mercy, but now having received mercy.

My beloved brethren, recollect then that you are mere strangers and pilgrims upon the earth, and, as such, abstain from all those earthly propensities and appetites which would impede you in your spiritual journey to your heavenly home. Let the unbelieving Gentiles have nothing to observe in all your social dealings but what is good and praiseworthy: that, having calumniated you as the enemies<sup>1</sup> of mankind, they may by the contemplation of your good works when your conduct shall be rigorously inquired into by the temporal authorities, be

<sup>1</sup> "Christianos per flagitia invisos" is the term by which the historian Tacitus designates the early Christians, as he also stigmatizes our holy religion by the appellation of "exitiabilis superstitio."

obliged to confess that God's name is honoured by  
13 the exemplary lives of his servants. Submit yourselves therefore to every established jurisdiction for the Lord's sake, whether to the king as the fountain  
14 of authority, or to deputies as bearing his commission for the coercion of the ill-disposed, and the  
15 encouragement of the good. For this is God's will, that by the purity of your lives and conversation you disarm the malice of those who would  
16 misrepresent your actions; availing yourselves of that freedom from undue restraint which is the privilege of the Gospel, only that you may show yourselves the more willing servants to your divine Master, and the more inoffensive members of human  
17 society. Show then due respect to all conditions of men whatever: love the brethren of the Christian community: fear God: honour the king.  
18 Servants, be faithful and obedient to your masters, and not to the good and kind only, but also to  
19 those who use you harshly; for it is an acceptable sacrifice to God when any person bears with human  
20 injustice for conscience sake without repining. For where is the merit, if you bear patiently the punishment of your actual faults? but if, having done well, you suffer unjust punishment, and bear it without murmuring, such obedience is truly acceptable  
21 with God. For such is in fact the profession of every Christian in this world, who must make his account to follow in the footsteps of his blessed Master, who submitted for our sake to the extremity of human persecution and injustice, making his exemplary patience a pattern for our imitation:  
22 who committed no sin, neither was any deceit found  
23 in his mouth: who, when he was reviled, reviled

not again; nor returned threats for ill usage; but submitted his cause to the one great, just, and righteous Judge: and who condescended to bear in 24 his own person our sins upon the cross, that we, dying as to our sinful nature, might live through him in regenerated holiness: "by whose stripes you are healed." (Isaiah liii. 5.) For you were, as 25 the prophet has described us all, "as sheep going astray," but are now turned back to the Shepherd and Guardian of your souls.

In like meekness of disposition with that already 3 recommended, be you, wives, obedient to your husbands, in the hope that, if any of them shall be disobedient to the law of Christ, they may be allured back to a better state of mind by the calm and persevering Christian demeanour of their wives, whilst 2 they have before their eyes the daily example of your pure and respectful submission. And let not 3 your ornaments be the external decoration of braided hair, or of golden trinkets, or expensive dresses, but the internal attractions of the good feelings of 4 the heart, those unfading charms of a mild and gentle disposition which are precious in the eyes of God. Such were the ornaments of which the holy 5 women in former ages availed themselves, who united a pious confidence in the Almighty with a meek submission to the authority of their husbands; such, for instance, was Sarah, who is described as 6 speaking of Abraham under the appellation of her "Lord;" whose daughters you are, so long as you live holily, without suffering the respect, which it becomes a wife to pay to her husband, to degenerate into the terror-stricken service of a slave.

Do you, husbands, in like manner, living with 7

your wives as their affectionate advisers and protectors, show them that attentive kindness which it becomes the stronger party to pay to the weaker; remembering that they have a joint interest with yourselves in the promised blessings of the Gospel covenant, and offering up your daily prayers conjointly with them.

8 Finally, be all of you, whatever may be your  
respective conditions, kind and sympathizing one  
with another, consorting together as affectionate  
9 brethren, compassionate, obliging: not returning  
evil for evil, or bitterness for bitterness, but on the  
contrary repaying unkindness with blessings, know-  
ing that such is every Christian's profession, and  
that, in proportion as he forgives, he has reasonable  
10 grounds for hoping that he shall be forgiven. Re-  
member accordingly the words of the inspired  
Psalmist, (Psalm xxxiv. 12.) "What man is he that  
desireth life, and loveth many days, that he may  
see good? Keep thy tongue from evil, and thy lips  
11 from speaking guile; depart from evil, and do  
12 good; seek peace, and pursue it. For the eyes of  
the Lord are upon the righteous, and his ears are  
open unto their cry; but the face of the Lord is  
13 against them that do evil." Pretend not then to  
urge against that universal meekness which I now  
recommend, that he who knows not how to resist  
oppression, is in fact inviting the oppressor to do  
him injury. To such objectors I answer in the first  
place by asking, "who will injure unnecessarily a  
person whose actions are uniformly harmless and  
14 benevolent?" and secondly, admitting that un-  
deserved persecutions *do* befall you, I reply in the  
words of our blessed Saviour, "if you suffer perse-

cution for righteousness' sake, happy are you:" to which let me also subjoin the encouraging exhortation of the prophet, (Isaiah viii. 12.) "Fear not their fear, nor be afraid; but sanctify the Lord 15 of hosts, and let him be your fear." Be, at the same time, always ready to give an undismayed, but still a meek and unassuming, answer, to your revilers in vindication of the sublime hopes of immortality with which you are sustained. Mean- 16 while keep your consciences pure from all blame and self-reproach whatever, in order that your very accusers, who now calumniate you as pernicious members of society, may eventually be put to the blush by the irrefragable evidence of your holy and Christian life. And surely it is far more desirable, 17 if by God's will you must at all events suffer the persecutions of mankind, that it should be for your good rather than for your evil deeds; for even so 18 did Christ our common master suffer in his one great sacrifice for the sins of the world; the righteous for the wicked, in order that he might reconcile us to God; enduring death for us in his carnal nature, but being raised again by the energetic operation of the Holy Spirit; by which Spirit we 19 are assured he once preached to the antediluvian world, those rebellious people, (whose souls are now reserved awaiting the final judgment,) who pro- 20 voked by their obstinacy the patient forbearance of God in the days of Noah, while the ark was preparing, in which a few, that is eight, souls were saved by water. And so in like manner shall the 21 water of baptism save us, (I mean not the mere external washing of our carnal bodies, but the internal baptism and purification of the heart and



conscience in the sight of God, through the resurrection of Jesus Christ, who is now ascended into heaven, and placed for ever upon God's right hand, far above all angels and the celestial hierarchy.

4 As then Christ in his carnal nature died for us, so in like manner do you, following his holy example, 2 and recollecting that he, whose body is dead, is dead to sin, be careful to pass the remainder of your course upon earth as persons whose carnal desires are dead, and who live only to obey the 3 holy will of God. For sufficient for all of us have been the aberrations of our past life, when, ignorant of the holy discipline of the Gospel, we lived according to the impure habits of the Gentiles, walking in lasciviousness, unbridled appetites, intemperance, revilings, banquetings, and abominable idolatries, for your present abstinence from which abominations you now incur the calumnies 4 and malice of a sensual world. But be assured that for all this God will bring them, both the dead and 6 the living, to one common judgment. Meanwhile be you, even in this life, dead: dead to the world, and to its corruptions, for to such are the promises of the Gospel announced; that, whilst the carnal-minded shall reproach you for your deathlike indifference to the pleasures of this life, you may be in reality enjoying the fulness of spiritual life in your communings with God.

7 The consummation of all things is approaching: be you therefore careful and vigilant in the daily 8 exercise of prayer. But above all things maintain mutual affection and charity amongst one another, 9 for charity shall cover a multitude of sins. Be 10 hospitable to one another without grudging, each of

you, in proportion as he has received mercies from God, being ready to impart of his abundance to others, as becomes a faithful steward in the management of the trust reposed in him by Providence. If, for example, he has received the blessing of 11 spiritual wisdom, let him instruct others, as one to whom God has communicated the knowledge of his mysteries: if he administers to the temporal necessities of the brethren, let him do it according to the extent of the means which have been bestowed upon him: that in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

My brethren, be not, I beseech you, dismayed at 12 the fiery trial of persecution which God has permitted to befall you for the manifestation of your faith, as though it were something strange and unlooked for: but rather exult that you are allowed 13 to follow your Redeemer through the course of afflictions, as being a sure pledge that you will also be permitted to share in the glory of his second coming. If you are reproached for the name of 14 Christ, happy are you: for the Spirit of glory and of God rests upon you; a Spirit which is insulted by the cruelty of your persecutors, but which is glorified and hallowed by your patient endurance of affliction for its sake. He only ought to look with 15 terror to the inflictions of temporal authority who, like the murderer, the thief, the felon, and the mischief-maker, has provoked them by his crimes: but 16 let no man tremble or be ashamed on account of any sufferings which his profession of Christianity may draw down upon him, but rather let him praise God that he has thought him worthy of so glorious a trial.

17 For be assured that the day of God's visitation of mankind is at hand: the first who shall undergo that searching examination shall be ourselves, the members of his own household; and if such is to be our trial for the manifestation of our faith, what are we to suppose will be that which, after ourselves, is to overtake the unbelievers, who have  
18 resisted and persecuted the Gospel? If such will be the rigour of God's approaching vengeance, that scarcely the just man will be allowed to escape from it, what shall be the lot at that fearful time  
19 of the profane and the sinful? Wherefore let those whom God may call to the endurance of afflictions be careful in the first place to secure a good conscience, and then let them confidently commit their souls to the keeping of their Creator, who they may be assured will not allow them eventually to perish.

5 And now let me admonish and exhort you, the several elders of your various communities, (for I am a brother elder with you, one who have been an eye-witness of our blessed Saviour's sufferings, and who look to be a partaker with you in the  
2 glory which shall be hereafter revealed,) let me intreat you to feed as faithful pastors the flocks which have been respectively committed to your care, superintending their spiritual welfare, not as though it were an irksome task, but a pleasing duty: not as a means of temporal profit, but as a  
3 work of gratuitous kindness: not making a wanton display of the authority with which you have been entrusted for the edification of those over whom you preside, but making your own lives a pattern  
4 for the imitation of those whom you govern. And,

if such be your conduct, be assured that, when the great Shepherd of us all shall appear in judgment, you shall receive as your reward an imperishable crown of glory.

And likewise you, the common brethren of the various Churches, be it your care to pay, not merely the appointed reverence to your several elders which God requires at your hands, but also the mutual obligations of deference and regard one for the other; wearing the Christian badge of humility: for God, we know, delights to debase the proud, and to pour his blessings upon the humble-minded. Humble yourselves then under the powerful hand of God, that in his good time he may raise you up; reposing upon him the whole burden of your cares and anxieties, for be assured that his Providence will effectually provide for you. Be sober, meanwhile, and vigilant; for your adversary the devil, like a lion roaring after his prey, walks about seeking whom he may devour: whom resist to your utmost; reposing your trust in the protection of the Almighty; and recollecting that your present trials are not peculiar to yourselves, but are the common lot of the whole company of Christian believers throughout the world. And may the God of all mercies who has summoned us to his eternal glory in Christ Jesus, when you shall have undergone your share of allotted trial, make you perfect, confirm, strengthen, and finally establish you. To Him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

I have sent you these few lines by Silvanus, whom I have every reason to confide in as a faithful brother, for the purpose of encouraging you, and

bearing my testimony to the certain truth of that merciful revelation on which you rest your hopes.  
13 The Church of Babylon set apart, together with yourselves, for the confession of the true faith,  
14 salutes you: as also does my son Marcus. Salute one another with the kiss of Christian affection. Peace be with all of you who are in the faith of Christ Jesus. Amen.

---

THERE is a remarkable coincidence between the arguments and sentiments contained in the preceding Epistle, and those expressed in various passages of the writings of St. Paul. That St. Peter had diligently studied the works of the former apostle is evident from his allusion to them by name in his second Epistle; and, that he did not in that passage intend to imply any disapprobation of the doctrines contained in them, is manifest from the similarity of thought which pervades the composition before us, and which marks an exact conformity in feeling and opinions with the great teacher of the Gentiles on all the main points of the Christian revelation. This coincidence is worthy of observation, because we know from St. Paul's own statement, that considerable difference of sentiment had at one period existed between him and St. Peter on the subject of the observance of some of the cancelled rites of the Levitical law; and that he had on one occasion severely rebuked him for the inconsistency and unsteadiness of his conduct with reference to that question. That with predispositions originally dissimilar, they should thus have eventually so perfectly united in adopting the same views of the scheme of our redemption, and inculcating precisely the same practical habits, can be attributed only to the irresistible force of truth, which will assuredly in due time assimilate every candid and well-principled mind to itself, be the primary bias what it may. Not the

slightest Judaizing taint is to be traced in this beautiful Epistle; and yet we know its author to have been one who received the first revelation of the extension of God's mercies to the Gentiles, and of the final abolition of the Levitical scheme, with astonishment, if not with distrust; and who, even after his better judgment was convinced, still instinctively lingered in the atmosphere of prejudices which he found it difficult not to cherish, whilst he knew them to be such. But the sincerity of character, which displays itself in almost every passage in the historical works of the New Testament, where any action of this favoured apostle of our Lord is related, was perfectly incompatible with any obstinate perseverance in acknowledged error; and accordingly the exposition of his opinions conveyed by this and the following Epistle, the date of which is supposed to have preceded his martyrdom by a very short interval, is in all respects confirmatory of what has been asserted in other parts of the apostolical writings on the subject of Christian liberty, and of the universality of the conditions of the Gospel covenant.

THE  
SECOND GENERAL EPISTLE  
OF  
PETER.

---

THE authenticity of the second Epistle of St. Peter was, as is well known, made an occasional subject of controversy in the early ages of the Church, but it has been acknowledged as canonical by far the preponderant weight of authority of the best judges, both in ancient and modern times. The date of its composition is generally supposed to have been a short time before that apostle's martyrdom; probably early in the year of our Lord 65.

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

1 SIMON PETER, the servant and apostle of Jesus Christ, to all the brethren who are joint partakers with me in the precious faith in that covenant of righteousness which is from our God and from our  
2 Saviour Jesus Christ—grace and peace be multiplied unto you, in the knowledge of God and of our Lord Jesus Christ.

The arguments in the following Epistle are chiefly directed against the gross immoralities of the Gnostics, of which the apostle speaks with becoming reprobation. For an account of the tenets of these heretics, see the note appended to Colossians ii. 18.

God having by his almighty power given to us 3  
all the necessary requisites for the attainment of  
immortality and holiness, in bringing us to the  
knowledge of him who has called us to his covenant  
of glory and righteousness, (by which the greatest 4  
and most precious hopes of future blessings have  
been set before us; namely, that having escaped  
from the pollutions of gross and carnal appetites,  
you should one day be assimilated to the purity of  
his divine nature;)—such being the blessed means 5  
of salvation which he has placed in our hands, let  
it be our care to exercise all due industry in their  
proper application; and accordingly let us add to  
this his first great gift of faith proportionate zeal  
on our part in his service; to zeal let us add  
spiritual knowledge, to knowledge the restraint of 6  
our passions, to the restraint of our passions pa-  
tience under affliction, to patience cheerful piety,  
to piety brotherly love, to brotherly love universal 7  
good will to all mankind, be they who they may;  
so that the existence and abundance of these last-8  
mentioned graces may show that the ' first founda-  
tion of all holiness, your knowledge of, and faith  
in, Christ, has not been without its plentiful har-  
vest of good works. For be assured that he who 9  
wants these, which constitute the finish and perfec-

<sup>1</sup> This is a correct and happy description of the growth and successive development of the several Christian virtues as they spring up one by one from the root of religious faith; and affords another illustration of the great scriptural truth, that faith is rather the first link in the chain of those multifarious endowments which combine to form a regenerate character, than that it in itself constitutes the whole sum and substance of the conditions of our salvation.



tion of the Christian character, is blind to the true purpose of the Gospel, and forgets that the very first aim and object of our profession is to cleanse us from those impure and corrupt appetites which cling to and pollute our nature in its unregenerated  
10 state. Wherefore, my brethren, be strenuous in your endeavours to make eventually effectual your first calling and election to the faith of Jesus by adopting its necessary adjunct and consequence, an  
11 holy life; and so doing be assured that you shall never fall, but that a ready entrance shall be afforded to you into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord  
12 and Saviour Jesus Christ. So important is it that you should avoid all possibility of misapprehension with regard to this great and fundamental truth of the necessity of good works, that although I am persuaded that you all of you at this moment feel its force, and most firmly and implicitly believe in it, still it shall be my care from time to time to  
13 direct your attention to it; nor do I feel that I can better devote the short remainder<sup>1</sup> of life in this world which I now have before me, than in employ-  
14 ing it for that purpose. I feel that I shall not be much longer with you, and that the termination of my earthly pilgrimage which my Saviour long ago  
15 foretold is rapidly drawing near; and it is accordingly under this conviction that I feel the more anxious to leave this testimony behind me to which you may appeal, when I shall have been removed

<sup>1</sup> This solemn, and as it may be termed dying, protest of the apostle against the Antinomian tenets, shows with what deep abomination he considered that truly impious, yet plausible and seductive, heresy.

from hence, against the sophistry and misconceptions of false teachers.

Remember, I am not now enforcing, nor have I 16 on any former occasion attempted to enforce, any unauthorized or sophistical speculations of my own as the religion of the blessed Jesus, but I have on the contrary faithfully and accurately related to you what I saw with my own eyes, and heard with my own ears, when the doctrine which he taught 17 and which we have derived from him, was confirmed by the solemn attestation of the Almighty himself. For he received in my presence a positive 18 confirmation of his glorious office and revelation in the awful voice from heaven which declared of him, (Matthew xvii. 5; Mark ix. 7.) "This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased," and that voice I, with my brother apostles James and John, distinctly heard when we were with him upon the holy mount. In addition to which we have also 19 to the same effect another voice, namely, the strong confirmation of our Saviour's mission afforded by the various prophecies of the Old Testament; to which, as to a light shining in a dark place, you will do well to turn your attention for the removal of any lingering doubts which may still perplex you in this your earthly course, until the arrival of that day which will clear up all which at this moment is obscure and unexplained in God's mysterious arrangements. For be assured that those 20 prophetic writings are not the mere guesses of private speculation, nor were they delivered according to the caprice or inclination of the persons uttering them, but they are the words of holy men beloved by God, and speaking as they 21

were inspired by the communications of the Holy Spirit.

2 But as in the days of the true prophets there existed false prophets also, so among the teachers of the true Christian tenets there shall arise false teachers, who shall introduce destructive heresies, denying that Lord who redeemed them with his own blood, and bringing down destruction upon  
2 their own heads: and many shall be seduced to follow their pernicious ways, so that even the true and orthodox belief shall be decried and evil spoken  
3 of. In such hands the pure word of life shall become a mere merchandise for the glutting of their own avarice: but be assured that God's vengeance  
4 though it may be delayed is not asleep. For if He spared not the very angels who sinned, but cast  
5 them into hell in chains of darkness to be reserved for punishment;—if He spared not the antediluvian world, but destroyed for their sins the whole human  
6 race, with the exception of the righteous Noah, and seven other persons;—if He overwhelmed in fire and ashes the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha, mak-  
7 ing them an awful example of the punishment of licentiousness, but preserved the good man Lot, who had been grieved by the profligate habits of his  
8 unprincipled fellow citizens, and who from day to day had vexed his righteous soul by the contemplation of the deeds of abomination which he saw and  
9 heard<sup>1</sup>;—if such are the standing past records of God's discriminating justice, most assuredly will he

<sup>1</sup> With regard to the many coincidences of thought and expression to be found in this Epistle with similar passages in that of St. Jude, the reader is referred to the disserta-

continue in like manner to the end of time to deliver the sincere and obedient out of their various trials, but will reserve the ungodly for that tremendous day, when they shall appear before him in judgment. More particularly will his vengeance then 10 fall heavily upon those who shall be found to have run their mortal course in habits of profligate sensuality, having shaken off the yoke of wholesome discipline; men hardened in their own self-conceit, and showing themselves petulant revilers of those established authorities appointed for the maintenance of good morals: authorities against whom the 11 very angels of God, high as their exalted nature is over that of every earthly jurisdiction, venture not to bring railing accusations before the Lord. Yet 12 these persons (senseless as those brute beasts which seem to exist only that they may be chased and destroyed) revile institutions which they have not the faculties to understand, and thus run headlong with reckless impetuosity into the destruction which awaits them. And be assured that they will reap 13 the due reward of their misconduct. Their days are one continued course of riot which they denominate pleasure. They appear amongst your religious assemblies like spots and deformities, converting a society of Christians into a throng of licentious revellers, and gazing around them with adulterous 14 and sensual eyes even in the very house of God; and thus it is that weak minds are seduced by them to consider our holy religion as sanctioning licentious-

tion of Bishop Sherlock on that subject, subjoined to the Oxford edition of his Sermons. Vol. iv. p. 129, edition of 1812.

15 ness, and every worldly and selfish feeling. But the  
awful curse which our Saviour will one day pro-  
nounce against such abominations will assuredly  
come upon them. Like Balaam the son of Bosor,  
they have left the right path, and have prostituted  
for gain the blessed gifts of the Spirit to the cause  
16 of unrighteousness; (and recollect that God allowed  
him, though endowed with the gift of prophecy, to  
learn a lesson of righteousness, and to receive a  
rebuke for his avarice and impiety from the mouth  
17 of a brute beast.) Like wells without water they  
entice only to disappoint, holding out expectations  
which they cannot realize; like passing clouds pro-  
mising the blessing of rain to a parched country,  
but which shortly disperse themselves before the  
wind. Of such men the end shall be the blackness  
18 of eternal darkness. By plausible and specious  
sophistry attempting to disjoin what God has de-  
creed should be inseparably united, namely, an  
orthodox belief and a holy and moral life, they  
seduce back again into the trammels of sin those  
19 who had already escaped from its snares; and mak-  
ing their boast of their Christian liberty, by which  
they mean licence, they debase themselves to the  
worst of slavery, the impure slavery of the passions,  
which they want both force and inclination to resist.  
20 To such men let me recal the awful words of our  
blessed Saviour, who assures us, that if, when we  
have made our hearts clean from the pollutions of  
impure appetite by the searching influence of the  
knowledge of our Lord Jesus Christ, we again re-  
ceive back into them the tempter whom we had  
succeeded in expelling, our case is from that mo-  
ment far more hopeless than if we had never been  
converted, and that "our last state will be, under

such circumstances, worse than the first.” For as-21  
suredly far better would it have been for us never  
to have known the path of righteousness, than,  
having known it, to have wilfully returned again  
into our sinful habits. But to the impure teachers 22  
whom I am now describing we may justly apply the  
well-known proverb: “the dog is gone back to his  
own vomit; and the sow, which was washed, to her  
wallowing in the mire.”

This is the second Epistle, my beloved brethren, 3  
which I have written to you for the purpose of en-  
forcing upon your minds the paramount importance  
of maintaining the holy doctrine of the Gospel pure 2  
from the sophistry and corruptions of a wayward  
world; and unadulterated as you first received it  
from the inspired predictions of the holy prophets,  
and from the mouths of us the commissioned apos-  
tles of our blessed Lord and Saviour. For let me 3  
now forewarn you, that, as time passes on, and one  
age shall succeed to another without appearing to  
bring nearer the great consummation to which we  
finally look, not only corruptions of doctrine shall  
gradually arise, but men, grown impatient at the  
restraint imposed upon their passions, and at the 4  
procrastination of their hopes, shall begin to scoff  
at Christianity itself, as having excited expectations  
which it could not realize. “What has become,”  
they will urge, “of the long-promised second ad-  
vent of Christ? for the apostles of old who taught  
this doctrine have long passed away, and the opera-  
tions of nature still continue in the same undevi-  
ating course<sup>1</sup> which they held from the beginning.”

<sup>1</sup> This passage contains a wise and salutary caution, well  
adapted to meet the petulant impatience of mankind, which

5 Forgetting, or wishing to forget, that equally firm  
and unchangeable appeared the state of the ante-  
diluvian world, when, at the command of God, the  
expanse of heaven beamed cheerfully over the earth,  
and the dry land swelled prominent and smiling  
6 above the surrounding waters: and yet notwith-  
standing the day came when that same heaven

might otherwise be disposed to consider the protracted duration of the present world as an argument against the truth of the Christian revelation. Under the strong moral and intellectual excitement occasioned by the first promulgation of the Gospel covenant, an opinion is known to have prevailed extensively amongst the primitive converts, that the day of judgment was even then near at hand. St. Paul, as we have already seen, wrote his second Epistle to the Thessalonians chiefly for the purpose of dissipating this unfounded apprehension. Since that period, however, nearly eighteen centuries have passed away, and yet, to use the expression in the Epistle before us, the operations of nature still continue in the same undeviating course. It is perhaps too early as yet in the history of mankind for infidelity to derive an argument against revelation from this circumstance; but we can readily imagine that, should the continuance of the present order of the universe be still eventually maintained through a vast succession of future ages, the time may probably arise when the misgiving here alluded to may begin seriously to shake the firmness of the conviction of the most sincere believers. Under such a supposition there appears to be much mercy in the arrangements of providence, which have thus anticipated a formidable objection of infidelity, and suggested a satisfactory argument from which every humble Christian may, to the latest possible duration of time, derive increased faith and consolation under that procrastinated hope, which, as the wise man has observed, "makes the heart sick."

poured down its rain, and those same waters rose from their ancient level to overwhelm mankind. And in like manner no less certainly, tranquil as 7 the present aspect of nature may be, that same heaven and this same earth are reserved for that period when God shall again utter his command, and they shall pass away in that universal conflagration which is in store for the day of final judgment, and for the destruction of ungodly men. Remote as that awful moment may appear to us, 8 short-lived and transitory beings as we are, let us remember that the intermediate interval is absolutely as nothing in the sight of God, with whom one day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. If then the Lord appears at this 9 moment slow to execute his judgments, it is not a slowness which proceeds from want of power, but from want of will; from his patient long-suffering; from his suspending again and again the day of his visitation, in the still lingering hope that none should finally perish, but that all may come to repentance. But as the thief comes upon men 10 unawares in their midnight slumbers, so shall that awful moment arrive when the world shall least expect it; when the heavens shall pass away with a roar, and the natural elements shall dissolve in fire, and this globe and all the mighty works of man upon it shall be burnt up. But if thus tran- 11 sitory is the tenure of our mortal possessions, what then are the habits of life and conversation which best become creatures thus circumstanced?—holiness, assuredly, and godliness of heart:—such ho- 12 liness and such godliness as may not only patiently wait, but eagerly and cheerfully look, for that great



- day of our God's coming, when the material heavens shall pass away in flames, and the elements of nature shall melt in one common conflagration.
- 13 God also, we know, has promised, and we dwell with unshaken confidence upon the fulfilment of that promise, that a new heaven and a new earth, in which righteousness shall be established for ever, shall succeed to that perishable creation which we
- 14 now inhabit. Wherefore, my beloved friends, entertaining this glorious expectation, be it your care to be found by our great Master at his second coming without spot and blameless, in peace with
- 15 God and man. Meanwhile, be assured that the long-suffering of our Lord is not forgetfulness of his purpose, but a delay suggested by the immensity of his mercy, that men may perchance even yet awake from their sins and be saved; as our brother Paul has expressly asserted to you in those divinely inspired writings which he has addressed to you;
- 16 as also in his other Epistles to the several Churches, in which he discusses these mysterious topics, from which some ignorant and unstable teachers would derive (as they would also from other portions of the sacred writings) conclusions of the most dangerous and pernicious tendency.
- 17 And now, my beloved, being thus forewarned, make it your earnest endeavour that you be not misled by the erroneous doctrine of these false teachers, and that you fall not away from the pre-
- 18 sent stedfastness of your faith; but grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

To Him be glory both now and to all eternity.  
Amen.

It is lamentable to observe, how, in despite of the lessons of experience and of the express declarations of Scripture, human nature, when placed under similar circumstances, continues in all ages to retrace the same endless circle of vice and folly which brought down the severe reprobation of the apostles upon the heretics of the primitive Church. We learn from the preceding Epistle at how early a period the emancipation of the Christian world from the vexatious slavery of the ritual law began to produce a violent reaction in the moral and religious feelings of mankind, similar to that which the sudden abolition of a temporal tyranny has often been known to work in their political and civil habits. The relaxation of a system of extreme restraint was followed by its too natural consequence, a system of extreme licence. The first apostles had preached to mankind the blessed doctrine of a free pardon of sin through faith in the expiatory redemption wrought by the death of Christ; but they had at the same time carefully inculcated the obvious and necessary consequence of that doctrine; that the great and pure Being, who had in this signal manner marked his strong abhorrence of sin, must inevitably continue to disapprove of it under all possible circumstances; and accordingly, that a good life, though not the operating cause of man's salvation, was still an inseparable accompaniment of a sincere and effective faith. But the selfishness of human passions, fostered by the mistaken theories of the Gnostics, was then, as it has frequently shown itself since on similar occasions, much more disposed to grasp at the proffered mercy as a gratuitous benefit, than to bear its own share in the fulfilment of the conditions. Because the redemption proposed for man's acceptance was declared to be a voluntary concession of the divine benevolence, it was presumptuously and impiously urged, that a Being thus infinitely gracious could not be disposed to examine the infirmities of our nature with a very scrutinizing eye; and that as the expiatory merits of our Saviour were infinite, they were of course sufficient to cover, when appealed to through the medium of faith, all sins of deliberate and wilful com-

mission no less completely than those resulting from the insuperable infirmities of human nature. The main proposition therefore which stood foremost in the writings of St. Paul, respecting the necessity of faith in Christ's atonement as the sole operating cause of our salvation, was eagerly caught at, whilst the inference so certainly deducible from it of the importance of good works, which had been uniformly maintained by that great apostle, was overlooked as a thing of no moment. To this growing heresy accordingly we find occasional allusions in the later Epistles of that inspired writer. Still however it is probable, that the abuse in question was more prevalent among the Jewish converts, who fell under the spiritual superintendence of Peter, and our Saviour's immediate disciples, than among the Gentiles, who had derived their instruction from the preaching of Paul. The natural effect of a pure and spiritual doctrine, when addressed to the profligate heathens, might be presumed to be the adoption of a more correct, if not austere, morality; but the removal of the Levitical restraints from the Jews was an apparent relaxation of discipline, against the abuse, consequent upon the misapprehension of which, it required no small degree of strong sense and good feeling to be sufficiently vigilant. That St. Peter therefore should have found it necessary to caution his readers in the Epistle before us against the possible misconception of the momentous truths inculcated by his brother apostle, can excite in us no surprise. But we should recollect, that the heresy here combated is not one of those which, deriving their first origin from accidental circumstances, disappear when the contingencies which gave rise to them are withdrawn. On the contrary, the seeds of it lie deeply imbedded among the first principles of our moral constitution; and we may therefore presume, that so long as the present world shall continue, the apostolical admonitions conveyed in this inspired composition will retain their original importance.

We all know how speedy was the fearful moral reaction produced in Germany and elsewhere by the first excitement of the Protestant Reformation, and with what deep

abomination, similar to that expressed by the primitive apostles, the pious Luther was known before the close of his life to lament the gross immoralities of the fanatics of his time. Those monstrous and blasphemous perversions of the scheme of the blessed Christian dispensation may, it is probable, be never again repeated in all their original deformity; but the extremity to which that delusion was carried by the Gnostics of ancient, and the Antinomians of recent, times, and the wide circle over which we know it to have spread, are awful proofs of its close connexion with a natural human infirmity; and may serve to forewarn us, how surely it will manifest a tendency to reappear wherever the strong stimulant of religious fervour is excited without a concurrent attention to the doctrines of practical holiness, and a solemn impression of the unsullied and ineffable purity of the divine attributes.

THE  
FIRST EPISTLE  
OF  
JOHN.

---

THE reference to the impending destruction of Jerusalem contained in the following Epistle, together with other internal marks, would seem to place the date of its composition at a much earlier period than that usually assigned to the Gospel written by the same apostle. The coincidence of thought and feeling in both those inspired works strongly mark the identity of their author. The principle so urgently enforced by the writer, that love to God and man is the only sound basis of religion, and the only effectual motive to holiness and perfect obedience of heart, is precisely that which might be expected to proceed from the disciple whose gentleness and affectionate warmth of character conciliated to him in so remarkable a degree the attachment of his divine Master.

1 THAT manifestation of the incarnate Word of life which we have personally witnessed from its very beginning; which we have seen with our own eyes, and have been permitted to look upon; and which  
2 our own hands have felt and handled, (for the great Source of life was made visible to human eye-sight, and we ourselves saw it, and accordingly bear our witness to the certainty of its appearance, announcing to you the revelation of that eternal self-existent Being who was resident with the Father, but who condescended to appear in a human shape upon the

earth,) that wonderful revelation, I repeat, which<sup>3</sup> we ourselves have been allowed to see and to hear<sup>1</sup>, do we now announce unto you; that the same blessed community of intercourse which has been vouchsafed to ourselves from the eternal Father and from his Son Jesus Christ, may through us be extended to you also. And accordingly these things<sup>4</sup> we now write unto you, that your joy in Him may be complete.

This then is the divine message which we have<sup>5</sup> received from his mouth, and which we now, as his ministers, declare unto you; namely, "that God is the great Fountain of light<sup>2</sup> and purity, unsullied by any shadow of darkness or pollution whatever." If then we profess to have any community or parti-<sup>6</sup>cipation with his all-perfect nature, yet at the same time indulge in works of darkness or impurity, such professions, be assured, are a manifest contradiction, and inconsistent with the truth. But if, on the<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> St. John thus earnestly insists upon the fact of the visible and substantial personality of our blessed Saviour whilst upon earth, of which his own familiar intercourse with him had rendered him an incontrovertible witness, for the purpose of repelling the absurd theory of the Gnostics already alluded to; namely, that the supposed incarnate and crucified Redeemer was nothing more than an incorporeal phantom invested with the external appearance and circumstances of human nature.

<sup>2</sup> The greater part of this Epistle appears to be little more than a practical comment upon the valedictory exhortations of our Lord, addressed to his disciples on the eve of his crucifixion, as related by St. John in chapters xiii. xiv. xv. xvi. and xvii. of his Gospel. The passage before us in the text appears to be an allusion to the sentiments contained in verse 46 of the twelfth chapter.

other hand, we walk in that light and holiness in which he himself makes his dwelling, we then have fellowship with him and with one another, and the blood of his Son Jesus Christ cleanses us from  
8 all our sins. If indeed we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and are ignorant of the real  
9 debased condition of our fallen nature: but if, instead of denying our sins, we humbly confess them, He is faithful to his promises, and just in his dispensations, to forgive us those sins, and to cleanse  
10 us from all our unrighteousness. If, I say again, we assert that we have not sinned, we are giving the lie to his positive declarations, and are betraying our ignorance of the great purpose of the Gospel covenant.

2 My dear children, my object in writing to you therefore is, to exhort you, in the first place, to abstain from all manner of sin whatever; and, secondly, if through the infirmity of human nature you fall into sin, then to recollect that we have an Advocate with the Father, the righteous Jesus  
2 Christ, and he is the propitiation for our sins; and not for ours only, but also for those of the whole  
3 world. And accordingly, by this sure criterion we may know whether we apprehend him and his holy covenant aright; namely, "if we keep his com-  
4 mandments." He who asserts of himself that he knows Christ, and yet wilfully violates his commandments, is a liar, far removed from the know-  
5 ledge of his truth. But he on the contrary, who carefully observes and performs the injunctions of his divine Master, is giving the most perfect and satisfactory proof of the real fervour of his love. By this rule then can we assuredly know whether

we are really and truly his disciples; since, if we 6  
are indeed sincere in our profession of attachment  
to his service, we are by a natural consequence  
bound to follow that example of perfect obedience  
which he himself afforded during his continuance  
upon earth. My brethren, this is no new command- 7  
ment which I now give, but old as the very first  
establishment of religion. To this original duty of 8  
love to God, however, I have now to add also that  
second and new commandment which constituted  
one of the last injunctions delivered by our blessed  
Redeemer whilst upon the earth, and which was so  
beautifully exemplified in his conduct, as it should  
be in yours; for from henceforth the darkness of  
imperfect revelation is passed away, and the true  
light of holiness remains, in which it is our duty to  
walk. "A new commandment," said he, "I give  
to you; that ye love *one another*; as I have loved  
you, that ye also love one another." (John xiii. 24.)  
He then who flatters himself that he is in the light 9  
of the Gospel dispensation, and yet hates his brother,  
may be assured that he is still in his original dark-  
ness. He who loves his brother walks in the light, 10  
and, as being in the light, shall find no occasion of  
stumbling; but he who hates his brother is, I re- 11  
peat, in darkness, walking about in the midst of it  
unsteadily and uncertainly, because his intellectual  
eyes are blinded.

My children, I write then now to you, to remind 12  
you that your sins are forgiven you through faith in  
the name and merits of Jesus Christ.

Fathers, I write to you to recal to your recol- 13  
lection what yourselves have seen and heard of our  
blessed Saviour during his residence on earth, and



that you may conform your lives accordingly to that glorious and perfect pattern.

Young men, I write to you, to encourage you with the recollection that you have struggled with, and conquered, the evil powers of this world.

To you, children, I have addressed myself, because you have been brought to the knowledge of our Almighty Father.

- 14 To you, fathers, I have addressed myself, because having had an example of true perfection before your eyes, you cannot but know how to adapt yourselves to it.

To you, young men, I have addressed myself, because you have yet the entire possession of your faculties, and have already fought the good fight against the powers of evil, as champions in the holy cause of God.

- 15 Love not, I beseech you, the world, nor the things of the world. He who fixes his affections upon the world will never fix them, as he ought to  
16 do, upon his heavenly Father also. For all the things of this world, the carnal appetites, the display of magnificence, the insolence of wealth, are  
17 of earth, and not of heaven, and the earth, as we know, shall pass away, and all its attractions with it. But he, whose study is to do the will of God, is imperishable as that solid foundation on which he builds his hopes.

- 18 My beloved children, the time of the final destruction of the Jewish nation, as foretold by our Saviour, is drawing nigh. You remember the signs by which he declared that you should be able to know when that day was approaching. "Many," said he, "shall come in my name, saying, I am

Christ, and shall deceive many." (Matthew xxiv. 5.) And accordingly many false Christs *have* appeared, from which circumstance we may certainly conclude that the time of which he prophesied is at hand. Commencing with us as their teachers in the true 19 faith, these men were never sincere members of our community. Had they from the first been real partakers with us of the knowledge of the pure doctrine, they would have finally continued with us in the profession of it: but their apostacy has brought to light the original unsoundness of their pretensions. You however have received enough of the 20 assisting communications of the Holy Spirit to be in no danger of being misled by their deceitful doctrines: I write not therefore to you at present for 21 the purpose of instructing you as to what the true faith is, but because I feel assured of the accuracy of your knowledge, and that you will immediately perceive the falsehood of what these men would teach as the word of revelation. Who then are these 22 false teachers against whom our blessed Saviour has forewarned you? Who but they who deny that Jesus is the promised Messiah? Who is the anti-christ of whom he prophesied, but he who denies both the Father and the Son? for in denying the 23 Son he denies also the Father who bore witness of him.

Be careful then to remain steadfast in the profes- 24 sion of that doctrine which you have received from the first; for in abiding firmly by what you then received as the word of truth, you are abiding in the blessings of that covenant made with you by the Son and the Father conjointly: and this is the 25 glorious promise which shall be inherited by those

who shall thus manifest their obedience to him, namely, "everlasting life."

26 Thus much I have thought it expedient to write  
to you on the subject of the deceitful teachers who  
27 are abroad; but, as I have already observed, your  
minds have been sufficiently illuminated by that  
grace of the Holy Spirit which he has given to you  
to supersede the necessity of any instruction which  
it is in my power to bestow; all that I will say  
therefore is, that, as by that divine guidance you  
have been enabled to embrace the true doctrine of  
the Christian dispensation, so, I trust, you will be  
enabled to remain unshaken to the last in the sin-  
28 cere profession of it. Continue then, my children,  
to acknowledge him as heretofore, for your Redeemer  
and Saviour, so that when he shall return to judge  
the world, we may stand before him with confidence,  
as having nothing of which our consciences shall be  
29 able to accuse us. And remember, that, as we are  
assured that he is holy in all his ways, so those are  
especially his sons, and are born of him, who are  
careful to perform the works of holiness.

3 Observe also what must be the extent of the love  
of our Almighty Father for us, in that he deigns to  
be called by that endearing appellation, and to con-  
sider us as his children. If then the world rejects  
and hates us, the reason is manifest, for it also  
2 rejected and hated him. Even in that respect  
therefore, as suffering persecution from those who  
persecuted him, we feel another proof that we are  
at this moment his children. What indeed we shall  
one day be, has not yet been revealed to mortal  
flesh and blood. But we know at all events that  
when he shall re-appear in glory, we shall also be

glorified with him, and shall be admitted to look upon his glory face to face. Recollect, however,<sup>3</sup> that no one can reasonably cherish this sublime hope, but he who earnestly strives to render himself worthy of being received into the divine presence, by rendering himself pure even as God is pure. He who falls into wilful sin, falls also<sup>4</sup> at the same time into wilful rebellion, for sin is the breach of God's laws, and as such is rebellion against him. And we know that the very end<sup>5</sup> and object of Christ's mission to mankind was to abolish sin, as we know also that his own nature is perfectly sinless. He then who is truly his shuns,<sup>6</sup> and abstains from, sin; whilst the deliberate sinner, however he may deceive himself by false hopes, has no real knowledge of, nor communication with, him. Be not deceived then, my dear children, by the<sup>7</sup> dangerous delusion that you may hold by your Christian faith whilst leading an immoral life; but be assured, that he only can be said to resemble his divine Master in holiness, and to be himself holy, who is such in the practical excellence of his works. That man who continues in sin is the son<sup>8</sup> not of Christ, but of the devil; for the devil was a sinner from the beginning. And remember that it was to break down the power of the devil that Christ was made manifest in the flesh. He who is<sup>9</sup> really born of God abstains from sin, because he partakes of the pure nature of his divine Father: his former evil appetites cannot continue in his new and regenerated character. You can then be at no<sup>10</sup> loss to discriminate between the sons of God and the sons of the devil. That man cannot be the son of God who leads an immoral life; nor again can

he who does not sincerely and from his heart love  
11 his brother; for such was the positive command  
conveyed by our blessed Master in his parting  
12 valediction, "that we love one another." By the  
hatred which induced Cain to murder his brother,  
that person showed himself to be the true child of  
the devil. And why did he murder him? For a  
reason which none but the devil could have sug-  
gested: because his own works were evil, and those  
13 of his brother were righteous. Wonder not then,  
my brethren, if in like manner an evil world hate  
14 and persecute you. We, on the other hand, have,  
within our own breasts a sure and infallible test  
that we are the children of God, and have passed  
from death to life, in that we love our brethren.  
He therefore who feels that he wants this true mark  
of a Christian disposition, may be assured that he  
15 still remains in the death of unrighteousness. The  
man who hates his brother is in disposition, if not  
in act, a murderer: and you know that no murderer  
16 has the promise of eternal life. The great proof  
which our gracious Redeemer gave us of the im-  
mensity of his love was in that he laid down his  
life for us<sup>1</sup>; and we his disciples ought in like man-  
ner to be prepared to follow his example, and to  
17 do the same for our brethren. When therefore one  
calling himself a disciple of Christ possesses this  
world's goods, and yet can look upon the necessities  
of his brother without a disposition to administer to  
his relief, can we say of that man, that he is an  
imitator of that glorious pattern of disinterested love  
displayed in the conduct of his divine Master?

<sup>1</sup> See St John's Gospel, xv. 13.

Let then our love, my beloved children, be not 18  
the mere external profession of kindness, but the  
sincere love of the heart, displaying itself in works  
of mercy and good will: and so shall we feel 19  
assured of the soundness of our religious disposi-  
tion, and shall look up to him with confidence.  
For if our hearts and consciences condemn us as 20  
deficient in this foremost Christian excellence, we  
may be assured that he who made our hearts, and  
who dictates to our consciences, will not acquit us.  
But if our consciences acquit us, we may assert 21  
with confidence that God will not condemn us.

Remember also that our only sure and reasonable 22  
ground for hoping that he will grant any petitions  
which we may make to him upon our own account,  
is when we are earnestly disposed to obey his will,  
and to do such things as may be pleasing to him:  
but we know that his special commandment has 23  
been that we should repose our whole trust in  
the name of his Son our Saviour Jesus Christ,  
and also that we should love one another; ac-  
cording to that same Saviour's positive injunction.  
He then who keeps these commandments dwells 24  
in God and God in him; and this is the proof  
that God really dwells in us; namely, *the holi-  
ness of the disposition which his blessed Spirit excites  
within us.*

By this infallible rule then, my beloved, judge of 4  
the real character of those various impulses which  
profess to be the dictation of God's Holy Spirit. It  
is not every one who imagines that he acts by im-  
mediate inspiration, who in reality does so. On  
the contrary, many false pretenders and false pro-  
phets have gone forth into the world. Let this then 2

be the criterion by which to guide your judgment. "Every one who teaches *that the Son of God was made very and actual man for our redemption*, speaks according to the infallible suggestions of the holy  
3 Spirit of truth." On the contrary, he who would set up a philosophy of human invention in opposition to this doctrine, and would teach you, as many heretics have lately done, that Christ did not actually exist in the flesh, speaks not by the dictation of the Spirit of God, but by that of Antichrist, of whose coming you have been forewarned, and who  
4 is already commencing his career of deceit. You, my dear children, are of God, and have therefore been able to withstand the plausible arguments of these deceitful teachers; for the divine Spirit which instructs you is more powerful than the spirit of this world from which they derive their false opi-  
5 nions. They are men of this world, and consequently prefer their own carnal speculations and human wisdom to the spiritual knowledge which is from heaven; and accordingly the sons of this  
6 world lend a willing ear to them. We, on the contrary, are of God, and he therefore who understands what God's will really is, hearkens to us; whilst those who are ignorant of that will turn away from us. Make this then your rule, by which you may distinguish the dictates of the Spirit of truth from those of the spirit of error.

7 Above all things then, my brethren, let us love one another, recollecting that love proceeds from God: and that it is by the fervency and purity of the love displayed by each individual that we feel assured that he is of God, and duly apprehends the  
8 will of God. Be assured, that he who is incapable

of the kindly affections, is no less incapable of duly apprehending God, for "God is love." And to such 9 an extent has our heavenly Father manifested the immensity of his love for us his children, that he sent his only-begotten Son into the world, that we might obtain immortality through him: and yet the 10 more astonishing was this signal display of the divine benevolence, in that it was not in return for any previous love of ours towards himself, but was a free communication of gratuitous love on his part, in giving his Son as an expiation for our sins, at a time when his anger might have been justly provoked against us. If then, my beloved friends, 11 such was God's love towards us his then rebellious children, much more ought we to love one another. No man has ever been admitted to see 12 God, that he should love him with that warm intimacy of feeling<sup>1</sup> which is due to our natural con-

<sup>1</sup> The indulgent allowance which is uniformly displayed throughout the inspired writings for the inevitable infirmities of our nature, affords a striking trait of the divine benevolence by which they are dictated. Nothing can be more certain, whether we appeal to the light of human reason, or to the revealed word of Scripture, than that God is, in his perfect and unsullied nature, an object infinitely more worthy of the most ardent love than any created being can possibly be supposed to be. Still, however, our limited feelings and faculties are not in this life adapted for the full reception of these abstract impressions. Love, such as we must feel it so long as we continue to be mere human creatures, must ever be too much the result of unreserved familiarity, and the interchange of mutual good offices, to be strictly applicable to our relation with regard to our Creator. The kindliness of our affections, however, in the intercourse of society, and in the exercise



nexions on earth: but we are assured that, if we love one another with a Christian benevolence, the Spirit of God abides in us, and that the fervency of such affection will be accepted by him from us, as though it had been directly addressed towards himself.

13 In proportion then as we feel that we possess the illumination of his Holy Spirit in the perception of truth, and are actuated by those kindly affections which we know to be essential to his nature, we may confidently assert that we are one with him,  
14 and he with us. I who now address you, have been permitted personally to witness, and to bear my testimony to, the astonishing fact of the actual  
15 incarnation of our blessed Redeemer; he then who abides by this the true faith, and acknowledges Jesus to be the Son of God, may be assured that  
16 God dwells in him, and he in God. I have also myself personally witnessed the immensity of the loving-kindness of that gracious Being; and I can therefore bear my testimony that God's very essence

of our domestic duties, is, as the apostle observes, at all events, a sure criterion of an original predisposition to that more perfect love of God, which a more adequate apprehension of his adorable and attractive attributes may in a purer state of being be expected to produce. The sentiment therefore here expressed is in exact accordance with the assertion of our Saviour with reference to works of charity, which, though not the actual fulfilment of the first and great commandment, will nevertheless, he assures us, be accepted by him as such. "Verily I say unto you, inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have done it unto me." Matthew xxv. 40.

is love, and that every individual who is actuated by a similar spirit of love to him, and of mercy and kindness to mankind, in like manner dwells in God, and God in him.

The glorious result of this blessed disposition of 17 love towards God and man is, that we are enabled to look forward with hope and confidence to the tremendous day of judgment, in the conviction that we have followed his divine example, and pursued our way through this world treading faithfully in his footsteps; for, where such feelings 18 of affection exist, apprehension is out of the question, since it is impossible that we should perfectly love<sup>1</sup> a Being whom we dread; the sentiment of fear being an anticipation of punishment, not of mercy, and consequently being incompatible with that fervent love which delights to dwell upon

<sup>1</sup> It cannot be doubted that much serious injury in after life has been occasioned to the religious feelings of many truly well-disposed persons, by the indiscreet mode of conveying spiritual instruction adopted by their early teachers. To instil the unmixed terrors of religion, and to dwell exclusively upon the formidable attributes of the Almighty, is perhaps the most immediately operative appeal which we can make to the minds of young persons, but, like other powerful stimulants, it is not always, if ever, the best. In a breast which has thus been taught from early infancy to shrink with apprehension from the contemplation of the Supreme Being, that affection of the heart which is the only legitimate source of true piety and good morals, is necessarily a plant of slow and unwilling growth. The first appeal uniformly made to our feelings throughout the sacred writings is that of conciliation and kindness; the last, and by far the least frequent in its occurrence, the threat of punishment.

the more gracious attributes of the object of its  
19 worship. Our love for God is a natural consequence on our part of our consciousness of the immensity of the blessings which we have previously received from Him, differing in intensity, but not in nature, from that with which we repay all acts of kindness which we may have experienced  
20 from our fellow creatures. He then who asserts that he loves God, yet at the same time feels no kindly affection towards his own brother, is a liar; for it is impossible that he should feel any real attachment to his Creator whom he has not seen, if his heart warm with no sentiments of attach-  
21 ment to his brother whom he has seen. And this accordingly is our blessed Redeemer's express injunction, "that he who loves God, love his brother also."

5 If then we believe that Jesus is the Son of God, and if we love God with all that fervour which his mercies are entitled to claim at our hands, it follows as a necessary consequence that we love the Son with the same affection which we cherish for the Father: and as the love which we bear to the Father extends also to his eternal and divine Son, so ought it also to descend to his mortal children,  
2 his servants upon the earth. But the best proof which we can afford both to ourselves and others that we do cherish these feelings of universal love for God's creatures is, that we love God himself, and feel earnestly disposed to obey his command-  
3 ments. This obedience is the natural and necessary consequence of our love, provided that love be sincere. Nor is the obligation to a holy life which such love imposes upon us a painful or irksome

duty. Every one who is really regenerate and born 4  
 of God is detached from the false pleasures of this  
 world, and able to triumph over their temptations:  
 and the strength which he possesses for the achieve-  
 ment of this victory is the consequence of his im-  
 plicit faith in God's promises. Who then is he who 5  
 thus succeeds in vanquishing the powers of this  
 world? it is he who firmly believes that Jesus is the  
 Son of God, and the Saviour of mankind. This is 6  
 He who came to preach salvation not by the purify-  
 ing waters of baptism only; but also by the expia-  
 tory sacrifice of his precious blood; and God's holy  
 Spirit, the blessed Spirit of truth, bore witness to  
 the reality of his mission<sup>1</sup>. To our belief in him 8

<sup>1</sup> I have ventured in this place to omit the well-known  
 controverted passage respecting the testimony of the three  
 heavenly Witnesses, under the idea that, whatever may  
 be our opinion respecting the real state of that controversy,  
 at all events the authenticity of the clause in question has  
 been rendered sufficiently problematical to disqualify it  
 from being any longer cited as an authority in support of  
 the Trinitarian doctrine. In fact, whilst such superfluity  
 of proof of that great fundamental tenet of our faith is to  
 be found through so large a portion of the New Testament,  
 (for, without that previous admission, much of what we  
 read in the inspired volume would be contradictory and un-  
 intelligible,) it appears to me that by pertinaciously cling-  
 ing to an equivocal and disputed text, we run the risk of  
 doing injury to the holy cause which we are anxious to  
 support. After the very elaborate investigation of this  
 point of biblical criticism, which has been almost unremit-  
 tingly kept up, from the date of Porson's celebrated letters  
 to the present time, it is scarcely to be hoped that any new  
 light remains to be thrown upon the subject; and it can-  
 not, I think, be denied, that thus far the *preponderance* of  
 proof is *against* the authenticity of the clause in question.

then we have this threefold and concurrent testimony; namely, that of the Holy Spirit, by whom we are illuminated and sanctified; our baptism, by which we are regenerated and made partakers of his covenant; and his sacrifice upon the cross, to which we and all mankind look for justification and the  
9 remission of our sins<sup>1</sup>. We have not only therefore the testimony of his mortal followers to the reality of his person and divine mission, but that far more cogent one also of the Almighty Being himself: for such testimony did he bear when he pronounced of him the words, “this is my beloved  
10 Son.” He then who believes in the Son of God, has the witness of that Spirit which illuminates his understanding, and suggests to him all good desires as the seal and guarantee of his belief;

This admission, however, can subtract little or nothing from the weight of testimony supplied by the whole context of Scripture in support of the Trinitarian tenets. That such was the faith of the primitive Church cannot be seriously doubted by persons at all conversant with the history of that period. Whence then were those opinions derived? Undoubtedly from the obvious tenor and context of the apostolical writings, and from the oral communications of their inspired authors. The passage in question is supposed to have been originally a marginal comment, which was subsequently by mistake admitted into the text: but that very supposition necessarily implies, that the doctrine alluded to had been previously assented to as an acknowledged scriptural truth on other, and entirely independent, grounds.

<sup>1</sup> I am far from satisfied that I have given the right interpretation of this difficult passage, but I am not aware of any other mode of rendering it more consistent with the original expressions, and the general tenor of the argument.

whilst he who believes not, makes that blessed Spirit a liar, in denying that solemn testimony to be true which God himself gave to the reality of his Son's person and mission. By that infallible 11 testimony we are assured that God has given to us eternal life, and that the gift of eternal life is communicated to us through the merits and redemption of his Son. He then, who is one with 12 him in the blessed communion of the Son, has life, and he who shares not in that blessed participation has not life.

These things I have written to you, that you 13 might all of you feel confident that you have the infallible promise of eternal life, through faith in the name of the Son of God.

We are moreover unhesitatingly convinced, that 14 if we ask any thing of him according to his will, as communicated to us by his blessed Son, he will favourably hear us: and if he favourably hear us, 15 we are no less confident that we shall receive at his hands the object of our petitions. If then any 16 man see his brother falling into sin, such sin I mean as the infirmity of a heart not entirely hardened to the feelings of Christian piety may be supposed capable of falling into, let him pray God for him, and be assured that to such a person so prayed for God will be prevailed upon to restore the assisting grace of his Holy Spirit. There is indeed a deadliness of sin so fearful, that we can have nothing to do with it but to leave it to God's own mysterious judgment, and where any prayers<sup>1</sup> of

<sup>1</sup> The apostle appears in this passage to have had in his mind the words of our Saviour as recorded in chap. xvii.

17 ours would come amiss. But there are gradations in sin; under every shape and degree indeed it is offensive to God, but still there are inferior stages of wickedness for which, as the consequence of human weakness, he may without impropriety be entreated by us, and which he will not consider  
 18 incompatible with the display of his mercy. Still recollect, however, at the same time, that the truly regenerated Christian has all his original sinful propensities quenched in the purifying influence of a Christian disposition, and *commits no deliberate and wilful sin whatever*, but keeps watch over his own conduct, and repels by constant vigilance the as-  
 19 saults of the tempter. And such we are assured that we are, having been called to the regeneration of the gospel covenant through faith in Christ, whilst as yet the great bulk of mankind lie still  
 20 immersed in the deadliness of their own sins. We know that he, our blessed Redeemer, the Son of God, has visited us, and has given to us knowledge

ver. 9. of St. John's Gospel. Should there appear to be any harshness in the sentiment it conveys, it should on the other hand be recollected, that with the *possible* uncovenanted mercies of God we have nothing to do, because nothing on that subject has been revealed to us. As Christians we look for redemption to the covenant of faith in Christ *only*; and it were therefore as incompatible with our profession as it would be presumptuous, to pray for the salvation of our brethren by any other means than the one declared to us by Scripture. To pray for the infidel, that he may be brought back to Christ's fold and be saved, is our duty as Christians: to pray that he may be saved *notwithstanding his perseverance in infidelity*, would be the sacrifice of consistency for the sake of an unauthorized and unscriptural liberality.

and understanding of him the True One: in whom and through whom (the True One, the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of God) we all have our existence. This is indeed the true God and everlasting life. My beloved children, abstain from all community<sup>21</sup> with idols. Amen.

---

It is remarkable that no allusion is made in the preceding Epistle to the name of its writer, but its identity in style and sentiment with many parts of the Gospel of St. John affords irrefragable testimony that both works are the production of the same author.



THE  
SECOND EPISTLE  
OF  
JOHN<sup>1</sup>.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

1 THE Elder to the Lady, the chosen servant of God,  
and to her children, whom I love in the truth of  
Christian sincerity, (and not I only, but all others  
2 also of the community of believers, being joint par-  
takers in the covenant of the divine truth in this  
world, as we trust that we shall also be through all  
3 eternity,) grace, mercy, and peace be to you from  
God the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ,  
the Son of the Father, in love and in truth.

In this short Epistle St. John warns some lady of eminence, one of his own converts, against the seductions of the Gnostic heretics who had begun to prevail extensively in the Christian Church. The sentiments and arguments are nearly the same with those which are more copiously developed in the preceding Epistle.

4 It was with extreme pleasure that I perceived lately in the conduct of some of your children with whom I have had communication, that you and they

<sup>1</sup> Eusebius seems inclined to believe that the second and third Epistles of John were not written by our Lord's favourite disciple of that name, but by another John, desig-

continue to walk perseveringly in the practice of that true and holy doctrine which has been revealed to us from above. And now, Lady, I repeat to you not a new and fresh commandment, but one which is the very foundation of every Christian's belief; namely, the great rule of our blessed Master, that you "love one another;" remembering at the same time that such sincerity of love as I now recommend is best shown by our living in all respects in obedience to the divine will, and as faithful servants of Christ. Now the divine will is, that you preserve inviolate the pure doctrine of revelation in all points, precisely as you first received it from the fountain head, namely, from us the immediate followers and apostles of Christ. For many deceivers and false teachers have lately gone forth into the world, who have ingrafted their own false and ungrounded speculations upon the true Gospel, denying that our blessed Saviour did ever really appear in material flesh and blood, and in all the actual circumstances of the human nature. Beware, I beseech you, of every such teacher, as being a deceiver and antichrist; and look carefully to the soundness of your own faith, that my laborious instruction in times past may not be lost upon you, but that I may have the gratification of seeing it produce in you the fruit of a sound and orthodox belief. Be assured, that

nated by the surname of "Presbyter," who also resided and was buried in the city of Ephesus. The internal evidence, however, of the second Epistle, which in its style and sentiments bears a close analogy with the first, is strongly opposed to this latter theory.

every one who innovates upon that peculiar doctrine, for the truth of which we have our Saviour's own positive declaration, is in hostility with God; whilst he, who carefully abides by the truth as we first received it from our gracious Master, has the blessing of both the Father and the Son abiding  
10 upon him. Should then such a false teacher as I have now described come to you, and attempt to inculcate his heretical opinions, receive not that person into your house, nor salute him as a friend or a  
11 brother; as by so doing you would be, at least indirectly, giving your sanction to his mischievous and false opinions.

12 I have many other instructions to give you, but shall not convey them in writing, as I hope to be enabled to visit you personally, and to have the gratification of a free and unchecked conversation  
13 with you upon those points. The children of your excellent sister salute you.

THE  
THIRD EPISTLE  
OF  
JOHN.

---

THE aged apostle to the beloved Caius, whom I love in the fellowship of the covenant of truth, greeting.

My beloved brother, I earnestly pray to God that you may enjoy all temporal health and prosperity in the same proportion in which you possess the gifts of spiritual holiness: for it was with no small pleasure that I recently heard from some of our brethren of your exemplary perseverance in the profession of the Gospel truth. Believe me, the highest gratification which this life can afford me is to hear that my scholars, whom I have sedulously instructed in the doctrines of the Christian revelation, continue stedfastly to adhere to their confession of that holy dispensation.

The many acts of kindness, my dear friend, which you have performed, both towards our Christian brethren, and to others, are such as are in perfect accordance with the benevolent character of our religion, and as such have been honourably and gratefully reported to the various members of our Church. You will do well in persevering to display the same beneficent disposition whenever an oppor-

- tunity shall be afforded you, by your hospitable attentions to such of our members as accident may  
7 throw in your way: for recollect that their wanderings are for the service of Christ, and that consequently they can have neither claim nor expectation from those of a different persuasion from ourselves.
- 8 Of course therefore the duty is the more incumbent upon us to show them every possible kindness, and in so doing to contribute to the more easy propagation of the doctrines of the Gospel which they are commissioned to preach.
- 9 I have written to the assembly of the Church respecting my own intentions; but Diotrephes, whose ambitious spirit is unwilling to give place to one who would come with authority superior to his own, is endeavouring to render my design abortive,  
10 and to prevent my being received by them. Wherefore, when I arrive, I shall take proper notice of his conduct, and of his calumnious language against me; especially as I hear, that, not contented with his hostility to my own person, he has set his face against receiving the other brethren, and has even gone so far as to expel from the Church such persons as in contradiction to his injunctions have treated them with kindness.
- 11 Let not your own conduct, my friend, be influenced by so pernicious an example, but persevere in doing as you have already done: being assured that a benevolent disposition is of God, and that a harsh and inhospitable character is in direct hostility towards him.
- 12 Of Demetrius I hear from all quarters a favourable report, not only respecting the kindness of his disposition, but also as regards the stability of his

religious belief; and I myself, who as you know have had many opportunities of forming a correct judgment of him, can vouch for the justice of such reports.

I have much to communicate, but shall abstain 13  
from doing so in writing: I hope however shortly to see you, and to communicate with you personally.

Peace be with you. Your friends in this place 14  
salute you: salute my friends in your neighbourhood severally by name from myself.

THE  
GENERAL EPISTLE  
OF  
JUDE.

---

INTRODUCTORY ADDRESS.

1 JUDE, the servant of Jesus Christ and brother of  
James, to the brethren sanctified by God the Fa-  
ther, and set apart as chosen followers of Jesus  
2 Christ,—mercy, and peace, and love be multiplied to  
you.

The Epistle of St. Jude, like the second of St. Peter, to which it bears a remarkable resemblance, and the first and second of St. John, is directed chiefly against the then prevalent heresy of the Gnostics, and more especially against that branch of them which inclined to the impious doctrines of Antinomianism. The express reference in verse 18, to the passage 2 Peter iii. 3, and the identity of the allusions contained in both Epistles to writings then extant, but which have been subsequently lost, clearly mark the similarity of purpose in the writers of both compositions, and the strong anxiety with which each of them respectively contemplated the first commencing symptoms of corruption in the pure doctrines of Christianity.

3 Being extremely anxious, my beloved friends, to write to you on the subject of our common hopes of salvation, I felt the necessity still more urgent, when, from the circumstances of the times, I perceived myself called upon to exhort you more par-

ticularly to avoid the dangerous and seductive heresies which are now abroad, and to cling to that pure form of doctrine which was delivered by our gracious Redeemer to his apostles, and by them communicated to mankind. For certain false teachers have lately crept into the Church, against the abomination of whose principles you have long been prophetically forewarned, who have had the daring impiety to represent the holy covenant of mercy as sanctioning the grossest licentiousness, and to deny our only Lord and Master Jesus Christ. Accordingly I have been induced to interpose this solemn warning, and to remind you of the well-known judgments which befel our apostate forefathers, who, after having been miraculously rescued by the intervening arm of the Almighty from Egyptian bondage, finally perished in the wilderness through their unbelief. In like manner we know, that even the <sup>1</sup>angelic beings, who acted unworthily of their high condition, and contumaciously abandoned the stations to which they were appointed, are at this moment reserved in everlasting chains and darkness for the final judgment of the great day. Thus also <sup>2</sup>Sodom and Gomorrah, with the other cities in their neighbourhood, whose abominable licentiousness called down upon them the infliction of divine vengeance, are even now in their present smoking desolation a standing example of the severity of God's judgments upon sin. Yet with these awful proofs before them of his irreconcilable abhorrence of all impurity, these profligate teachers, bewildered in their

<sup>1</sup> See 2 Peter ii. 4.

<sup>2</sup> 2 Peter ii. 6.



own dreams and misconceptions, give their sanction to the indulgence of every impure appetite; despise the restraint of wholesome authority, and calumniate the rulers<sup>1</sup> whom God has set over them.

9 (Yet it is related of Michael the archangel, when he contended with the devil about the body of Moses, that even he dared not to bring against him a railing accusation<sup>2</sup>, but left him to God's judgment, saying only, "The Lord rebuke thee.") But these

10 men speak contemptuously of institutions of which they have not the understanding to perceive the excellence, and following, like the beasts<sup>3</sup> of the field, every impulse of reckless appetite, run blindly

11 along in the road of perdition. Woe unto them! for they have walked in the path of Cain; they have forsaken their duty for a bribe like the seducer Balaam, and fallen into the destruction which befel

12 the self-willed and rebellious Corah. These are they who turn your feasts<sup>4</sup> of Christian love into a profane and intemperate revel; men, who, like clouds without rain, seduce you with vain expectations never to be realized; like trees whose fruit withers before it is ripe, and which are rooted up and

13 thrown away as incurably barren: like raging waves of the sea, tossed about by their own malignant and disgraceful passions, and like the meteors of the night, blazing for a moment, only to be extinguished

14 in perpetual darkness. It is related of Enoch, the seventh in descent from Adam, that he prophesied of the coming of these traducers of good morals, and of the infliction of God's vengeance upon them.

<sup>1</sup> 2 Peter ii. 10.<sup>2</sup> 2 Peter ii. 11.<sup>3</sup> 2 Peter ii. 12.<sup>4</sup> 2 Peter ii. 13.

“<sup>1</sup> Behold,” said he, “the Lord cometh with his innumerable army of saints, to execute judgment 15 upon them, to convict them of their impiety, and of all their deeds of abominable wickedness which they have committed, and of all the licentious sophistry with which they have advocated the cause of sin, and the violation of his commandments.” These are fretful and impatient complainers, slaves 16 to their own selfish lusts, contumacious in their intercourse with their superiors; yet cringing adulators of those from whom they hope to derive profit. But, my beloved friends, recollect the early 17 warnings which you received from the apostles of our Lord Jesus Christ against the seductions of these men: particularly the description given of them by Peter in his Epistle, where he declares that “there 18 shall arise in the latter ages a scoffing and licentious race, who shall walk in the unrestrained indulgence of their own ungodly lusts.” These are they 19 who are now striving to raise a schism in the Church; slaves to every animal appetite, and entirely void of spiritual righteousness.

Be it yours, my beloved, on the contrary, to 20 build up with care the solid fabric of your faith, to pray for the illumination and aid of God’s Holy

<sup>1</sup> These words are a quotation from the apocryphal book of Enoch, the original of which has been long lost, but of which an Ethiopic MS. version exists in the Bodleian Library. The following is the exact form of the passage, as given by Archbishop Laurence in his translation of that singular work:—“Behold, he comes with ten thousands of his saints, to execute judgment upon them, and destroy the wicked, and reprove the carnal, for every thing which the sinful and ungodly have done, and committed against him.”

Spirit, to cherish the sentiment of fervent love and  
21 gratitude to your Almighty Father, and to look  
forward with humble confidence, to that mercy of  
our Lord Jesus Christ, through which we hope to  
22 arrive at everlasting life. As to the seducers against  
whom I have placed you upon your guard, let your  
conduct towards them be regulated by the various  
degrees of their guilt: the less culpable admonish  
23 with compassion for their weakness, the more hard-  
ened censure with detestation of their deeper guilt,  
snatching them at all hazards, if it be possible, from  
the fire of God's wrath, and detesting the very con-  
tact of the garments which have been infected by  
the deadly pollutions of the flesh.

24 Now to Him who is able to preserve your feet  
from stumbling, and to place you before his glorious  
tribunal in joyful confidence, and without blemish,  
25 to the one God our Saviour, be ascribed glory, and  
majesty, and power, and dominion, through our Lord  
Jesus Christ, for ever and ever. Amen.

•

•

•

## CONCLUSION.

---

HAVING now brought to a conclusion this exposition of the Apostolical Epistles, I am desirous, before I finally take leave of the subject, to venture a few brief remarks upon the peculiar character of the doctrines which they contain, and upon the nature of the evidence which they afford for the confirmation of our faith. The first impression which their perusal must, I think, force upon the mind of every impartial person is, the perfect sincerity and earnestness of their several writers;—the second is, the actual identity of the doctrines, both theoretical and practical, which, under a somewhat dissimilar exterior, they will upon a very slight examination be found respectively to inculcate. We have in these interesting compositions, it should be observed, the recorded sentiments of five distinct persons, all of them liable, like ourselves, to be impressed with those various peculiarities of feeling and of early association, which on all important topics, and more especially on the paramount question of religion, have a tendency to separate one man from another by encouraging the indulgence of favourite theories, and exclusive habits of thought. Yet such notwithstanding is the harmony of idea which pervades these writings, that it would, I conceive, be impossible to produce from them one single line or sentiment which might not with perfect consistency be transferred from the page of its actual author to that of any one of the four others where the same subject shall have been discussed. A characteristic difference of manner and a predisposition in each of

them to dwell with a certain degree of preference upon this or that particular branch of Christian morals, is indeed perceptible throughout ; but this is a diversity as desirable in itself as, from the nature of the human mind, it is inevitable. That five different persons, each of them severally occupied in portraying the mysterious Christian scheme, should have varied somewhat from one another in the lights and shades, the tone and colouring of their works, was of course to be expected ; whilst their perfect concurrence in the delineation of the main features affords the strongest proof of the real accuracy of the drawing. Accordingly it is this very “ discordia concors,” this combination of diversity of character with real unity of purpose, which renders the important portion of the sacred writings now under discussion at once so irrefragable an evidence of the truth of revelation, and so highly and so practically useful as a rule of Christian holiness. Had it pleased the wisdom of Providence to have restricted the communication of his will conveyed in the volume of the New Testament to the four books of the Gospel and that of the Acts of the Apostles only, it would perhaps be difficult to show that, in point of abstract knowledge of the great principles of our faith, we should have laboured under any actual deficiency, which the additional possession of the Apostolical Epistles has removed. Yet, even if disposed to make this concession in its fullest extent, every Christian who is really anxious for his soul’s improvement will feel truly grateful to that merciful Being, who has afforded to him so vast a store of spiritual wisdom as that which is contained in these latter writings. Had they never existed, or never come down to us, we should still indeed have possessed the knowledge of the fundamental conditions and of the main principles of the Christian revelation : we should even then have been taught how perfectly valueless in the sight of God are the most meritorious human actions as a means of salvation ; how indispensably requisite is the strengthening aid of the Divine grace for our fallen nature, how unattainable man’s final justification by any agency short of the infinite merits and expiation of Christ. But such is the waywardness of our moral and intellectual

constitution, that general positions and abstract truths have little effect upon our practical habits. Passion and prejudice can incapacitate us as effectually for the proper application of a rule, as for its original discovery. It was therefore a wise and benevolent arrangement of Providence, which ordained that our religious instruction should be transmitted to us, not so much in the form of a technical system of philosophy, as in that of successive comments upon the several portions of the Christian scheme, according as the collisions of opinion under the operation of external circumstances rendered them necessary. It was by such means only that theology could be brought down from heaven to earth, and be made to adapt itself effectually to the realities of life. A tendency to recur to supposed first principles, though at the expense of overlooking or explaining away some of the most positive declarations of Scripture, is even now, after all the precautionary measures by which its meaning has been fixed and defined, the besetting sin of a vast portion of the Christian community. What then would have been the case had the Apostolical Epistles never been composed, and human caprice accordingly been left free to choose its own construction of those primary truths, the practical bearings of which are now authoritatively determined by a positive rule from which there is no appeal? Moral injunctions, however cautiously worded, but which had never been made to bear upon the real detail of life, would have afforded but a feeble barrier against the ingenious sophistry of passion; and transcendental doctrines, which had never been specially applied as an infallible standard by which to mark out the nice boundaries which separate truth from falsehood, would have been confidently appealed to in support possibly of those very heresies which they now serve to refute.

Not only however was such a supplementary practical comment upon the Christian revelation as, by God's mercy, has been afforded to us in the epistolary writings, absolutely necessary for our complete apprehension of it in all its bearings, but we may add also that it was desirable, if not indispensably requisite, that it should contemplate that awful

subject from different points of view, and under the influence of different intellectual associations.

Had, for instance, the Epistles of one only of our Lord's disciples descended to us, vast as would have been the value which would have attached to them, still they could not have completely effected that purpose which has been so fully accomplished by the diversified compositions which we actually possess. Every individual brings with him to the profound discussions of theology, if not the reality, at least the suspicion, of a bias. And even if we consider such a suspicion in the case of an inspired teacher to be out of the question, still we must at all events admit that the peculiar circumstances under which he may have been placed with respect to his own immediate converts may occasionally have made it imperative upon him *from principle* to dwell more particularly upon some single and partial view of the theory of revelation, to the comparative neglect, if not to the actual exclusion, of others not less intrinsically important. In addition therefore to the most unblemished integrity in the writer, it requires the collision, not merely of various individual feelings and predispositions, but that also of contingent external events, operating severally upon several parties, to call forth the complete discussion in all its parts of so intricate and extensive a system of belief as that of the Christian revelation, and to secure the adequate transmission of a scheme thus minute and comprehensive for the edification of after times. And such is precisely the advantage which has accrued to religion both in speculation and practice, from that dissimilar mode of discussing the same really identical and harmonious doctrine which characterizes the Apostolical Epistles. The very different position of Paul with respect to his own peculiar converts, from that occupied by James, Peter, John, and Jude, with reference to theirs, made it to a certain degree incumbent upon him to consider the Christian dispensation from a position directly opposite to that from which they were disposed to regard it. Having been commissioned to undertake the conversion of the *Gentile* world, he must necessarily have laid it down as the foremost duty of his office to establish,



in the first place, solidly and substantially the foundation of *faith* in the Jehovah of the old, and in the crucified Saviour of the new, covenant; and, having secured that great elementary principle, then, as an obvious consequence, to erect upon it the superstructure of Christian holiness and of a good life. And according to this consistent view of the subject, we find him uniformly looking forward prospectively through the whole system, from its first commencing germ to its final and complete developement. The four last-mentioned apostles, on the contrary, having to deal almost exclusively with Jews, found many of the primary dogmas of the religion which they had to inculcate already in great measure assented to as articles of faith. To them therefore the task of elementary initiation was comparatively easy. It was not the doctrine of *a* Messiah which they had to originate, but that the crucified Son of Mary was *the* Messiah, whose advent had been impatiently expected: and in announcing the covenant of divine mercy as proffered to all mankind, they were only enlarging the operation, and refining the principle, of that covenant already acknowledged to subsist between the Almighty and the Jewish nation. The errors therefore which *they* had to combat, and to guard against, were of an entirely different character from those which called forth the occasional objurgations of St. Paul. The besetting sin of the converted Gentiles was a tendency to mistake the real conditions of justification in the sight of God; and from a natural abhorrence of their former grossness and immorality whilst immersed in the darkness of paganism, to deviate into the contrary extreme of a superstitious adoption of the ritual expiations of the Levitical law, in addition to the faith and obedience required of them as believers in Christ. The mistake of the Jewish converts was, on the other hand, that which most easily suggests itself to persons recently emancipated from a system of servile and vexatious discipline; namely, the abuse of their newly acquired liberty; and we find accordingly that the object of the admonitions of *their* instructors consists almost entirely in the inculcation of moral restraint, and the duty

of practical holiness ; whilst the no less important requisite of faith, if not actually taken for granted as a thing of course, is at all events less earnestly and obtrusively dwelt upon.

All this is exactly what might have been expected under these very different circumstances ; and we may add also, that it is that very arrangement which is best calculated for the complete inculcation of the truth in all points, and under every aspect. Like two rival, but enlightened advocates, each several writer has thus used the whole energy of his mind in the improvement of his own peculiar department ; whilst the common principles on which they are all agreed derive additional confirmation from the conviction which we feel that such harmony of sentiment is the result, not of any calculated confederacy, but of an honest and impartial conviction of the truth of the doctrines inculcated. Nor has the effort which they have respectively made to guard against the growth of peculiar systems of error been greater, as subsequent experience has shown, than the circumstances imperatively required. The heresies denounced in their several writings, though opposite in their character, were all of them such as, being founded in human nature, are ever likely to re-appear under some form or other ; and which therefore each required their own appropriate and separate refutation. Those arguments of St. Paul which were originally urged against the superstition and legal righteousness of the Galatian converts are no less applicable at this moment, when directed against the fantastic ritual of the Church of Rome, than they were in their primary reference to the doctrines of those Judaizing Christians of the primitive ages : whilst the indignant abhorrence expressed in the writings of the other apostles with regard to the blasphemous impieties of the Antinomian Gnostics are no less admirably calculated to repress at any subsequent period the presumption of fanaticism, which, as we are painfully reminded by almost every page of history, is ever on the alert to advance the plea of a peculiar possession of God's favour, as a claim to emancipation from the most sacred duties of practical morality.

The uniform tone of reverential awe in which the person of our blessed Redeemer is alluded to throughout the Apostolical Epistles, is another circumstance which those persons who are disposed to object to the doctrine of his divine nature will do well seriously to consider. That St. Paul, who had known him only through the medium of the most stupendous preternatural events, should ever be found to speak of that tremendous Being with the deepest solemnity might naturally be expected. But with regard to the other apostles this consequence seems somewhat less obvious. We all know the equalizing tendency of familiarity in domestic intercourse between persons of the most dissimilar rank and condition of life. But the intimacy of friendship to which the disciples of our Lord were admitted for so long a period, appears not for a moment to have trenched upon their reverential adoration of him as an immediate emanation of the eternal Godhead. Above all, we find that sentiment most strongly marked, where perhaps we should least be prepared to look for it, in the writings of the beloved disciple St. John. The unequivocal assertions of our blessed Saviour's divinity contained in his Epistles and in his Gospel are justly considered as affording some of the strongest scriptural proofs of that important doctrine. But that such an impression should have taken complete hold of a mind which had been permitted to trace the object of its reverence through the humble incidents and detail of private life, can be accounted for only upon the supposition that the evidence confirmatory of that impression was of too decided a character to be shaken by even that most critical and perilous test. Certain it is that no misgivings or interventions of doubt upon this subject ever seem for one instant to suggest themselves to that apostle's mind. It has accordingly been well remarked, in reply to those impugnors of our Redeemer's divinity, who assert that this doctrine is of comparatively recent origin, and was unknown to the primitive Church, that, on the contrary, the heresy which stood most conspicuous in the age of the apostles was that which denied, not his *divine*, but his *human*, nature; and that, so far from being called upon to prove him to be very *God*, (a point universally acknow-

ledged,) the great difficulty seems to have been to persuade the first polluters of the Christian faith, that he was also, really and actually, very *Man*. It was not until the lapse of time had subdued by distance the astounding effect produced by his miraculous career upon earth, that human audacity dared to attempt to lower him to the scale of a merely mortal teacher, or even to that of the foremost and most glorious of God's created beings.

One other observation, and that of a truly awful and melancholy character, but which is well calculated to afford a salutary warning to ourselves that we presume not upon our present spiritual advantages, will naturally suggest itself during our perusal of this interesting portion of the sacred writings. The pervading characteristic of these beautiful, eloquent, and profound compositions is the deep and earnest anxiety manifested by their respective authors for the spiritual welfare of the Churches committed to their care, and the complete self-devotion with which they surrendered every faculty, every interest, both of soul and body, for the accomplishment of that important object.—Yet where now are the Christian Churches of Jerusalem, of Ephesus, of Colosse, of Galatia, of Salonica, of Philippi, of Crete, of Corinth?—where, we may even ask, that of Rome itself? The answer is a short and painful one. The tares, the thorns and briars of this world, were too powerful and rank for the growth of the good seed, and choked it. In vain did their respective inspired teachers lift up their voice against each commencing corruption as it arose; against the superstitions which had already begun to encumber, and the human theories which were even then adulterating, the simplicity of divine truth. The evil principle was too strong to be thus checked. Error succeeded to error, and abuse to abuse; and the result has been, that Mahomedan imposture is now spreading its baleful influence over the greater part of those regions which our Lord's own apostles once fostered with parental solicitude, and from whence Christianity derived its first growth and nurture; and even in that quarter where the faith of Christ is still professed, the name of our religion

indeed remains, but its form, its beauty, its simplicity are gone. Superstitions far more portentous than those denounced by St. Paul have superseded the spiritual holiness of the Gospel: and the very Scriptures themselves, which could alone effectually define the evil and point out the remedy, are become a sealed book, inexorably closed to the many wanderers who might otherwise under its guidance retrace their steps to that primitive doctrine from which they have so widely deviated.

Here then let me conclude this imperfect survey of the Apostolical Epistles, of which I can truly declare, that the more close examination of them into which I have necessarily been led in the course of my present undertaking, has served only to confirm and heighten that previously strong impression of their paramount value, as aids both to faith and practice, which was my motive for the commencement of this work. Should I eventually have reason to believe that the result of my attempt has been to recommend them more completely to others, of whatever condition in life, by rendering them in any degree more accessible, or more easy of apprehension, I shall derive a reward from my labour far surpassing in my own estimation any which the highest attainments in general knowledge or the most elegant acquirements in literature can impart to their possessor.

LONDON :  
- GILBERT AND RIVINGTON, PRINTERS,  
ST. JOHN'S SQUARE.